





John Carter Brown
Library
Brown University

The John Carter Brown Library
Brown University
Purchased from the
Louisa D. Sharpe Metcalf Fund

[AMERICANA]

Par Christoph Daniel EEBLING
auteur de "Americanisch Bibliothek" et de
"Erdbeschreibung und Geschichte von Amerika.
Die Vereinigten Staaten von Amerika." [SABIN, 21747
et 21748]. »

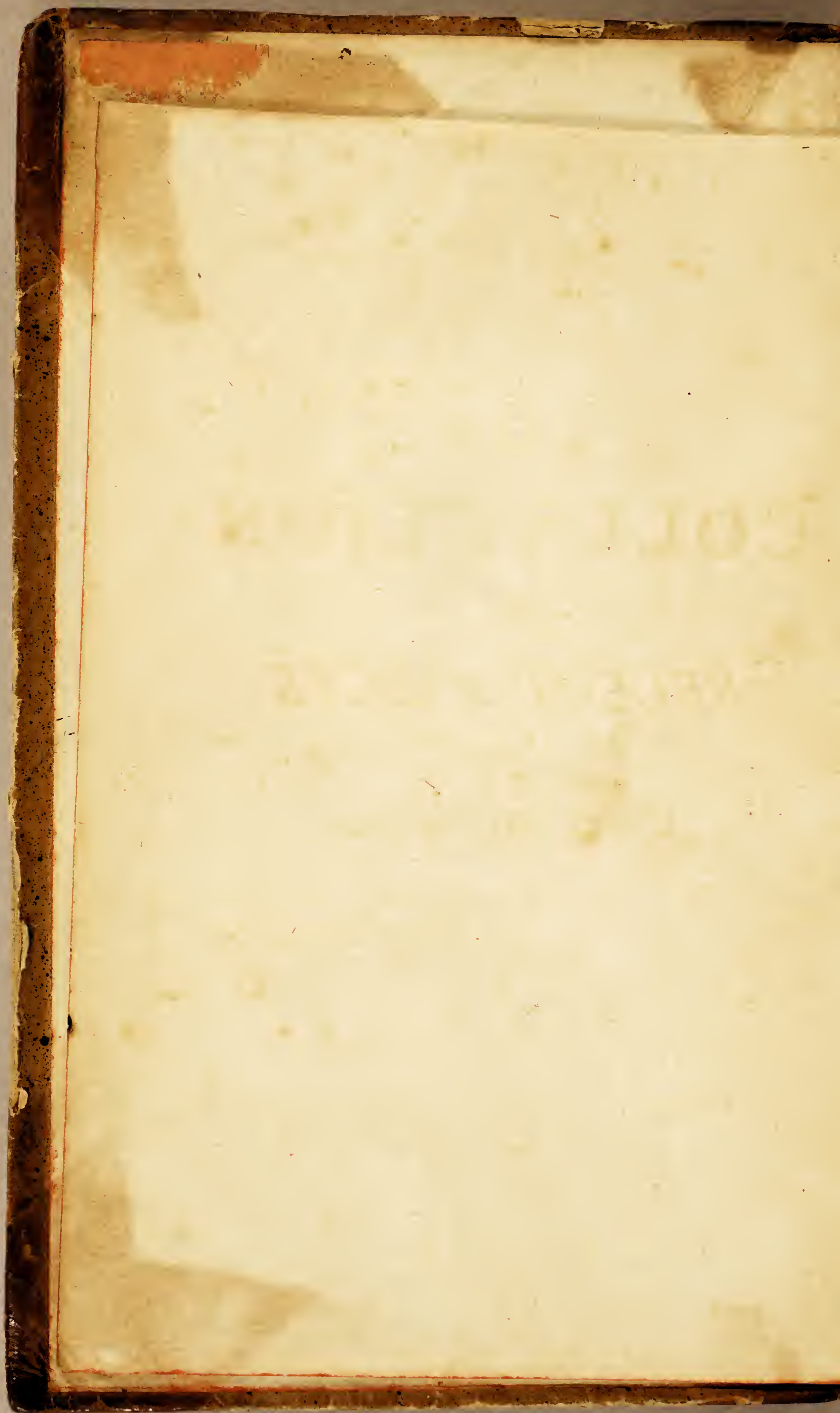
Recueil de 35 Pièces dont 6 consacrées
à l'Amérique [Voir Table des Matières pp VII-VIII]

Inconnu de SABIN.

Manque à la B. N.

Christ

J. H. Boeckhner jun.



A NEW
COLLECTION
OF
SELECT PIECES
IN
ENGLISH PROSE.

A NEW
COLLECTION
OF
SELECT PIECES
IN
ENGLISH PROSE

1694/69.

Vermischte
A u f f ä t z e

in
englischer Prose

hauptsächlich zum Besten derer

welche diese Sprache

in
Rücksicht auf bürgerliche Geschäfte
lernen wollen,

gesammelt

von

C. D. EBELING

Vorsteher der Handlungsakademie in Hamburg.

Dritte verbesserte Auflage.

Hamburg

verlegt von C. Herolds Wittwe.

1781.

Vorrede.

Bei der dritten Auflage dieses Buchs ist es wohl nicht nöthig die Vorrede der ersten zu wiederholen, wodurch ich meine Sammlung dem Publicum zu empfehlen suchte. Es hat sie gütig aufgenommen und das Buch wird häufig zum Unterricht in vielen Schulen gebraucht. Ich bin dankbar dafür und freue mich darüber, daß eine Arbeit, die eigentlich nur für unsere *Handlungsakademie* bestimmt war, auch außer derselben Beifal fand und brauchbar gewesen ist. Da dieß ein Schulbuch geworden

den ist, so habe ich nichts darin verändern dürfen, ob ich gleich gern einige Aufsätze gegen andre neuere vertauscht hätte. In dem Wörterverzeichnisse ist jedoch einiges verbessert worden.

INHALT.

1) F ables.	S. 1
2) Jests and bons mots.	7
3) An Abridgement of <i>Anderson's</i> Commercial- Geography of Great-Britain and Ireland	16
4) <i>Lord Littleton's</i> Dialogues of the Death.	32
5) <i>Baretti's</i> Account of the present King of Spain	53
6) Narrative of the Death of Calas.	58
7) <i>Anson's</i> Voyage to Asia.	67
8) <i>Richardson's</i> Account of Sir Charles Grandison's rescuing Miss Byron.	72
9) <i>Voltaire's</i> Account of a tragical Incident in France.	125
10) <i>Buffon's</i> Description of a Dwarf.	126
11) <i>Hutchinson's</i> Remarks on the present state of the Trade of Massachusettsbay &c.	128
12) <i>Shaw's</i> Account of Algier.	134
13) Account of the Death of Patkul	140
14) <i>Sterne's</i> Story of le Fever.	148
15) <i>Robertson's</i> Account of the Cardinal Ximenes.	155
16) Account of the Battle of Pavia by <i>the same</i> .	157
17) Character of the Emperor Charles V. by <i>the same</i> .	161
18) <i>Smollet's</i> Satirical Description of London and Bath.	163
19) View of the Climate, Trade and Soil of Bar- bados.	171
20) The Brothers, a Comedy.	172
21) <i>Hawkesworth's</i> new Memorandum-Book for La- dies.	179
22) Cha-	

	22) Character of a Gamester <i>by the same.</i>	S. 183
X	23) <i>Bancroft's</i> Description of Berbice, Demerary and Essequebo.	187
	24) Letters by <i>Pope, Steele, Addison, Lord Littleton</i> and others.	197
X	25) Description of some Quadrupeds by <i>Bancroft</i> and <i>Brookes.</i>	215
	26) Some Chapters out of <i>Fielding's</i> History of Tom Jones.	224
	27) Observations on the present State of the East-India Company.	234
	28) <i>Lady Montague's</i> Description of Adrianople and Constantinople.	240
X	29) Description of Jamaica.	247
	30) Scenes out of <i>Colman's</i> Comedy of the jealous Wife.	253
	31) <i>Hume's</i> History of the invincible Armada.	259
	32. 33) <i>Gulliver's</i> Voyage to Liliput and Brobdignac.	269
X	34) <i>Anderson's</i> account of England's Trade and Colonies.	280
	35) Scenes out of <i>Colman's</i> Comedy of the English Merchant.	302

FABLES *)

A COCK and a PERCIOUS STONE.

As a Cock was scratching upon a Dunghill, he turned up a precious Stone. Well, says he, this sparkling Foolery to a Jeweler would have been something; but to me, a Barley-Corn is worth an hundred Diamonds.

MORAL.

A wise Man will always prefer Things necessary before Matters of Curiosity, Ornament, or Pleasure.

A FROG, MOUSE, and KITE.

There happened once a terrible Quarrel betwixt the Frogs and the Mice, about the Souverignty of the Fens; and whilst two of their Champions were disputing it with their utmost Might, down comes a Kite powdering upon them, and gobbles up both together.

A LION, BEAR, and FOX.

A Lion and Bear had so long fought over a Fawn which they killed, that they were glad to lie down and take Breath. In which Instant, a Fox passed that Way; and, finding how the Case stood with the two Combatants, he seized upon the dead Fawn, and scampered quite away with him. The Lion and the Bear, not being in Condition to rise and hinder it, pass'd this Reflection upon the Matter: Here we have been worrying one another who should have the Booty, till this treacherous Fox has bobb'd us both.

MORAL of the two Fables.

When Fools go together by the Ears, Knaves generally run away with the Stakes.

A WOLF and a CRANE.

A Wolf had got a Bone in his Throat, and promised a Crane a very considerable Reward to help him out with it. The Crane did him the good Office, and then claim'd his

*) Aesop's Fables with instructive Morals and Reflexions. By Mr. Richardson. Lond. 8. with cuts.

his promise. Why, how now, Impudence! says the other, do you put your Head into the Mouth of a Wolf, and then, when you've brought it out again safe and sound, do you talk of a Reward? Why, Sirrah, you have your Head again; and is not that a sufficient Recompence?

MORAL.

He that has to do with wild Beasts (as some Men are no better) and escapes with a whole Skin, let him think himself well off.

A LION and an ASS.

An Ass was so hardy once, as to fall a mocking and braying at a Lion. The Lion began at first to shew his Teeth, and to stomach the Affront; but upon second Thoughts, Well, says he, jeer on, and be an Ass still; take notice only by the way, that it is the Baseness of your Character that has saved your Carcase.

MORAL.

It is below the Dignity of a great Mind to hold Contests with People that have neither Quality nor Courage: to say nothing of the Folly of contending with a miserable Wretch, where the very Competition is a Scandal.

A LION and a MOUSE.

A generous Lion, having got into his Clutches a poor Mouse, at her earnest Supplication let her go. A few Days after, the Lion, being hampered in a Net, found the Benefit of his former Mercy; for this very Mouse, in his Distress, remembering this Favour done her, set herself to work upon the Couplings of the Net, gnawed the Threads to Pieces, and so delivered her Preserver.

MORAL.

It holds through the whole Scale of the Creation, that the Great and Little have need of one another.

The KITE, HAWK, and PIGEONS.

The Pigeons, finding themselves persecuted by the Kite, made choice of the Hawk for their Guardian. The Hawk sets up for their Protector; but, under the Countenance of that Authority, instead of carrying on a War with the Kite, makes more Havock in the Dovehouse in two Days, than the Kite could have done in as many Months.

MORAL.

MORAL.

It is a dangerous thing for People to call in a powerful and ambitious Man for their Protector.

A DOG and a THIEF.

As a Gang of Thieves were at work to rob a House, a Mastiff took the Alarm, and fell a barking: One of the Company spoke him fair, and would have stopt his Mouth with a Crust. No, says the Dog, this will not do, for I'll take no Bribes to betray my Master; nor will I, for a Piece of Bread in Hand, forfeit the Ease, Satisfaction, and Liberty of my whole Life.

MORAL.

Fair Words, Presents, and Flatteries, are always to be suspected to cover a base and wicked Intent.

A MOUNTAIN in Labour.

A Rumour went that the Mountain was in Labour, and all the Neighbourhood got together to see what a monstrous Issue so great a Mother would bring forth; when, behold! of a sudden, out run a ridiculous Mouse.

MORAL.

Nothing so much exposes Man to Ridicule, as when, by vain Blusters, he raises the Expectation of all around him, and falls short in his Performances.

An ASS, an APE, and a MOLE.

An Ass and an Ape were conferring on Grievances. The Ass complain'd mightily for want of Horns, and the Ape was as much troubled for want of a Tail. Hold your Tongues, both of ye, says the Mole and be thankful for what you have; for the poor blind Moles are in a worse Condition than either of ye.

The HARES and the FROGS.

Once upon a Time the Hares found themselves mightily unsatisfied with the miserable Condition they lived in. Here we live, says one of them, at the Mercy of Men, Dogs, Eagles, and I know not how many other Creatures, which prey upon us at Pleasure; perpetually in Frights, perpetually in Danger; and therefore I am absolutely of Opinion, that we had better die, once for all, than live at this Rate in a

continual Dread that's worse than Death itself. The Motion was seconded and debated, and a Resolution immediately taken, One and All, to drown themselves. The Vote was no sooner pass'd, but away they scudded with that Determination to the next Lake. Upon this Hurry there leapt a whole Shoal of Frogs from the Bank into the Water, for fear of the Hares. Nay then, my Masters, says one of the gravest of the Company, pray let's have a little Patience. Our Condition, I find, is not altogether so bad as we fancy'd it; for there are those, you see, that are as much afraid of us as we are of others.

MORAL of the two Fables.

There is no contending with the Orders and Decrees of Providence. He that made us, knows what is fittest for us; and every Man's own Lot (well understood and managed) is undoubtedly the best.

A DAW and BORROW'D FEATHERS.

A Daw that had a Mind to be sparkish, trick'd himself up with all the gay Feathers he could muster together; and valued himself upon them above all the Birds in the Air. This got him the Envy of all his Companions, who, upon a Discovery of the Truth, fell to pluming of him by Consent; and when every Bird had taken his own Feather, the silly Daw was reduced to his primitive State, and found a lasting Contempt added to his former Poverty.

MORAL.

Where Pride and Beggary meet, People are sure to be made ridiculous in the Conclusion.

A FROG and an OX.

As a huge Ox was grazing in a Meadow, an old envious Frog that stood gaping at him hard by, called out to her little ones, to take Notice of the Bulk of that monstrous Beast; and see, says she, if I don't now make myself the bigger of the Two: So she strain'd once, and twice, and went still swelling on, till in the Conclusion she over-strained herself, and burst.

MORAL.

Weak Minds frequently fancy themselves to be bigger or worthier than they are, and other People to be less or more unworthy; and

and the Consequence of this wretched Pride is often fatal to the Possessors of it, or at least serves to render them contemptible in the Eyes of those whose good Opinion they are fondest to engage.

The BELLY and MEMBRES.

The Hands and the Feet on a Time were in a desperate Mutiny against the Belly. They knew no Reason, they said, why the one should pamper itself with the Fruit of the other's Labour; and if the Belly would not work for Company; they'd be no longer at the Charge of maintaining it. Upon this Mutiny, they kept the Body so long without Nourishment, that all the Parts suffer'd for it: insomuch that the Hands and Feet came in the Conclusion to find their Mistake, and would have been willing then to have done their Office; but it was now too late, for the Body was so pin'd with overfasting; that it was wholly out of Condition to receive the Benefit of a Relief: and so they all perish'd together.

MORAL.

The Publick is but one Body, and the Fable cautions the particular Membres of it how they withdraw themselves from their Duties, till it shall be too late for their Superiors to make use of them for their mutual Advantage.

A LADEN ASS and a HORSE.

As an Horse and an Ass were upon the Way together, the Ass cry'd out to his Companion to ease him of his Burden, though never so little; he should fall down dead else. The Horse would not; and so his Fellow Servant sunk under his Load. The Master, upon this, had the Ass flayed, and laid his whole Pack, Skin and all, upon the Horse: Well, says he, this Judgment is befallen me for my ill Nature, in refusing to help my Brother in the Depth of his Distress.

MORAL.

It is a Christian, a natural, a reasonable, and a political Duty, for all Members of the same Body to assist one another.

A COLLIER and FULLER.

A Fuller had a very kind Invitation from a Collier to come and live in the House with him. He gave him a thousand Thanks for his Civility, but told him, that it would not

stand with his Convenience; for, says he, as fast as I make any Thing clean, you'll be smutting it again.

MORAL.

It is a necessary Rule in Alliances, Matches, Societies, Fraternities, Friendships, Partnerships, Commerce, and all manner of civil Dealings and Contracts, to have a strict Regard to the Humour, the Nature, and the Disposition of those we have to do withal.

A BOY and FALSE ALARMS.

A Shepherd's Boy had gotten a roguish Trick of crying, A Wolf! a Wolf! when there was no such Matter, and fooling the Country-people with false Alarms. He had been at this Sport so many Times in Jest, that they would not believe him at last, when he was in Earnest; and so the Wolves broke in upon the Flock, and worry'd the Sheep without Resistance.

MORAL.

This Fable shews us the dangerous Consequences of an improper and unseasonable Fooling. The old Moral observes, That a common Lyar shall not be believ'd, even when he speaks true.

A SHEEP and a CROW.

A Crow sat chattering upon the Back of a Sheep: Well? Sirrah, says the Sheep, you durst not have done this to a Dog. Why, I know that, says the Crow, as well as you can tell me; for I can be as quiet as any body with those that are quarrelsome; and I can be as troublesome as another too, when I meet with those that will take it.

MORAL.

It is the Nature and Practice of mean and low Spirits, to be insolent towards those that will bear it, and as slavish to others that are more than their Match.

A FOX and HUNTSMEN.

A Fox that was hard pursu'd, begg'd of a Countryman to help him to some Hiding-place. The Man directed him to his Cottage, and thither he went. The Huntsmen were presently at his Heels, and asked the Cottager, if he did not see a Fox that Way? No, truly, says he, I saw none; but pointed at the same time with his Finger to the Place
where

where he lay. The Huntsman did not take the Hint, it seems; but the Fox spy'd him, however, through a Peeping-Hole he had found out: So the Hunters went their Way, and then out steals the Fox, and departs without one Word speaking. Why, how now, says the Man, han't you the Manners to thank me before you go? Yes, yes, says the Fox, if you had been as honest with your Fingers as you were with your Tongue, I should not have gone without acknowledging the Favour.

MORAL.

A Man may tell a Lie by Signs, as well as in Words at Length: and his Conscience in this Case is as answerable for his Fingers as for his Tongue.

A SWALLOW and a CROW.

A Crow disputing with a Swallow for the prize of Beauty, said, Yours, at best is only a Spring Beauty; mine lasts all the Year round.

MORAL.

A durable Good is infinitely to be preferred to a transitory one.

JESTS AND BONS MOTS.

1. Upon the Death of the famous Moliere, a poet waiting with his epitaph upon the Prince of Condé, the Prince told him, *he should have been much better pleased, if Moliere had brought him his.*

2. A brave Dutch Captain being commanded by his Colonel to go on a dangerous Exploit against the French, with Forces that were unlikely to atchieve the Enterprize, the Captain advis'd his Colonel to send but half so many Men: Why so, said the Colonel, to send but half so many Men? *Beause,* replied the Captain, *they are enough to be knock'd on the Head.*

3. The famous Mr. Amner going through a Street in *Windsor*, two Boys looked out of a One-Pair-of-Stairs Window, and cry'd, There goes Mr. Amner that makes so many Bulls. He hearing them, look'd up, saying, *You Rascals, I know you well enough, and if I had you here, I'd kick you down Stairs.*

4. A Fellow hearing the Drums beat up for Volunteers for France, in the Expedition against the Dutch, imagin'd himself valiant enough, and thereupon list'd himself; return-

ing again, he was ask'd by his Friends, What Exploits he had done there? He said? *That he had cut off one of the Enemy's Legs;* and being told that it had been more honourable and manly to have cut of his Head: *Oh,* said he, *you must know his Head was cut off before.*

5. A rich Farmer's Son, who had been bred at the University, coming home to visit his Father and Mother, they being one Night at Supper on a Couple of Fowls, he told them, that by *Logic* and *Arithmetic*, he could prove those two Fowls to be three. Well, let us hear, said the old Man. Why this, cry'd the Scholar, *is one*, and this continu'd he, *is two*, two and one, you know, make *three*. *Since you have made it out so well,* answer'd the old Man, *your Mother shall have the First Fowl, I will have the Second, and the Third you may keep yourself for your great Learning.*

6. Somebody asked my Lord Bacon what he thought of Poets? *Why,* said he, *I think them the very best Writers next to those who write in Prose.*

7. A Gentleman, who had been a great Traveller, would oftentimes talk so extravagantly of the wonderful Things he had seen abroad, that a Friend of his took Notice to him of his exposing himself as he did to all Companies, and ask'd him the Meaning of it? Why, says the Traveller, I have got such a Habit of Lying since I have been abroad, that I really hardly know when I lye, and when I speak Truth; and should be very much oblig'd to you, if you would tread upon my Toe at any Time, when I am likely to give myself too much Liberty that Way. His Friend promis'd he would; and accordingly, not long after, being at a Tavern with him and other Company, when the Traveller was, amongst other strange Things, giving an Account of a Church he had seen in *Italy*, that was above two Miles long, he trod on his Toe, just as one of the Company had asked, How broad that same Church might be? Oh, said he, not above two Feet. Upon which, the Company bursting into a loud Laugh; *Zounds,* said he, *if you had not trod upon my Toe, I should have made it as broad as it was long.*

8. A Countryman sowing his Ground, two smart Fellows riding that Way, one of them called to him with an insolent Air: Well, honest Fellow, said he, 'tis your Business to sow, but we reap the Fruits of your Labour. To which the Countryman replied, *'Tis very likely you may, truly; for I am sowing Hemp.*

9. A certain great Lord having, by his extravagancies, ruin himself over head and ears in debt, and seeming very little concerned about it, one of his friends told him one day, That he wondered how he could sleep quietly in his bed, whilst he was so much in debt. *For my part*, said my lord, *I sleep very well; but I wonder how my creditors can.*

10. King William III. being upon a march for some secret expedition, was intreated by a general to tell him what his design was: The king, instead of answering him, ask'd him, whether, in case he should tell him, he could keep it a secret, and would let it go no farther; the general promised it should not. *Well*, answered his majesty, *I know how to keep a secret as well as you.*

11. Cato, the Cenfor, being ask'd, How it came to pass, that he had no Statue erected for him, who had so well deserved of the Common-wealth? I had rather, said he, have this Question ask'd, than *Why I had one?*

12. King Henry VIII. designing to send a Nobleman on an Embassy to Francis I. at a very dangerous Juncture, he begg'd to be excus'd, saying such a threatening Message to so hot a Prince as Francis I. might go near to cost him his Life. Fear not, said old Harry, if the French King should offer to take away your Life, I would revenge you by taking off the Heads of many Frenchmen now in my Power. *But of all these Heads*, replied the Nobleman, *there may not be one to fit my Shoulders.*

13. Some repartees, if, strictly speaking, not to be brought under the head of jests, yet, for the readiness of the thought, and the politeness of the expression, are somewhat better. Of this sort was the answer made by Sir Robert Sutton to the late King of Prussia, on his asking him at a review of his tall grenadiers, if he would say an equal number of Englishmen could beat them? No, Sir, answered Sir Robert, I won't pretend to say that, but I believe *half the number would try.*

14. A Gascon Officer, who had serv'd under Henry IV. King of France, and not having receiv'd any Pay for a considerable Time, came to the King, and confidently said to him, *Sir, three Words with your Majesty. Money or Discharge. Four with you*, answer'd his Majesty, *Neither one, nor t'other.*

15. Villiers, the witty and extravagant Duke of Buckingham, in King Charles II'd's Time, was saying one Day to Sir Robert Viner, in a melancholic Humour, I am afraid, Sir Robert,

I shall die a Beggar at last, which is the most terrible Thing in the World: Upon my Word, my Lord, said Sir *Robert*, there is another Thing more terrible which you have Reason to apprehend, and that is, *That you will live a Beggar, at the Rate you go on*

16. The same noble Duke, another Time, was making his Complaint to Sir *John Cutler*, a rich Miser, of the Disorder of his Affairs; and ask'd him, what he should do to prevent the Ruin of his Estate? *Live as I do, my Lord*, said Sir *John*; *That I can do*, answer'd the Duke, *when I am ruined.*

17. A pragmatistical young fellow, sitting at Table over against the learned *John Scot*, asked him, What Difference there was between *Scot* and *Sot*? *Just the Breadth of the Table*, answered the other.

18. A Gentleman, having lent a Guinea for two or three Days to a person whose Promises he had not much Faith in, was very much surpriz'd to find, that he very punctually kept his Word with him; the same Gentleman being some Time after desirous of borrowing a larger Sum, *No*, said the other, *you have deceived me once, and I am resolved you shall not do it a second Time.*

19. Three or four roguish Scholars walking out one Day from the University of *Oxford*, espy'd a poor Fellow near *Abingdon*, asleep in a Ditch, with an Afs by him laden with Earthen Ware, holding the Bridle in his Hand; says one of the Scholars to the rest, If you will assist me, I'll help you to a little Money, for you know we are bare at present: No doubt of it they were not long consenting: Why then, said he, we'll go and sell this old Fellow's Afs at *Abingdon*; for you know the Fair is To-morrow, and we shall meet with Chapmen enough; therefore, do you take the Panniers off, and put them upon my Back, and that Bridle over my Head, and then lead the Afs to Market, and let me alone with the old Man. This being done accordingly, in a little Time after the poor Man waking, was strangely surprized to see his Afs thus metamorphosed: O! for Heaven's Sake, said the Scholar, take this Bridle out of my Mouth, and this Load from my Back. Zoons, how came you here, replied the old Man? Why, said he, my Father, who is a Necromancer, upon an idle Thing I did to disoblige him, transformed me into an Afs; but now his Heart has relented, and I am come to my own Shape again, I beg you will let me go Home and thank him:

him: By all Means, said the Crockery Merchant, I do not desire to have any thing to do with Conjurat[i]on; and so set the Scholar at Liberty, who went directly to his Comrades, that by this Time were making merry with the Money they had sold the Afs for. But the old Fellow was forced to go the next Day to seek for a new one in the Fair, and after having looked on several, his own was shewn him for a very good one: *Oh! Oh!* said he, *what! have he and his Father quarrelled again already?* No, no, *I'll have nothing to say to him.*

20. A witty Knave coming into a Lace-shop upon *Ludgate-hill*, said, He had Occasion for a small Quantity of very fine Lace, and having pitched upon that he liked, ask'd the Woman of the Shop, how much she would have for as much as would reach from one of his Ears to the other, and measure which Way she pleased, either over his Head, or under his Chin: After some Words they agreed, and he paid the Money down, and began to measure, saying, *One of my Ears is here, and the other is nailed to the Pillory in Bristol, therefore I fear you have not enough to make good your Bargain; however, I will take this Piece in Part, and desire you will provide the rest with all Expedition.*

21. A Lady's Age happening to be question'd, she affirm'd she was but *Forty*, and call'd upon a Gentleman, who was in Company, for his Opinion: Cousin, said she, do you believe I am in the right, when I say I am but *Forty*? I am sure, Madam, reply'd he, I ought not to dispute it; for I have constantly heard you say so for above these *ten Years*.

22. A Lieutenant-colonel to one of the *Irish* Regiments in the *French* Service, being dispatched by the Duke of *Berwick*, from *Fort-Kehl*, to the King of *France*, with a Complaint relating to some Irregularities that had happen'd in the Regiment, his Majesty, with some Emotion of Mind, told him, that the *Irish* Troops gave him more Uneasiness than all his Forces besides. Sir, says the Officer, *all your Majesty's Enemies make the same Complaint.*

23. Mr. G—n, the Surgeon, being sent for to a Gentleman who had just received a slight Wound in a Rencounter, gave Orders to his Servant to go home with all Haste imaginable, and fetch a certain Plaister; the Patient turning a little pale, Lord, Sir, said he, *I hope there is no Danger?* Yes, indeed is there, answered the Surgeon, *for if the Fellow don't*
set

set up a good Pair of Heels, the Wound will heal before he returns.

24. A profligate young Nobleman, being in Company with some sober People, desired Leave to toast the Devil. The Gentleman, who sat next to him, said, *He had no Objection to any of his Lordship's Friends.*

25. The late Colonel *Chartres* reflecting on his ill Life and Character, told a certain Nobleman, That if such a Thing as a good Name was to be purchased, he would freely give 10,000 Pounds for one. The Nobleman said, It would certainly be the worst Money he ever laid out in his Life. Why so, said the *honest* Colonel? *Because*, answered the Lord, *you would forfeit it again in less than a Week.*

26. One saying that Mr. *Dennis* was an excellent Critic, was answered, That indeed his Writings were much to be valued; for that by his Criticism he taught Men how to write well; and by his Poetry shew'd them what it was to write ill; so that the World was sure to edify by him.

27. The late Earl of *S*— kept an *Irish* Footman, who, perhaps, was as expert in making Bulls as the most learned of his Countrymen. My Lord having sent him one Day with a Present to a certain Judge, the Judge in Return sent my Lord half a Dozen live Patridges with a Letter; the Patridges fluttering in the Basket upon *Teague's* Back, as he was carrying them home, he set down the Basket, and opened the Lid of it to quiet them, whereupon they all flew away. Oh! the Devil burn ye, said he, I am glad you are gone; but when he came home, and my Lord had read the Letter, Why *Teague*, said my Lord, *I find* there are half a Dozen Patridges in the Letter: Now, Arrah, dear Honey, said *Teague*, I am glad you have found them in the *Letter*, for they are all *lost* out of the Basket.

28. The same Nobleman going out one Day, called *Teague* to the Side of his Chariot, and bade him tell Mr. *Such-a-one*, if he came, that he should be at home at Dinner. But when my Lord was got across the Square in which he lived, *Teague* came puffing after him, and calling to the Coachman to stop; upon which my Lord, pulling the String, desired to know what *Teague*, wanted: My Lord, said he, you bade me tell Mr. *Such-a-one*, if he came, that you would dine at home; *but what must I say if he don't come?*

29. Two inseparable Comrades in the Guards in *Flanders*, had every thing in common between them. One of them
being

being an extravagant Fellow, and unfit to be trusted with Money, the other was always Parfe-bearer, which yet he gained little by, for the former would at Night frequently pick his Pocket to the least Stiver; to prevent which, he bethought himself of a Stratagem; and coming among his Companions the next Day, he told them he had bit his Comrade. *Ay, how?* said they. *Why,* replied he, *I hid my Money in his own Pocket last Night, and I am sure he would never look for it there.*

30. A Fellow once standing in the Pillory at *Temple-Bar*, it occasion'd a Stop, so that a Carman with a Load of Cheeses had much ado to pass; and driving just up to the Pillory, he ask'd, What that was, that was wrote over the Person's Head? They told him, it was a Paper to signify his Crime, that he stood there for *Forgery*. *Ay,* said he, What is *Forgery*? They answer'd him, That *Forgery* was counterfeiting another's Hand, with intent to cheat People. To which the Carman replied, looking up at the Offender: *Oh, Pox, this comes of your Writing and Reading, you silly Dog.*

31. *Alphonso*, King of *Naples*, sent a *Moor*, who had been his Captive a long Time, to *Barbary*, with a considerable Sum of Money to purchase Horses, and to return by such a Time. There was about the King a Buffoon, or Jester, who had a Table-Book, wherein he used to register any remarkable Absurdity that happened at Court. The Day the *Moor* was dispatch'd to *Barbary*, the said Jester waiting on the King at Supper, the King called for his Table-book; in which the Jester kept a regular Journal of Absurdities. The King took the Book and read, How *Alphonso*, King of *Naples*, had sent *Belthram* the *Moor*, who had been a long Time his Prisoner, to *Marocco*, his own Country, with so many thousand Crowns to buy Horses. The King turn'd to the Jester, and ask'd, Why he inserted that? Because, said he, I think he will never come back to be a Prisoner again; and so you have lost both Man and Money: But, if he does come, says the King, then your Jest is marr'd: No, Sir, replies the Buffoon, *for if he should return, I will blot out your Name, and put in his for a Fool.*

32. A Lady whose Beauty was very much upon the Decline, having sent her Picture to a Gentleman that was to come a wooing to her, bid her Chambermaid, when she was coming to dress her, take Care in repairing her Decays a little, or she should not look like her Picture. *I warrant you, Ma-*
dam

dam, says she, laying on the *Bavarian Red*, a little *Art* once made your *Picture* like you, now a little of the same *Art* shall make you like your *Picture*; your *Picture* must sit to you.

33. A certain Philosopher, when he saw Men in a Hurry to finish any Matter, us'd to say, *Stay a little, that we may make an End the sooner.*

34. A Gentleman complaining of a Misfortune, said, it was owing to that drunken Sot his Man, who could not keep himself sober. *With Respect to your Worship*, said the Fellow, *I know very few drunken Sots that do keep themselves sober.*

35. A certain *Irishman* making strong Love to a great Fortune, told her, *He could not sleep for dreaming of her.*

36. A certain preacher held forth at St. Mary, without giving his auditory any satisfaction. Santeuil, the celebrated Poet, who was present, said, "He did better last year.," A by-stander asserted he must be mistaken; for the present pulpit thumper had not preached last year. "That is the very reason,," said Santeuil.

37. A simple Bumpkin, coming to *London*, was very much taken with the Sight of a Chair, or Sedan, and bargained with the Chairman to carry him to a Place he named. The Chairmen, observing the Curiosity of the Clown to be suitable to the Meanness of his Habit, privately took out the Bottom of the Chair, and then put him into it, which, when they took up, the Countryman's Feet were upon the Ground, and as the Chairmen advanced, so did he; and to make the better Sport, if any Place was dirtier in the Way than the rest, that they chose to go through; the Countryman not knowing but others used to be carried, or rather driven in the same Manner, coming to his Lodgings, gave them their Demand. Returning into the Country, he related what rare Things he had seen in *London* and withal, that he had been carried in a Sedan; Sedan, quoth one, What is that? *Why*, said he, *like our Watch House; only it is covered with Leather; but were it not for the Name of a Sedan, a Man might as well walk on Foot.*

38. An impudent ridiculous fellow, being laughed at by all who came in his company told some of his acquaintance, that he had a happy quality of laughing at all who laughed at him. Then, said one of them, *you lead the merriest life of any man in Christendom.*

39. *Alc.*

39. *Alexander the Great* ask'd *Diomedes*, a famous pirate, who was brought prisoner to him, why he was so bold as to rob and plunder in his seas? he answered, that he did it for his profit, and as *Alexander* himself was used to do it. *But because I do it with one single galley, I am called a pirate; but you, Sir, who do it with a great army, are called a king.* This bold answer so pleased *Alexander*, that he set him at liberty.

40. The duke of Guise, after a battle fought between Francis I. and Charles V. reproach'd one Villandry, that tho' he was in compleat armour, yet he had not been seen in the fight. I'll make it out, answered Villandry, boldly, that I was there, and in a place where you durst not be seen. The duke, nettled at this reproach, threatened to punish him severely; but he appeased him with these words: *I was, my Lord, with the baggage where your courage would not suffer you to go.*

41. One who had formerly been rich, but had squandered away his estate, and left himself no furniture in the house but a sorry bed, a little table, a few broken chairs, and some other odd things, seeing a parcel of thieves, who knew not his condition, breaking into his house in the night, he cried out to them, *Are not you a damn'd pack of fools, to think to find any thing here in the dark, when I can find nothing by day-light?*

42. Poor *Joe Miller* going one day along the *Strand*, an impudent *Derby* captain came swagging up to him, and thrust between him and the wall. *I don't use to give the wall*, said he, *to every jackanapes.* *But I do*, said *Joe*; and so made way for him.

43. When his late Royal Highness the Duke of *Cumberland* arrived at *Portsmouth*, to see the Fleet, he stood talking to one of the Admirals with his Hat on; upon which a Sailor, who was at a little Distance, hailed his Mess-mate, *Jack! Jack*, says he, there's a Sight for ye; see, there's a Man talks to the Admiral with his Hat on! *Why, you Fool*, answered the other, *how should he know Good-manners, he never was at Sea.*

44. I never laughed more than at the Simplicity of a man in the North, who had entered into a Manufactory without any Knowledge of Business, and traded away a good Fortune without knowing how to draw even a Bill of Exchange. This honest Man had long owed my Friend Mr. *** a Hundred Pound,

Pound, which he had often asked for in vain; at last, meeting with him one Day in Company, he asked him why he did not pay him the Money? Because I have none, Master, answered the other. Well, but *Thomas*, replied my Friend, if you have no Money, perhaps you may give me a Bill upon Somebody in *London*. Yes, Master, that I will do with all my Heart, replied the other with great Simplicity; sit down and write it, Master, for you can write better than I. My Friend sat down to draw the Bill, greatly rejoiced with an opportunity of getting his Money; and when he had done, *Thomas*, says he, I have drawn the Bill a Month after Date, now who shall I address it to, that is, who shall I direct it to for Payment? *Whom you please, Master*, answered the poor Man, *you know more People in London than I do.*

45. A Gentleman, who was declaiming before a large Audience, having a bad Memory, was at a Stand, and in a low Voice desired his Friend, who stood by, to help him out. No, says the other, *methinks you are out enough already.*

AN ABRIDGEMENT OF ANDERSON'S COMMERCIAL GEOGRAPHY OF GREAT-BRITAIN AND IRELAND. *)

The Island of *Great-Britain* may be considered both in a *geographical* and *mercantile* Sense, as comprehending two distinct Parts, viz. *England* the richer and greater, and *Scotland* the smaller and less considerable Part: although in a *political Sense* those two Parts have been indissolubly united *sixty-seven* Years ago.

I. *England* is the more level and fertile Part of this noble Island, and *Scotland* more mountainous, and in its Northern and North-western Parts more cold and barren, though enjoying a more pure and healthy Air. *England* is often subject to Damps, Fogs, and much variable Weather; yet the Country is uncommonly fertile, almost always abounding in Plenty of Corn, and excellent Vegetables and Fruit; in Cyder, Perry, Saffron, Liquorice, Woad, excellent Timber both for House and Ship Building, as also for Fuel; almost
inex-

*) Anderson's Historical Deduction of the Origin of Commerce &c.
London 1764. fol. Vol. II.

inexhaustible Pit-coal; the finest Pastures, Horses, and horned Cattle; and Sheep, a most profitable Article beyond any other, on Account of the noblest Manufacture upon Earth. *England's* Mines and Manufactures are also very considerable; and her *Tin-Mines* of *Cornwall* have not their Parallel in any other Part of *Europe*, nor perhaps in the whole World. In her Mountains are found Marble, Alabaster, Crystal, Alum, and Vitriol; her Sea-Coasts and Rivers abound in the greatest Quantities of the best Kinds of Fish. II. In *Scotland* they are making many Improvements in Agriculture, and in the greater Production of Hemp and Flax, for farther increasing their already extensive very fine and valuable *Linen* Manufacture. It also abounds in horned Cattle, Sheep, and a smaller Breed of hardy Horses; in vast Quantities of Pit-coal, better than that of *England*; and in Plenty of Lead, of Salmon in its Rivers, and an inexhaustible Abundance of *Fish* in her Seas. III. *Ireland*, though abounding in Lakes and Bogs, is nevertheless a noble Island. Agriculture is beginning to be improved, and its Cultivation of *Hemp*, and yet more of *Flax*, is become very considerable; also her *Linen* Manufacture is grown almost to be a Prodigy, even in a few Years Space. — Dr. *Busching* makes the Inhabitants of *Great-Britain* amount to *nine Millions*, which is probably near the Truth; and the People of *Ireland* are nearly computed at 2,250,000. — *England's* foreign Commerce is immense!

1. To *Turkey*, *England's* sends Woollen Cloths, Tin, Lead, and Iron, solely in her own Shipping; and brings thence Raw-Silk, Carpets, Gauls, and other dying Drugs, Cotton, Fruits, medicinal Drugs, Coffee, &c. Dr. *Busching* relates, that a very eminent *Turkey* Merchant at *London* assured him, *That the Balance of this Trade in England's Favour was, to his certain Knowledge, near 600,000 l. per Annum*: which we heartily wish may be true! though we have too much Ground to doubt it. 2. To *Italy*, *England* exports Woollen Goods of various Kinds, Peltry, Leather, Lead, Tin, Fish, and *East-India* Goods; and brings back raw and thrown Silk, Wines, Oil, Soap, Olives, Oranges, Lemons, Pomgranates, dried Fruits, Colours, Anchovies, &c. And the said Author thinks, the Balance of this Trade, *in Favour of Italy*, cannot be less than 200,000 l. per Annum. 3. To *Spain*, *England* sends all Kinds of Woollen Goods, Leather, Lead, Tin, Fish, Corn, Iron and Brass Manufactures, Haberdashery Wares, Assortments of *Linen* from *Germany* and elsewhere for her *American Colonies*; and

B

receives

receives in return, Wines, Oils, dried Fruits, Oranges, Lemons, Olives, Wools, Indigo, Cochineal, and other dying Drugs, Colours, *Gold* and *Silver* Coin, &c. And is, doubtless, a gainful Trade for *England*, though not so greatly so as it was formerly, before other Nations, and more especially *France*, interfered so much of late Years. 4. To *Portugal*, *England* sends mostly the same Kinds of Merchandize as to *Spain*; and makes Returns in vast Quantities of Wines, with Oils, Salt, dried and moist Fruits, dying Drugs, and *Gold* Coins; and, undoubtedly, much to *England's* Advantage. 5. To *France*, *England* sends much Tobacco, Lead, Tin, Flannels, Horns, and sometimes Corn; and always much Money at the Long-run. And brings home, in a smuggling Way, a much greater Value in Wines, Brandies, Linnen, Cambricks, Lace, Velvets, and many other prohibited Fopperies, Brocades, &c. always very considerably to *England's* Disadvantage. But as there is no commercial Treaty subsisting between *England* and *France*, not even in Time of Peace, *England's* just Loss cannot be ascertained.

6. To *Flanders*, *England* sends Serges, Flannels, Tin, Lead, Sugars, and Tobacco; and makes Returns in fine Lace, Linen, Cambricks, &c. to *England's* Disadvantage (according to Dr. *Busching*) to the Amount of 250,000 *l.* Sterling yearly.

7. To *Germany*, *England* sends Cloths and Stuffs, Tin, Pewter, Sugars, Tobacco, and *East-India* Merchandize: And brings thence vast Quantities of Linen, Thread, Goats-skins, Tinned-plates, Timber for all Uses, Wines, and many other Articles: And Dr. *Busching* thinks the Balance against *England* may amount annually to 500,000 *l.* 8. To *Normay*, *England* sends a small Quantity of Tobacco, and of Woollen Stuffs; and (it is said) 150,000 *l.* in Money; and brings thence vast Quantities of *Deal* and other Timber. 9. To *Sweden*, *England* sends some few Manufactures, and about 200,000 *l.* annually in Money; and brings back from thence much Iron, Timber, Tar, Copper, &c.

10. To *Russia*, *England* sends Woollen Cloth and Stuffs, Tin, Lead, Tobacco, Diamonds, Household Furniture &c.; and makes Returns in Hemp, Flax, Linen, Thread, Furs, Pot-ash, Iron, Wax, Tallow, &c. And by this Trade *England* loses (according to the Opinion of some) 400,000 *l.* annually.

11. To *Holland*, *England* sends an immense Quantity of many Sorts of Merchandize; such as all Kinds of Woollen Goods, Hides, Corn, Coals, *East-India* and *Turkey* Merchandize, Tobacco, Tar, Sugar, Rice, Ginger, and other

other *American* Productions: And makes Returns in fine Linen, Lace, Cambricks, Thread, Tapes, Inkle, Madder, Boards, Drugs, Whalebone, Train-oil, Toys, and many other Things. And the Balance is usually supposed to be much in Favour of *England*. 12. To *Ireland*, *England* sends almost all Kinds of Merchandize, (Linen and Woollen Stuffs and Provisions alone excepted;) and, doubtless, reaps great Advantages thereby. Although, of late Years, *Ireland's* great and increasing Importations of Linen into *England* may, in Time, turn the Balance against *England*, notwithstanding the great Sums of Money spent in *England* by *Ireland's* Absentees. — *Ireland* moreover enjoys the Benefit of a direct Commerce to most Parts of *Europe*, viz. with the *Netherlands*, *France*, *Spain* and *Portugal*, with her Hides, Tallow, salted Beef, Pork, and Butter. The Returns whereof help to pay to *England* what they have from thence.

13. But the most important and advantageous Commerce of *England* is that carried on to her own Colonies in *America*. There it is that *England* (and *Scotland* also since her Union with her) finds the vast and constantly increasing Vent of her own and those of every other *European* Country. And from thence she returns with the various Productions of *America*: Tobacco, Sugars, Rice, Ginger, Indigo, Drugs, Logwood, and Money, which our own Colonies got from the sundry *European* Nations holding Colonies in *America*. 14. To the Coast of *Guinea*, *England* sends sundry Sorts of coarse Woollen and Linen, Iron, Pewter, Brasses, and Hardware Manufactures, Lead-shot, Swords, Knives, Fire-arms, Gunpowder, Glass-Manufactures, &c. And, beside its drawing no Money out of the Kingdom, it supplies her *American* Colonies with Negro Slaves, amounting in Number to above 100,000 annually; and moreover brings home to *England* Gold-Dust, dying and other Drugs, Red-wood, *Guinea*-Grains, Ivory, &c. This Trade therefore is extremely profitable to *England*. 15. To *Arabia*, *Persia*, *East-India*, and *China*, *England* sends much foreign Silver Coin and Bullion, and sundry *English* Manufactures of Woollen Goods, and of Lead, Iron and Brasses: And brings Home from those remote Regions, Muslins and Cottons of many various Kinds, Callicoes, raw and wrought Silk, Chints, Teas, Porcellane, Gold-Dust, Coffee, Saltpetre, and many other Drugs, &c. And so great a Quantity of those various Merchandizes are re-exported to foreign *European* Nations, as more than abundantly compensates for all

the Silver Bullion which *England* carries out! — Now, if (as some compute) *England's* annual Exports do amount to near *seven Millions Sterling*, and that her annual Imports do not exceed *five Millions*; of which five Millions above one Million is re-exported, then may the general annual Balance in Favour of *England* be about or near *three Millions Sterling*; or, in other Words, so much is the annual Profit of *England* by its foreign Commerce.

In order for a Description of its several Parts, we shall begin with

Cornwall: This County's Mountains supply an immense Quantity of excellent *Tin*, and also some *Copper* — Its best Towns are: *Falmouth*, a pretty modern Town. It has a good Harbour, some foreign Commerce; and is finely situated for the Station of the Packet-boats to *Spain* and *Portugal*. — *Penzance* is a well-built and populous Sea-port Town, of considerable Commerce.

Devonshire has both Tin and Lead Mines, with Manufactures of the finest Serges or Perpetuanos, Kerfies, Bonelace, and excellent Cyder. — *Plymouth* is a large Town, with a noble Harbour, a large Royal Dock for Ships of War, a Royal Citadel, and other Forts and Batteries; and with the Buildings and People, and its extensive Dock, may probably contain about 20,000 People. — *Exeter* is a large, opulent, and ancient commercial City, containing about and some say more than 20,000 Inhabitants. It is eminent for its great Trade in fine Perpetuanos and Serges, to the Value (as commonly said) of 600,000 *l. per Annum*, and has also a good foreign Commerce.

Dorsetshire abounds in Corn, Cattle, Sheep, Hemp, Flax, and Timber; so pleasant a County as to have been sometimes stiled the *Garden of England*. — *Bridport* is chiefly noted for the great Quantities of *Cordage* and *Match* for the Navy. — *Weymouth* and *Melcomb-Regis* are two populous Sea-port Towns. They carry on a considerable foreign Commerce. *Dorchester*, the County-Town, is large, though an inland Town; and, for six Miles round it, the Country has been said to feed 600,000 Sheep. — *Pool* is a considerable Port for Shipping and Commerce, chiefly in the *Newfoundland* Fishery. *Blandford*, a well-built inland Town, surpasses all *England* in fine *Lacc*, has some Woollen Manufactures, and is noted for good Malt. — *Sherburn*, a large Town, containing 1,300 Houses and 10,000 Inhabitants. Its modern Manufactures are

are Buttons, Lace, and Haberdashery Wares, wherein it carries on a good Trade.

Somersetshire lies on the *Bristol Channel*; it abounds in Corn, fine Cattle, Sheep, Lead, Copper, Woad for Dyers, and *Bristol Stones* resembling Diamonds. Its Manufactures are very important, consisting of fine Cloths, Serges, and Druggets: It is also famous for the best and largest Cheeses, by some esteemed equal to *Parmesan* Cheese, and also for Cyder. — Its best Town is, *Taunton*, a very large Town, on the River *Tone*, navigable from thence to *Bridgewater*. It contains about 20,000 Inhabitants, many of whom are wealthy, as this Place has very considerable Manufactures of Serges, Druggets, and other Woollen Stuffs.

The renowned commercial City of *Bristol* is separated by the River *Avon*, between the two Counties of *Somerset* and *Gloucester*; yet, being a County of itself, it is no Part of either of those Counties. A considerable Part of it lies on the South Side of that River, and a still larger Part on the North Side of it; having a Communication by three Stone-bridges also by a Draw-bridge for letting of Ships up into the Harbour, called the *Back*, or the little River stiled the *Froom*. It is by far the largest City in *Britain*, next after *London*; containing above 13,000 Houses, and about 100,000 Inhabitants; both which are constantly increasing. It is said by some to employ 2,000 maritime Vessels of all Sizes, Coasters, as well as Ships employed in foreign Voyages. It has many very important Manufactures: Its Glassbottle and Drinking-glass one alone occupying fifteen large Houses. Its Brass-wire Manufactures are also very considerable. It contains twenty-one Churches, beside its Cathedral, and seven or eight Meeting-houses; has a most extensive Quay, with Dock-yards, &c. for Ship-building; sundry good Hospitals, in all eighteen in Number, and many Alms-houses and other charitable Foundations. Insomuch, that this City, for its prudent Regulations is perhaps out-done by none, and for its vast Commerce, Wealth, and Shipping, by very few trading Cities in all *Europe*.

Wiltshire is a fertile County, greatly abounding in Woollen Manufactures, more especially at the Towns of *Chippenham*, *Malmesbury*, *Calne*, *Devizes*, *Marlborough*, &c. — *Salisbury* is a fine and well-built City, having a fine Town-house, a spacious Market-place, a noble Cathedral, and about 10,000 Inhabitants. Here are several flourishing Manufactu-

res, particularly fine Flannels, Long-clothes, called *Salisbury Whites*, for the *Turkey Trade*; also Druggets and Bone-lace.

Hampshire, on the *English Channel*, abounds in Corn, Wool, Iron, and Timber; but it has still a considerable Trade in Wool-stapling. — *Portsmouth* is a regularly fortified and most famous Sea-port Town. It has a very spacious Harbour, in which a thousand Ships may ride at Anchor, a most extensive Dock-yard, for the Construction and Repairs of the Royal Navy, fine Rope-yards, vast Storehouses, a Cooperage, Victualing-office, Gunwharf, most convenient Houses also for the numerous Officers and Master-Workmen: All which form a Kind of distinct Town. And the adjoining Streets on the Place called the *Common* form another considerable Town. Moreover, the Town of *Gosport*, intirely depending on *Portsmouth*, and lying on the South Side of the Harbour, forms also a considerable Town. So that the whole taken together may fairly be presumed to contain at least 20,000 People; above 1,000 Men being constantly kept in the King's Pay in and about the Harbour.

Berkshire. a delightful and fruitful County. — *Reading*, its County Town, on the *Thames*, is large and wealthy. It contains at least about 8,000 People, and carries on a great Trade with *London* in Malt and Flour.

Surrey is a pleasant County. — *Guildford* being its reputed County Town, standing on the River *Wey*; which, being navigable from it to the *Thames*, serves to convey much Ship-Timber, &c. to *London*. *Southwark*, though usually deemed a Part of the great Contiguity of *London*, or one of its great Suburbs, yet is within this County; and its Contiguity stretches along the *Thames* from *Deptford-Bridge* to *Vauxhall*, above six Miles in Length, though very narrow in some Parts, and at other Parts scarcely contiguous, containing very many opulent People, and many Thousands of industrious Inhabitants, and various Manufacturers.

Sussex, on the *English Channel*, opposite to *France*, is abundant in fine Oak Timber, and in Iron-mines, worked with very great Benefit. — *Chichester* City is its chief Town. Its principal Trade is in Corn for Exportation, and in Malt and Needles. Its Harbour is neither good nor large; though it has not much foreign Trade, it is nevertheless esteemed a well-built City.

Kent,

Kent, a noble and fertile County. — *Canterbury*, its ancient Capital, is a decayed City. Here are still some Silk Manufactures carried on by the posterity of the *Walloons*, and of the *French Refugees*. It has several fine Remains of stately Ecclesiastical Buildings, with Part of its ancient Walls: Possibly there may be near 20,000 People still left in it. Its Neighbourhood is noted for the best *Bram*, and also for great Quantities of excellent Hops. *Dover*, an ancient and open Sea-port, opposite to that of *Calais* in *France*. Its Harbour is a dry one, and is only capable, at High-water, of receiving middling Merchant-Ships. Of its ancient seven Parish Churches two only remain. Here is a Custom-house, and a Victualing-office for the Royal Navy; yet it is a Place of no considerable foreign Commerce. Its huge Castle stands too high to do much Execution against Shipping. Here are held the Courts relating to the *Cinque Ports*, it being the chief of them. In Time of Peace there goes from hence a Packet-Boat twice every Week to *Calais*, in Sight of it, with the Mails for *France*, &c. *Chatham* is the principal Dock-yard for the Royal Navy, being supplied with immense Quantities of all Kinds of Naval Stores, and whatever else may be requisite for the Equipment of a Royal Fleet. It has an *Ordnance-Office*, a *Victualing Office*, and an *Hospital*; — handsome and convenient Houses for the several Officers. And the intire Oeconomy here is so much improved of late Years, that it may be pronounced truly admirable!

Middlesex is a small but pleasant and fertile County. *London*, its august and matchless Capital, is not to be described in less than a very considerable Folio Volume: Yet we may summarily observe, that it contains 128 Parish Churches, and near as many Protestant Dissenting Meeting-houses and Chapels, of various Denominations, beside five Foreign Churches, or private Popish Chapels, and *Jews* Synagogues. It contains 3 Colleges, 13 Hospitals, and almost 100 Alms-houses; 15 Colleges (called Inns) for Lawyers, 27 Squares, and 131 Charity-Schools. In point of Opulence, Commerce, Populousness, and Extent, (including *Westminster* and all its other Suburbs) we apprehend it may fairly be deemed the first City in *Christendom*, if not on the whole Earth.

Essex abounds with the finest Manufactures of *Bays*, and with fine Saffron, and Oysters. — *Colchester*, its chief Town, is an ancient, large, and populous Place, with a Harbour for small Vessels. It has long been eminent for its fine Manufactures

res of Bays and Serges, (in which Manufactures this single Town has been said formerly to have returned 1,500,000 *l.* annually) and for excellent barrelled Oysters, sent to many distant Parts.

Suffolk produces *Hemp*, and all Sorts of Grain and excellent Cattle. — *Ipswich*, its Capital, is an ancient decayed Town, although it has still twelve Parish Churches, a Harbour and Yard for Ship-building. It also retains still some Woollen Manufactures.

Norfolk's Productions are Corn, Wool, Honey, and Saffron; and its chief Manufactures are fine Woollen, and Half-Silk Stuffs, and Stockings. — *Norwich* is its ancient, large, and populous Metropolis, the Center of all the Manufactures and inland Commerce of this County. To the *Flemings* and *Walloons*, who fled hither from the Persecution of the *Duke d'Alva*, and were encouraged to settle here by Queen *Elizabeth*, are owing the principal and vast Increase of its fine Crape and other light Manufactures, which are said to employ 120,000 Persons in and near this City; and *Norwich* buys up Quantities of fine Yarn, which is spun in sundry other more Northern Counties. This City is of great Service to *Yarmouth*, its proper Sea-port, not only for exporting its excellent Stuff, &c. Manufactures, beyond Sea and to *London*, but likewise by the vast Quantities of Wine, Oil, Coals, Fish, and other heavy Goods, which so populous a manufacturing City as *Norwich* constantly consumes. The persecuted *Flemings*, driven out by *d'Alva's* Cruelty, first taught *Norwich* to make *Says*, *Bays*, *Serges*, *Shalloons*, and other fine Stuffs; and they afterward fell into the Manufactures of *Camlets*, *Crapes*, *Druggets*, &c. in which they are said to return 200,000 *l.* annually, and their Stocking Manufactures are said to be valued annually at 60,000 *l.* more. — *Yarmouth* is a handsome and populous Town, with a good Harbour, and one of the finest Quays in all *Europe*. Its Herring Fishery is very great, employing 150 Vessels therein, whereof about 50 are usually laden to *Genoa*, *Leghorn*, *Naples*, *Messina*, *Portugal*, *Spain*, and *Venice*; from hence also are exported all Kinds of Stuffs made at *Norwich*, and other Parts, to *Holland*, &c. — *Yarmouth* imports from *Normay*, and the Ports of the *Baltic*, *Pitch*, *Tar*, *Timber*, *Hemp*, *Flax*, *Iron*, &c. and, since the Decline of *Ipswich*, it has been the principal Rendezvous of the *Newcastle* Colliers and other Shipping, passing between the North and South Parts. It also deals considerably in

in Coals and Malt. It was formerly reckoned to have 1,100 Ships of its own. *Lynn*, a wealthy and populous Sea-port Town, with considerable Shipping and Commerce.

Cambridgeshire is chiefly noted for very good Pasturage, Corn, and Saffron.

Huntingdonshire is partly marshy, though with fine Pasturage, Corn and Cattle. Its fenny Situation, like Part of *Cambridgeshire*, affords great Plenty of fine fresh-water Fish and Wild-fowl.

Bedfordshire is an in-land County, fertile in Grain and Cattle. — *Bedford*, its Shire-Town, on the *Ouse*, is a large, populous, and well-built Town. It has as great Trade in Corn sent down the *Ouse* to *Holland* by the Shipping of *Lynn*. Other Materials for Commerce formerly were Womens Straw-hats. Here is also good *Fuller's Earth*, so necessary for the Woollen Manufacture.

Hertfordshire is in general a fertile in-land Country, plentiful in Corn and Cattle.

Buckinghamshire has Plenty of Cattle and Sheep; and has good Bone-lace and Paper Manufactures.

Oxfordshire is a fine and fertile County. — *Oxford* City, having an illustrious University, is large and well built, but, in a great Measure, destitute both of Commerce and Manufactures. *Woodstock*, a small Market-Town, is only noted for a Manufacture of Watch-Chains and other Steel Wares, as also for Gloves and other Leather Manufactures; and *Bampton*, for the greatest Trade in Skins of any Part of the Kingdom.

Gloucestershire is a fine and fruitful County, eminent for the finest of *Wool*. In its Plains there is Plenty of Corn and Timber; and it produces vast Quantities of Cheese and excellent Cyder. — *Gloucester* City stands on the *Severn*. Although the City of *Bristol* always has, and probably ever will, intercept and prevent its being considerable for naval Commerce, it has however a Custom-house, to which Ships of a moderate Burden come up; its best Manufactures are Pins and Bellfounding.

Monmouthshire, on the other or west Side of the *Severn* Frith, or *Sea*, is mountainous and woody, yet not unfertile. — *Monmouth*, its Shire-Town, having a Harbour, and carrying on a good Trade with *Bristol*. *Pontypool* is noted for its Iron Slitting-mills, its Manufacture of Iron Snuffboxes, &c. And more lately for its fine Manufacture of *Tinned Iron Plates*,

so much improved, and so universally in use for Kitchen-Furniture, and many other Purposes.

Worcestershire abounds in Corn, Cattle, Sheep, Fruits, River-Fish, and in divers Salt-Springs and Salt-Pits at sundry of its Towns. Its best Towns are: *Worcester City*, standing pleasantly on the River *Severn*, may contain about or near 20,000 Inhabitants. It has divers Manufactures of fine Cloths, and of Gloves. Here is a Custom-house and Quay, to which many Vessels of small Burden come up. *Bewdley* is a good Town, on the *Severn*, dealing largely in Corn; Iron Wares, Salt, Hops, Leather, *Manchester Goods*, &c. carried down the *Severn* to *Gloucester* and other Parts.

Herefordshire abounds in Corn, excellent Wool, Timber, Cyder and Salmon.

Warwickshire is a good in-land County. — *Birmingham* is the largest Town in this County, most populous and most thriving. It is not only all over *England*, but it may be said likewise all over *Europe*, that it is eminent for its almost endless Variety of excellent and ingenious *Hardware* Manufactures; of vast Variety of Snuff- and Tobacco-Boxes, Buttons, Shoe-Buckles, Tweezers, &c. with many other Sorts of Steel and Brass Wares. For which End it is supplied with very cheap Coals, and all other Necessaries in great Plenty. It has three fine Churches, several Dissenting Meeting-houses; and, having lately had many new Streets added to it, it may probably contain about 30,000 Inhabitants; and at present much more likely to increase than to diminish.

Northamptonshire is a very populous in-land County, extremely fruitful. — *Northampton* Town is a pleasant Place, where is the greatest Horse-Market in *England*.

Rutlandshire is the very smallest County in *England*, remarkably abounding in Corn, black Cattle, and Sheep.

Leicestershire is very fertile in Corn, Cattle, and Sheep with fine long Wool. — *Leicester*, its Shire-Town, is considerably large and populous. It carries on a great Trade in Stockings, Corn, and Cattle. The Stocking-frame Trade having in some Years yielded 6,000 *l. per Annum*.

Lincolnshire, a large County, with a very various Soil.

Nottinghamshire is a fine County, and has in it many Woods, Forests, and Coal-pits. — *Nottingham*, situated on a Rock near the River *Trent*, is one of the finest and pleasantest Towns of the whole Kingdom. It is wealthy and populous. Its principal Manufactures are Stockings, for which it is very famous;

famous; it has good Earthen-ware; and is also very famous for its excellent *Malt* and *Ale*.

Derbyshire, though (like most other Counties) it has a various Soil, has however Plenty of Corn and Wood, with many Mines of Iron, Lead, Coal, and Marble. — *Derby*, its Shire-Town, is a Staple for *Wool*, and is noted for good Malt and fine Ale, the latter being exported in great Quantities.

Staffordshire is in some Parts barren, mountainous, and woody; in other Parts it has good Corn and Pasture; and particularly abounds in Mines of Iron and Coal. — *Wolverhampton* is a wealthy and populous Town, filled with Manufactures of the finest Locksmiths Work in *England*, and other Kinds of Hardware.

Shropshire (or the County of *Salop*) is a pleasant and fertile Country, abounding in Corn, Coals, Iron, and Wood. — *Shrewsbury* (or *Salop*) is a pleasant, and well-built Town. It has large Manufactures of *Flannel*, called here *Welsh Cottons*, and also of Cloth.

Cheshire is mostly a level Country, abounding in Corn and Cattle of all kinds, and in Salt-Works. — *Chester* City drives a very considerable Trade with *Ireland*. This City is large and populous. It is computed annually to vend 30,000 Tons Weight of its excellent *Cheese*, each consisting of 20 Hundred Weight.

Yorkshire, by far the largest County in *England*, is, in general, extremely fertile and plentiful in all the Necessaries of Life. Out of its forty-nine Towns, the following ones are the principal, viz. *York* City is very much decayed, and fallen from its ancient Splendor and Magnitude. *Halifax*, upon the River *Calder*, is a very populous and very wealthy Town, eminent for its extensive Woollen Manufactures. *Leeds* is a very populous, large, and wealthy Town, having three Churches, and several dissenting Meeting-houses. It is most famous for its immense Woollen-Cloth fair, where, say some, 20,000*l.* worth of Cloth is often sold in an Hour's Time, and much of it shipped off at *Hull* for foreign Parts, its River being navigable by Boats to *Wakefield*, *York*, and *Hull*. *Wakefield's* Woollen Manufactures have of late so much increased it, as to be computed more populous than *York* City. *Sheffield* is a very large Town, eminently famous, for its Cutlery Ware; in which it is said to employ 40,000 People, though not all living within the Town. — *Hull*, enjoys a very large foreign Commerce, and a numerous Shipping, more espe-

especially employed to the *Baltic*, and to the Northern Kingdoms, for Naval Stores, &c. and also in the Fisheries to *Iceland* and *Greenland*. It has a large inland Trade with sundry neighbouring Counties, by means of the several Rivers at and near it. *Hull* also deals largely in Corn, has much Sail-Cloth manufactured at its Trinity-house, and Lead. Its Customs, by its foreign Trade, are reputed to amount to from 30 to 40,000*l*. It may probably contain near 20,000 Inhabitants. *Scarborough* is a good Seaport Town, with a safe Harbour. It is employed so much in the fishing for Cod, Herrings, &c. as to be able, not only to supply the neighbouring Countries, but also to send considerable Quantities beyond Sea. It likewise deals largely in the Coal-Trade.

In the County or Bishopric of *Durham*, the principal Commodities or Productions are, *Iron*, *Lead*, and *Coals*, and some *Linen* Manufactures at *Darlington*.

Northumberland yields excellent Mines of *Coals* and *Lead*. — *Newcastle*, on the North Side of the River *Tine*, is its stately and opulent Capital. This Town is extremely populous. The River *Tine* is its extensive and safe Harbour; from whence almost incredible Quantities of *Coals* are constantly shipped off for *London*, and other Parts of *England*, as well as to foreign Parts. It is, moreover, in other Respects, a Place of very considerable foreign Commerce; has several Glass-houses, a considerable Manufacture of Hardware, and the best Grind-stones in all *Europe*. *Newcastle* builds many Ships for the Coal-Trade. Seven Miles down the River, the large Village of *North-Shields* is the noted Station for the Coal-Ships, where they take in their Ladings from the numerous Lighters called *Keels*, constantly going thither for that End, navigated by above 4000 Keelmen. Merchant-Ships of considerable Burden come up to its fine Quay, but most of them remain at *Shields*, ready to go out to Sea; where, at the Mouth of the *Tine*, there is a Fort well planted with Cannon, and a Garrison. *Newcastle*, with *Shields*, is by many thought to contain above 30,000 People.

Lancashire is in some Parts fruitful, in other Parts marshy, and in some other Parts stony and barren. Its chief natural Productions are *Corn*, *Coals*, and excellent *Hemp*. — *Lancaster*, its Country-Town, is a Sea-port, though capable only of Ships of about 70 Tons Burden: Yet, with such Ships, it carries on a thriving Trade with our *American* Colonies, in Manufactures of *Woollen*, *Hardware*, &c. *Manchester*, is a large,

large, beautiful, and extremely populous Place: And though, in Point of Government, it is really but a Village, as having no higher Magistrate than a Constable; yet, in Magnitude, elegant Buildings, and Number of Inhabitants, it surpasses all the Towns, and even all the Cities of *England*, three only excepted. It is eminently famous for the Skill and Industry of its People, in many Kinds of Manufactures of Cotton, Dimities, Tickings, &c. and is by some said to contain upwards of 30,000, and some others think 40,000 People. *Liverpool* is a large and fine Sea-port Town, at the Mouth of the River *Mersey*, with convenient Harbour, and a fine wet Dock. It has so vast foreign or naval Commerce, more particularly in the *Guinea* and *West-India* Trade, as even to vie with, and in some Branches to exceed the City of *Bristol* itself. It may have about 300 Ships and Vessels, great and small, belonging to it, including coasting as well as foreign Trade; is thought to contain about 30,000 Inhabitants; and both it and *Manchester* are constantly increasing, not only in single Houses, but even in intire new Streets.

Westmoreland lies mostly in a marshy or moorish Country, and other Parts of it are mountainous. — *Kendal* is a considerable Place in point of Trade, Buildings, and the Number and Wealth of its Inhabitants, and is also greatly enriched by its Woollen Cloth Manufactures, and by its Druggets, stockings, and Hats, although it has but a small Harbour on the River *Can*.

Cumberland, on the *Irish* Sea, abounds in Pit-coal, Copper, and Lead.

In the Principality of *WALES* are twelve Counties, viz. six in *South-Wales*, and the like Number in *North-Wales*. The whole country is so vastly improved since its complete Union with *England*, as to have quite another Appearance at present than 200 Years ago. Its Lands well cultivad, its Towns well built and inhabited; and, although it be mostly mountainous, it nevertheless affords Plenty of all the Necessaries of Life, either in respect to Corn or Cattle: It has also Plenty of Wood, Coals, and Turf for Fuel, and for working its Mines. The whole Principality probably containing 300,000 People. — The Town of *Pembroke* has a considerable naval Commerce. *Caermarthen* is a thriving, well-built, polite, and populous Place, with a good Trade. *Cardigan* Town is reasonably large and well built, has a very brisk Trade with *Ireland* from its River *Tivy*. And here they are said to catch the

the finest Salmon in all *England*. *Wrexham* is the largest Town in *Northwales*, being populous and well built; and has a good Trade in Flannels.

SCOTLAND.

Its natural Productions are Corn and Pulse of all Kinds, horned Cattle, small hardy Horses, Sheep, Hogs, Wool, Flax, Iron, Lead, Marble, Peltry, Slate, and Hemp. It is usually divided into thirty-one Shires and two Stewartries, and may contain 1,500,000 People. Its best Towns are: *Dunbar*, a well-built Royal Burgh, and a well-known Sea-port, with a good Harbour, and some considerable naval Commerce. *Edinburgh*, the Capital of *Scotland*. It is large, well built, and populous, having an eminent University, an Exchange, a noble and strong Castle, with a Garrison, a fine Royal Palace, and many handsome Palaces of the Nobility. The spacious Town and Port of *Leith*, containing two Parish-Churches, with a fine Quay and Pier running a great Way into the Sea, is the proper Port of *Edinburgh*; which has no inconsiderable foreign Trade, and large coasting Trade; and with *Leith*, and its other Suburbs, may fairly contain 60,000 People. *Edinburgh* is, moreover, the Seat of Government of the chief Courts of Law, and Boards of Revenue; and has many Persons of Quality and Figure always residing in it.

Borrowstonness, on the River *Forth*, is a Port of good Commerce and Shipping; and, next to *Leith*, carries on the greatest Trade to *Holland* and *France* of any in *Scotland*. — *Dumfries* is a large improving Sea-port, on the *Irish* Sea; has a considerable Number of good Ships, with a proportionable Share of foreign Commerce, and about 6000 Inhabitants. — *Port-Patrick*, a small Town, with a tolerable Harbour, being the usual Port of Passage to *Belfast*, and other Parts of the North of *Ireland*. — *Greenock*, a well-built Sea-port, with a good Share of foreign Trade, and the largest Herring-Fishery of any on the West Coast of *Scotland*.

Glasgow is a large and beautifully built City, situated in a Plain along the River *Clyde*, in a very fertile Country. It is a City, of very considerable foreign as well as domestic Commerce, having many good Ships trading to our *American* Colonies, and to many other Countries. It has many excellent Manufactures of various Kinds. Its proper Harbour lies some Miles lower down the River, at a Place named *Newport*.

Newport-Glasgow; yet smaller Vessels can come up to the City, and the City may possibly contain near 30,000 Inhabitants. — *Stirling* is a large and well-built Town; Ships of small Burden come up with the Tide to its Bridge. It has very considerable Manufactures of Shalloons and Serges. *Kirkcaldy* is the most populous and thriving Burgh on all the Coast of *Fife*, having a considerable foreign Commerce, and much Shipping. *Dundee*, is a large and populous Town, near the Mouth of the River *Tay*. It is a Town of considerable Trade, exporting much Linen, Grain, Herrings, Peltry, &c. to sundry foreign Parts: It may contain about 10,000 Inhabitants. *New-Aberdeen*, at the Mouth of the River *Dee*, is a large well-built City, and has a good dry or Tide-Harbour: a considerable Degree of foreign Commerce, and much Shipping; and above 12,000 Inhabitants. *Old-Meldrum* has good Woollen Manufactures, and a very great Trade in Wool and Linen. — From the Isle of *Skye* is carried on a very great *Herring-Fishing*, and also from some neighbouring Isles.

I R E L A N D.

The Kingdom of *Ireland* is a fine and fertile Island, abounding in all the Necessaries and Conveniencies that a reasonable Man can wish for, Wine only excepted. In it are to be found sundry large and opulent Cities, a great Number of handiome and well-traded Towns, and many valuable Materials for Commerce. — *Dublin*, its superb Capital, and the famous Metropolis of the whole Kingdom. Of this City it has been very frequently and confidently asserted, that, since the Year 1711, or, as others, three Years later, or since the Accession to the Crown of the illustrious House of *Hanover*, it has so rapidly increased, as, in so short a Space, to have added to her Suburbs no fewer than 4000 Houses, and 30,000 Inhabitants. It stands in so good a Country as enables it to export many Materials for Commerce, and particularly great Quantities of Salt Provisions, Hides, Tallow, Butter, and Cheese, but principally of late Years an almost incredible Quantity of Linen of various Sorts, to the great enriching of *Ireland*. *Dublin*, therefore, with all such Advantages, cannot fail to have a great Commerce, and a numerous Shipping; and may probably contain about 100,000 Inhabitants; much about the Size of *Stockholm*, *Copenhagen*, *Berlin*, *Marseilles*, and our own *Bristol*. — *Donnegal* is a Place of some Trade;

as is likewise *Enniskilling*. All which Places, and many more, (tho' less considerable ones) are chiefly, and most industriously, employed in the Manufactures of Linen and Linen Thread, to the great Benefit of the whole Kingdom, which, by its vast annual Exportations of Linen into *England*, is enabled to pay for the great annual Importations from *England* into *Ireland*.

Cork, by far the noblest City next to *Dublin*; whether considered in respect to Magnitude, Riches, Commerce or Shipping; every one of which are truly great. More especially its Commerce to our *American* Plantations is exceeding great, for Salt Provisions of all Kinds, but Fish. — *Limerick* is a handsome, populous, well-traded and strong City, on both Sides the *Shannon*, a Place, of good Commerce and Shipping. *King'sale* is a populous and strong Town, with an excellent Harbour and considerable Commerce and Shipping: And it is moreover, occasionally a Station for the Navy-Royal; for which End there reside at this Port proper naval Officers, Storehouses, &c.

DIALOGUES

OF THE

D E A D.

DIALOGUE I. *)

LOUIS LE GRAND — PETER THE GREAT.

LOUIS.

Who, Sir, could have thought, when you were learning the Trade of a shipwright in the Dock-yards of England and Holland, that you would ever acquire, as I had done, the surname of *Great*.

PETER.

Which of us best deserved that Title, Posterity will decide. But my Greatness appeared sufficiently in that very Act which seemed to you a Debasement.

LOUIS.

*) Littleton's Dialogues of the Dead. London 1765. 3.

LOUIS.

The Dignity of a King does not stoop to such mean Employments. For my own part, I was careful never to appear to the Eyes of my Subjects or Foreigners, but in all the Splendor and Majesty of Royal Power.

PETER.

Had I remained on the Throne of Russia, as my Ancestors did, environed with all the pomp of barbarous Greatness, I should have been idolized by my People, as much, at least, as you ever were by the French. My Despotism was more absolute, their servitude was more humble. But then I could not have reformed their evil Customs; have taught them Arts, Civility, Navigation, and War; have exalted them from Brutes in human shapes into Men! In this was seen the extraordinary Force of my Genius beyond any Comparison with all other Kings, that I thought it no Degradation, or Diminution of my Greatness, to descend from my Throne, and go and work in the Dock-yards of a foreign Republic; to serve as a private sailor in my own Fleets, and as a common soldier in my own Army; till I had raised myself by my Merit in all the several steps and degrees of Promotion, up to the highest Command, and had thus induced my nobility to submit to a regular subordination in the Sea- and Land-service, by a lesson hard to their pride, and which they would not have learnt from any other Master, or by any other method of instruction.

LOUIS.

I am forced to acknowledge, that it was a great Act. When I thought it a mean one; my judgement was perverted by the Prejudices arising from my own education, and the Ridicule thrown upon it by some of my Courtiers, whose minds were too narrow to be able to comprehend the Greatness of your's in that situation.

PETER.

It was an Act of more Heroism than any ever done by Alexander or Cæsar. Nor would I consent to exchange my Glory with their's. They both did great Things; but they were at the head of great Nations, far superior in valour and military skill to those with whom they contended. I was the King of an ignorant, undisciplined, barbarous People. My Enemies were at first so superior to my Subjects, that ten thousand of them could beat a hundred thousand Russians.

C

They

They had formidable navies: I had not a ship. The King of Sweden was a Prince of the most intrepid Courage, assisted by Generals of consummate Knowledge in War, and served by soldiers so disciplined, that they were become the Admiration and Terror of Europe. Yet I vanquished these soldiers; I drove that Prince to take refuge in Turkey; I won battles at Sea, as well as Land; I *new-created* my People; I gave them Arts, Science, Policy; I enabled them to keep all the Powers of the North in Awe and Dependence, to give Kings to Poland, to check and intimidate the Ottoman Emperors, to mix with great Weight in the Affairs of all Europe. What other Man has ever done such Wonders as these? Read all the Records of ancient and modern times, and find, if you can, one fit to be put in comparison with me!

LOUIS.

Your Glory would indeed have been supreme and unequalled, if, in civilizing your subjects, you had reformed the Brutality of your own Manners, and the barbarous Vices of your Nature. But, alas! the Legislator and Reformer of the Muscovites was drunken and cruel.

PETER.

My Drunkenness I confess: nor will I plead, to excuse it, the Example of Alexander. It inflamed the tempers of both, which were by nature too fiery, into furious passions of Anger, and produced Actions, of which our Reason, when sober, was ashamed. But the Cruelty you upbraid me with, may in some degree be excused, as necessary to the work I had to perform. Fear of Punishment was in the hearts of my barbarous Subjects the only Principle of Obedience. To make them respect the Royal Authority, I was obliged to arm it with all the Terrors of Rage. You had a more pliant People to govern, a People whose minds could be ruled, like a fine managed Horse, with an easy and gentle Rein. The fear of Shame did more with them, than the fear of the *Knout* could do with the Russians. The Humanity of your Character and the Ferocity of mine were equally suitable to the Nations over which we reigned. But what excuse can you find for the cruel violence you employed against your Protestant Subjects? They desired nothing but to live under the protection of Laws you yourself had confirmed; and they repaid that Protection by the most hearty Zeal for your service. Yet these did you force, by the most inhuman severities, either to quit
the

the Religion in which they were bred, and which their consciences still retained, or to leave their native Land, and endure all the Woes of a perpetual Exile. If the rules of Policy could not hinder you from thus depopulating your kingdom, and transferring to foreign countries it's manufactures and commerce, I am surpris'd that your heart itself did not stop you. It makes one shudder to think, that such orders should be sent from the most polished Court in Europe, as the most savage Tartars could hardly have executed without Remorse and Compassion.

LOUIS.

It was not my heart, but my Religion, that dictated these severities. My Confessor told me, they alone would atone for all my sins.

PETER.

Had I believed in my Patriarch, as you believed in your Priest, I should not have been the great Monarch that I was. — But I mean not to detract from the Merit of a Prince whose memory is dear to his Subjects. They are proud of having obeyed you, which is certainly the highest praise to a King. My people also date their glory from the Æra of my Reign. But there is this capital Distinction between us. The Pomp and Pageantry of state were necessary to your Greatness: I was great in myself, great in the Energy and Powers of my Mind, great in the superiority and *sovereignty* of my Soul over all other Men.

DIALOGUE II.

MERCURY — An English DUELLIST —
A North-American SAVAGE.

The DUELLIST.

Mercury, Charon's Boat is on the other side of the Water. Allow me, before it returns, to have some conversation with the North-American Savage, whom you brought hither with me. I never before saw one of that *Species*. He looks very grim. — Pray, Sir, what is your Name? I understand you speak English.

SAVAGE.

Yes, I learnt it in my Childhood, having been bred for some years among the English of New York. But, before I was a Man, I returned to my valiant Countrymen, the Mo-

hawks; and having been villainously cheated by one of yours in the sale of some Rum, I never cared to have any thing to do with them afterwards. Yet I took up the Hatchet for them with the rest of my Tribe in the late War against France, and was killed while I was out upon a Scalping Party. But I died very well satisfied: for my Brethren were victorious; and, before I was shot, I had gloriously scalped seven Men, and five Women and Children. In a former War I had performed still greater Exploits. My Name is *the bloody Bear*; it was given me to express my Fierceness and Valour.

DUELLIST.

Bloody Bear, I respect you, and am much your humble Servant. My Name is Tom Pushwell, very well known at Arthur's. I am a Gentleman by my Birth, and by Profession a Gamester and Man of Honour. I have killed Men in fair Fighting, in honourable single combat, but don't understand cutting the Throats of Women and Children.

SAVAGE.

Sir, that is our way of making War. Every Nation has its Customs. But, by the Grimness of your Countenance, and that Hole in your Breast, I presume you were killed, as I was, in some scalping Party. How happened it that your Enemy did not take off your Scalp?

DUELLIST.

Sir, I was killed in a Duel. A Friend of mine had lent me a sum of Money. After two or three years, being in great Want himself, he asked me to pay him. I thought his Demand, which was somewhat peremptory, an Affront to my Honour, and sent him a Challenge. We met in Hide-Park. The Fellow could not fence: I was absolutely the adroitest Swordsman in England. So I gave him three or four Wounds; but at last he run upon me with such Impetuosity, that he put me out of my Play, and I could not prevent him from whipping me through the Lungs. I died the next day, as a Man of Honour should, without any sniveling Signs of Contrition or Repentance: and he will follow me soon; for his Surgeon has declared his Wounds to be mortal. It is said, that his Wife is dead of Grief, and that his Family of seven Children will be undone by his Death. So I am well revenged, and that is a Comfort. For my Part, I had no Wife. — I always hated Marriage: my Mistress will take good care of herself, and my Children are provided for at the Foundling-Hospital.

SAVAGE.

SAVAGE.

Mercury, I won't go in a Boat with that Fellow. He has murdered his Countryman: he has murdered his Friend: I say positively, I won't go in a Boat with that Fellow. I will swim over the River: I can swim like a Duck.

MERCURY.

Swim over the Styx! it must not be done: it is against the Laws of Pluto's Empire. You must go in the Boat, and be quiet.

SAVAGE.

Don't tell me of Laws: I am a Savage: I value no Laws. Talk of Laws to the Englishman: there are Laws in his Country, and yet you see he did not regard them. For they could never allow him to kill his Fellow-subject, in time of Peace, because he asked him to pay a Debt. I know indeed, that the English are a *barbarous Nation*; but they can't possibly be so brutal as to make such things lawful.

MERCURY.

You reason well against Him. But how comes it that you are so offended with Murder; you, who have frequently massacred Women in their Sleep, and Children in the Cradle?

SAVAGE.

I killed none but my Enemies: I never killed my own Countrymen: I never killed my Friend: — Here, take my Blanket, and let it come over in the Boat; but see that the Murderer does not sit upon it, or touch it. If he does, I will burn it instantly in the Fire I see yonder. Farewell. — I am determined to swim over the Water.

MERCURY.

By this touch of my Wand I deprive thee of all thy Strength. — Swim now if thou canst.

SAVAGE.

This is a potent Enchanter. — Restore me my Strength, and I promise to obey thee.

MERCURY.

I restore it; but be orderly, and do as I bid you: Otherwise worse will befall you.

DUELLIST.

Mercury, leave him to me. I'll tutor him for you. Sirrah Savage, dost thou pretend to be ashamed of my company?

Dost thou know that I have kept the best company in England?

SAVAGE.

I know thou art a Scoundrel. — Not pay thy Debts! kill thy Friend who lent thee Money for asking the for it! Get out of my sight. I will drive thee into Styx.

MERCURY.

Stop. — I command thee. No Violence. — Talk to him calmly.

SAVAGE.

I must obey thee. — Well, Sir, let me know what Merit you had, to introduce you into good company? What could you do?

DUELLIST.

Sir, I gamed, as I told you. — Besides, I kept a good table. — I *eat* as well as any Man either in England or France.

SAVAGE.

Eat! dit you ever eat the liver of a Frenchman, or his Leg, or his Shoulder! There is *fine Eating!* I have eat twenty. — My table was always *well served*. My Wife was esteemed the best Cook for the dressing of Man's Flesh in all North-America. You will not pretend to compare your *Eating* with mine?

DUELLIST.

I danced very finely.

SAVAGE.

I'll dance with thee for thy Ears. — I can dance all day long. I can dance the *War-Dance* with more Spirit than any Man of my Nation. Let us see thee begin it. How thou standest like a Post! Has Mercury struck thee with his enfeebling Rod? Or art thou ashamed to let us see how awkward thou art? If he would permit me, I would teach thee to dance in a way that thou hast never yet learnt. But what else canst thou do, thou bragging *Rascal*?

DUELLIST.

O Heavens! must I bear this! What can I do with this Fellow? I have neither Sword, nor Pistol. And his shade seems to be twice as strong as mine.

MERCURY.

You must answer his Questions. It was your own Desire to have a conversation with him. He is not well bred; but he

he will tell you some truths which you must necessarily hear, when you come before Rhadamanthus. He asked you what you could do besides Eating and Dancing.

DUELLIST.

I sung very agreeably.

SAVAGE.

Let me hear you sing your *Death Song*, or the *War Whoop*. I challenge you to sing. — Come, begin. — The Fellow is mute. — Mercury, this is a *Liar*. — He has told us nothing but *Lies*. Let me pull out his tongue.

DUELLIST.

The Lie given me! — and alas! I dare not resent it. What an indelible Disgrace to the family of the Pushwells! This indeed is *Damnation*.

MERCURY.

Here, Charon, take these two Savages to your Care. How far the Barbarism of the Mohawk will excuse his horrid Acts, I leave Minos to judge. But what can be said for the other, for the Englishman? The Custom of Duelling? A bad Excuse at the best! but here it cannot avail. The Spirit that urged him to draw his Sword against his Friend is not that of *Honour*; it is the Spirit of the Furies, and to them he must go.

SAVAGE.

If he is to be punished for his wickedness turn him over to me. I perfectly understand the Art of tormenting. Sirrah, I begin my Work with this *kick on your Breech*.

DUELLIST.

Oh my Honour, my Honour, to what Infamy art thou fallen!

DIALOGUE III.

ALEXANDER THE GREAT.

CHARLES the Twelfth, King of Sweden.

ALEXANDER.

Your Majesty seems in great Wrath! Who has offended you?

CHARLES.

The Offence is to you as much as me. Here is a Fellow admitted into Elysium, who has affronted us both: an English Poet, one Pope. He has called us *two Madmen*!

ALEXANDER.

I have been unlucky in Poets. No Prince ever was fonder of the Muses than I, or has received from them a more ungrateful Return! When I was alive, I declared that I envied Achilles, because he had a Homer to celebrate his Exploits; and I most bountifully rewarded Chærilus, a Pretender to Poetry, for writing Verses on mine: but my Liberality, instead of doing me Honour, has since drawn upon me the Ridicule of Horace, a witty Roman Poet, and Lucan, another Versifier of the same nation, has loaded my Memory with the harshest Invectives.

CHARLES.

I know nothing of these; but I know that in my time, a pert French Satirist, one Boileau, made so free with your character, that I tore his book for having abused my favourite Hero. And now this saucy Englishman has libelled us both. — But I have a Proposal to make to you for the Reparation of our Honour. If you will join with me, we will turn all these insolent Scriblers out of Elysium, and throw them down headlong to the bottom of Tartarus, in spite of Pluto and all his Guards.

ALEXANDER.

This is just such a Scheme as that you formed at Bender, to maintain yourself there, with the aid of three hundred Swedes, against the whole Force of the Ottoman Empire. And I must say, that such Follies gave the English Poet too much cause to call you a Madman.

CHARLES.

If my Heroism was Madness, your's, I presume, was not Wisdom.

ALEXANDER.

There was a vast difference between your Conduct and mine. Let Poets or Declaimers say what they will, History shews, that I was not only the bravest Soldier, but one of the ablest Commanders the World has ever seen. Whereas you, by imprudently leading your Army into vast and barren Deserts, at the approach of the Winter, exposed it to perish in it's march for want of Subsistence, lost your Artillery, lost a great number of your Soldiers, and were forced to fight with the Muscovites under such disadvantages, as made it almost impossible for you to conquer.

CHAR-

CHARLES.

I will not dispute your Superiority as a General. It is not for me, a mere Mortal, to contend with *the Son of Jupiter Ammon*.

ALEXANDER.

I suppose you think my pretending that *Jupiter* was my Father, as much entitles me to the name of a Madman, as your extravagant behaviour at Bender does you. But you are greatly mistaken. It was not my Vanity, but my Policy, which set up that Pretension. When I proposed to undertake the conquest of Asia, it was necessary for me to appear to the People something more than a Man. They had been used to the Idea of *Demi-god Heroes*. I therefore claimed an equal Descent with Osiris and Sesostris, with Bacchus and Hercules, the former Conquerors of the East. The Opinion of my Divinity assisted my Arms, and subdued all Nations before me, from the Granicus to the Ganges. But, though I called myself *the Son of Jupiter*, and kept up the Veneration that name inspired, by a Courage which seemed more than human, and by the sublime Magnanimity of all my Behaviour, I did not forget that I was *the Son of Philip*. I used the Policy of my Father, and the wise Lessons of Aristotle, whom he had made my Preceptor, in the conduct of all my great Designs. It was *the Son of Philip* who planted Greek Colonies in Asia, as far as the Indies; who formed Projects of Trade more extensive than his Empire itself; who laid the foundations of them in the midst of his Wars; who built Alexandria, to be the Centre and Staple of Commerce between Europe, Asia, and Africk; who sent Nearchus to navigate the unknown Indian Seas, and intended to have gone himself from those Seas to the Pillars of Hercules, that is, to have explored the Passage round Africk, the Discovery of which has since been so glorious to Vasco de Gama. It was *the Son of Philip*, who, after subduing the Persians, governed them with such Lenity, such Justice and such Wisdom, that they loved him even more than ever they had loved their natural Kings; and who, by Intermarriages, and all Methods that could best establish a Coalition between the Conquerors and the Conquered, united them into one People. But what, Sir, did you do, to advance the Trade of your Subjects, to procure any Benefit to those you had vanquished, or to convert any Enemy into a Friend?

CHARLES.

When I might easily have made myself King of Poland, and was advised to do so, by Count Piper, my favourite Minister, I generously gave that Kingdom to Stanislas, as you had given a great part of your Conquests in India to Porus, besides his own Dominions, which you restored to him entire, after you had beaten his Army and taken him Captive.

ALEXANDER.

I gave him the Government of those Countries under me, and as my Lieutenant; which was the best method of preserving my Power in Conquests, where I could not leave Garrisons sufficient to maintain them. The same Policy was afterwards practised by the Romans, who of all Conquerors, except me, were the greatest Politicians. But neither was I, nor were they so extravagant, as to conquer only for Others, or dethrone Kings with no view, but merely to have the pleasure of bestowing their Crowns on some of their subjects, without any advantage to Ourselves. Nevertheless, I will own, that my Expedition to India was an Exploit of *the Son of Jupiter*, not of *the Son of Philip*. I had done better if I had staid to give more Consistency to my Persian and Grecian Empires, instead of attempting new Conquests, and at such a distance, so soon. Yet even this War was of Use to hinder my Troops from being corrupted by the Effeminacy of Asia, and to keep up that universal Awe of my Name, which in those Countries was the great Support of my Power.

CHARLES.

In the unwearied Activity with which I proceeded from one Entreprize to another, I dare call myself your equal. Nay, I may pretend to a higher Glory than you, because you only went on from Victory to Victory; but the greatest Losses were not able to diminish my Ardour, or stop the Efforts of my daring invincible Spirit.

ALEXANDER.

You shewed in Adversity much more Magnanimity than you did in Prosperity. How unworthy of a Prince who imitated me was your behaviour to the King your Arms had vanquished! The compelling Augustus to write himself a Letter of Congratulation to one of his Vassals, whom you had placed in his Throne, was the very Reverse of my treatment of Porus and Darius. It was an ungenerous insult upon his ill fortune! It was the Triumph of a little and a low Mind!

The

The Visit you made him immediately after that Insult, was a farther contempt, offensive to him, and both useless and dangerous to yourself.

CHARLES.

I feared no Danger from it. — I knew he durst not use the Power I gave him to hurt me.

ALEXANDER.

If his Resentment, in that instant, had prevailed over his Fear, as it was likely to do, you would have perished deservedly by your Insolence and Presumption. For my part, intrepid as I was in all Dangers, which I thought it was necessary or proper for me to meet, I never put myself one moment in the Power of an Enemy whom I had offended. But you had the Rashness of *Folly* as well as of *Heroism*. A false Opinion conceived of your Enemy's Weakness proved at last your Undoing. When, in answer to some reasonable Propositions of Peace, sent to you by the Czar, you said, "*You would come and treat with him at Moscow*;" he replied very justly, "*That you affected to act like Alexander, but should not find in Him a Darius*." And, doubtless, you ought to have been better acquainted with the Character of that Prince. Had Persia been governed by a *Peter Alexiowitz* when I made war against it, I should have acted more cautiously, and not have counted so much on the superiority of my Troops, in Valour and Discipline, over an Army commanded by a King, who was so capable of instructing them in all they wanted.

CHARLES.

The Battle of Narva, won by eight thousand Swedes against fourscore thousand Muscovites, seemed to authorize my Contempt of the Nation and their Prince.

ALEXANDER.

It happened that their Prince was not present in that Battle. But he had not as yet had the time, which was necessary to instruct his barbarous Soldiers. You gave him that time, and he made so good a use of it, that you found at Pultawa the Muscovites become a different Nation. If you had followed the Blow you gave them at Narva, and marched directly to Moscow, you might have destroyed their Hercules in his Cradle. But you suffered him to grow, till his strength was nature, and then acted as if he had been still in his Childhood.

CHAR-

CHARLES.

I must confess you excelled me in Conduct, in Policy, and in true Magnanimity. But my Liberality was not inferior to your's; and neither you nor any Mortal ever surpassed me in the Enthusiasm of Courage. I was also free from those Vices which sullied your Character. I never was drunk; I killed no Friend in the Riot of a Feast; I fired no Palace at the Instigation of a Harlot.

ALEXANDER.

It may perhaps be admitted as some Excuse for my Drunkenness, that the Persians esteemed it an Excellence in their Kings to be able to drink a great quantity of Wine, and the Macedonians were far from thinking it a Dishonour. But you were as frantic, and as cruel, when sober, as I was, when drunk. You were sober when you resolved to continue in Turkey against the Will of your Host, the *Grand Signor*. You were sober when you commanded the unfortunate Patkull, whose only crime was his having maintained the Liberties of his Country, and who bore the sacred Character of an Ambassador, to be broken alive on the Wheel, against the Laws of Nations, and those of Humanity, more inviolable still to a generous Mind. You were likewise sober when you wrote to the Senate of Sweden, who, upon a Report of your Death, endeavoured to take some care of your Kingdom, *That, you would send them one of your Boots, and from That they should receive their Orders, if they pretended to meddle in Government*. An insult much worse than any the Macedonians complained of from me, when I was most heated with Wine and with Adulation! As for my Chastity, it was not so perfect as your's, though on some Occasions I obtained great Praise for my Continence: but, perhaps, if you had been not quite so insensible to the Charms of the fair Sex, it would have mitigated and softened the Fierceness, the Pride, and the Obstinacy of your Nature.

CHARLES.

It would have softened me into a Woman, or, what I think still more contemptible, the Slave of a Woman. But you seem to insinuate that you never were cruel or frantic unless when you were not drunk; This I absolutely deny. — You were not drunk, when you crucified Hephæstion's Physician, for not curing a Man who killed himself by his Intemperance in his Sicknes; nor when you sacrificed to the
Ma-

Manes of that favourite Officer the whole Nation of the Cusseans, Men, Women, and Children, who were entirely innocent of his Death; because you had read in Homer, that Achilles had immolated some Trojan Captives on the Tomb of Patroclus. I could mention other Proofs that your Passions inflamed you as much as Wine; but these are sufficient.

ALEXANDER.

I can't deny that my Passions were sometimes so violent as to deprive me for a while the Use of my Reason; especially when the Pride of such amazing Successes, the Servitude of the Persians, and Barbarian Flattery, had intoxicated my Mind. To bear, at my Age, with continual Moderation, such Fortune as mine, was hardly in human Nature. As for you, there was an Excess and Intemperance in your Virtues, which turned them all into Vices. And one Virtue you wanted, which in a Prince is very commendable, and beneficial to the Public, I mean the Love of Science and to the elegant Arts. Under my Care and Patronage they were carried in Greece to their utmost Perfection. Aristotle, Apelles, and Lysippus were among the Glories of my Reign. Your's was illustrated only by Battles. — Upon the whole, though, from some Resemblance between us, I should naturally be inclined to decide in your favour, yet I must give the Priority in Renown to your Enemy, Peter Alexiowitz. That great Monarch *raised* his Country; You *ruined* your's. He was a *Legislator*, you were a *Tyrant*.

DIALOGUE IV.

HERNANDO CORTEZ — WILLIAM PENN.

CORTEZ.

Is it possible, William Penn, that you should seriously compare your Glory with mine! The Planter of a small Colony in North-America presume to vie with the Conqueror of the great Mexican Empire!

PENN.

Friend, I pretend to no Glory, — the LORD preserve me from it. — All Glory is *his*; but this I say, that I was *his Instrument* in a more glorious Work than that performed by thee: incomparably more glorious.

COR.

CORTEZ.

Dost thou not know, William Penn, that with less than six hundred Spanish Foot, eighteen Horse, and a few small pieces of Cannon, I fought and defeated innumerable Armies of very brave Men, dethroned an Emperor who had been raised to the Throne by his Valour, and excelled all his Countrymen in the Science of War, as much as they excelled all the rest of the West Indian Nations? that I made him my Prisoner in his own Capital; and, after he had been deposed and slain by his Subjects, vanquished and took Guatimozin, his successor, and accomplished my Conquest of the whole Empire of Mexico, which I loyally annexed to the Spanish Crown? Dost thou not know, that, in doing these wonderful Acts, I shewed as much Courage as Alexander the Great, as much Prudence as Cæsar? That, by my Policy, I ranged under my Banners the powerful Commonwealth of Tlascála, and brought them to assist me in subduing the Mexicans, though with the loss of their own beloved Independence? and that, to consummate my Glory, when the Governor of Cuba, Velasquez, would have taken my Command from me, and sacrificed me to his Envy and Jealousy, I drew from him all his forces and joined them to my own, shewing myself as superior to all other Spaniards as I was to the Indians?

PENN.

I know very well that thou was as fierce as a Lion, and as subtle as a Serpent. The Devil, perhaps, may place thee as high *in his black list of Heroes* as Alexander or Cæsar. It is not my Business to interfere with him in settling thy Rank. But hark thee, Friend Cortez — What Right hadst thou, or had the King of Spain himself, to the Mexican Empire? Answer me that, if thou canst.

CORTEZ.

The Pope gave it to my Master.

PENN.

The Devil offered to give our LORD all the Kingdoms of the Earth, and I suppose the Pope, as *his Vicar*, gave thy Master this; in return for which he *fell down and worshipped him*, like an Idolater as he was. But suppose the High Priest of Mexico had taken it into his head to give Spain to Moteczuma, would his Grant have been good?

CORTEZ.

These are Questions of Casuistry, which it is not the business of a Soldier to decide. We leave that to Gownsmen.

But

But pray, Mr. Penn, what Right had you to the Province you settled?

PENN.

An honest Right of fair Purchase. We gave the native Savages some things they wanted, and they in return gave us Lands they did not want. All was amicably agreed on, not a drop of blood shed to stain our Acquisition.

CORTEZ.

I am afraid there was as little *Fraud* in the Purchase. Thy Followers, William Penn, are said to think cheating in a quiet and sober way no mortal sin.

PENN.

The Saints are always calumniated by the Ungodly. But it was a Sight which an Angel might contemplate with delight, to behold the Colony I settled! To see us living with the Indians like innocent Lambs, and taming the Ferocity of their barbarous Manners by the Gentleness of ours! To see the whole Country, which before was an uncultivated Wilderness, rendered as fertile and fair as the Garden of God! O Hernando Cortez, Hernando Cortez! didst thou leave the great Empire of Mexico in that State? No, thou hadst turned those delightful and populous Regions into a Desert, a Desert flooded with Blood. Dost thou not remember that most infernal Scene, when the noble Emperor Guatimozin was stretched out by thy Soldiers upon hot burning Coals, to make him discover into what part of the Lake of Mexico he had thrown the Royal Treasures? Are not his Groans ever sounding in the ears of thy Conscience? Do not they rend thy hard Heart, and strike thee with more Horror than the Yells of the Furies?

CORTEZ.

Alas! I was not present when that dire Act was done. Had I been there I would have forbidden it. My nature was mild.

PENN.

Thou wast the Captain of that Band of Robbers, who did this horrid Deed. The advantage they had drawn from thy Counsels and Conduct enabled them to commit it: and thy Skill saved them afterwards from the Vengeance that was due to so enormous a Crime. The enraged Mexicans would have properly punished them for it, if they had not had thee for their General, thou *Lieutenant of Satan*.

COR.

C O R T E Z.

The *Saints* I find can *raile*, William Penn. But how do you hope to preserve this *admirable* Colony which you have fettled? Your people, you tell me, live *like innocent Lambs*. Are there no *Wolves* in North America to devour those *Lambs*? But if the Americans should continue in perpetual peace with all your Successors there, the French will not. Are the Inhabitants of Pennsylvania to make war against *them* with Prayers and Preaching? If so that Garden of God which you say you have planted, will undoubtedly be their Prey, and they will take from you your Property, your Laws, and your Religion.

P E N N.

The LORD's will be done. The LORD will defend us, against the rage of our Enemies if it be his good Pleasure.

C O R T E Z.

Is this the Wisdom of a great Legislator? I have heard some of your Countrymen compare you to Solon! Did Solon, think you, give Laws to a People, and leave those Laws and that People at the Mercy of every Invader? The first Business of Legislature is to provide a military Strength that may defend the whole System. If a House is built in a land of Robbers, without a Gate to shut, or a Bolt or Bar to secure it, what avails it how well-proportioned, or how commodious the Architecture of it may be? It is richly furnished within? the more it will tempt the hands of Violence and of Rapine to seize its Wealth. The World, William Penn, is all a Land of Robbers. Any State or Commonwealth erected therein must be well fenced and secured by good military Institutions; or, the happier it is in all other respects, the greater will be its Danger, the more speedy its Destruction. Perhaps the neighbouring English Colonies may for a while protect your's: but that precarious Security cannot always preserve you. Your Plan of Government must be changed, or your Colony will be lost. What I have said is also applicable to Great Britain itself. If an Encrease of it's Wealth be not accompanied with an Encrease of it's Force, that Wealth will become the Prey of some of the neighbouring Nations, in which the Martial Spirit is more prevalent than the Commercial. And whatever praise may be due to it's civil Institutions, if they are not guarded by a wise System of military Policy, they will be found of no value, being unable to prevent their own dissolution.

P E N N.

PENN.

These are Suggestions of Human Wisdom. The Doctrines I held, were *inspired*; they came *from above*.

CORTEZ.

It is blasphemy to say, *that any Folly could come from the Fountain of Wisdom*. Whatever is inconsistent with the great Laws of Nature, and with the necessary State of Human Society, cannot possibly have been inspired by God. Self-defence is as necessary to Nations as to Men. And shall Particulars have a Right which Nations have not? True Religion, William Penn, is the Perfection of Reason. Fanaticism is the Disgrace, the Destruction of Reason.

PENN.

Though what thou sayest should be true, it does not come well from thy mouth. Go to the Inquisition, and tell *them* of Reason, and *the great Laws of Nature*. They will broil thee, as thy Soldiers broiled the unhappy Guatimozin. Why dost thou turn pale? Is it the name of the Inquisition, or the name of Guatimozin, that troubles and affrights thee? O wretched Man! who madest thyself a voluntary Instrument to carry into a new discovered World that hellish Tribunal. Tremble and shake when thou thinkest, that every Murder the Inquisitors have committed, every Torture they have inflicted on the innocent Indians, is originally owing to thee. Thou must answer to God for all their Inhumanity, for all their Injustice. What wouldst thou give to part with the Renown of thy Conquests, and to have a conscience as pure and undisturbed as mine?

CORTEZ.

I feel the force of thy Words. They pierce me like Daggers. I can never, never be happy, while I retain any memory of the Ills I have caused. — Yet I thought I did right. I thought I laboured to advance the Glory of God, and propagate in the remotest Parts of the Earth his holy Religion. He will be merciful to well designing and pious Error. Thou also wilt have need of that gracious Indulgence; though not, I own, so much as I.

PENN.

Ask thy Heart, whether Ambition was not thy real Motive, and Zeal the Pretence?

D

COR-

C O R T E Z.

Ask thine, whether thy Zeal had no worldly Views, and whether thou didst believe all the Nonsense of the Sect, at the head of which thou wast pleased to become a Legislator. Adieu. — Self-Examination requires Retirement.

DIALOGUE V.

MERCURY — and a modern fine LADY.

MRS. MODISH.

I indeed, Mr. Mercury, I cannot have the pleasure of waiting upon you now. I am engaged, absolutely engaged.

MERCURY.

I know you have an amiable affectionate husband, and several fine children; but you need not be told, that neither conjugal attachments, maternal affections, nor even the care of a Kingdom's welfare or a Nation's glory, can excuse a person who has received a summons to the realms of Death. If the grim messenger was not as peremptory as unwelcome, Charon would not get a passenger, (except now and then an hypochondriacal Englishman) once in a century. You must be content to leave your husband and family, and pass the Styx.

MRS. MODISH.

I did not mean to insist on any engagement with my husband and children; I never thought myself engaged to them. I had no engagements but such as were common to women of my rank. Look on my Chimney-piece, and you will see I was engaged to the Play on Mondays, Balls on Tuesdays, the Opera on Saturdays, and to Card-assemblies the rest of the week, for two months to come; and it would be the rudest thing in the world not to keep my appointments. If you will stay for me till the Summer-season, I will wait on you with all my heart. Perhaps the Elysian Fields may be less detestable than the country in our world. Pray have you a fine Vauxhall and Ranelagh? I think I should not dislike drinking the Lethe Waters when you have a full Season.

MERCURY.

Surely you could not like to drink the waters of Oblivion, who have made Pleasure the business, end, and aim of your Life!

Life! It is good to drown cares, but who would wash away the remembrance of a Life of Gaiety and Pleasure.

Mrs. MODISH.

Diversion was indeed the business of my Life, but as to Pleasure I have enjoyed none since the novelty of my amusements was gone off. Can one be pleased with seeing the same thing over and over again? Late hours and fatigue gave me the Vapours, spoiled the natural chearfulness of my Temper, and even in youth wore away my youthful vivacity.

MERCURY.

If this way of Life did not give you Pleasure, why did you continue in it? I suppose you did not think it was very meritorious?

Mrs. MODISH.

I was too much engaged to think at all: so far indeed my manner of Life was agreeable enough. My friends always told me diversions were necessary, and my Doctor assured me dissipation was good for my Spirits; my husband insisted that it was not, and you know that one loves to oblige one's friends, comply with one's Doctor, and contradict one's husband; and besides I was ambitious to be thought *du Bon ton*.*)

MERCURY.

Bon ton! what is that, Madam? Pray define it.

Mrs. MODISH.

Oh Sir, excuse me, it is one of the Privileges of the *Bon ton* never to define, or be defined. It is the child and the parent of Jargon. It is — I can never tell you what it is: but I will try to tell you what it is not. In conversation it is not Wit; in manners it is not Politeness; in behaviour it is not Address; but it is a little like them all. It can only belong to people of a certain rank, who live in a certain manner, with certain Persons, who have not certain Virtues, and who have certain Vices, and who inhabit a certain Part of the Town. Like a place by courtesy, it gets an higher rank than the person can claim, but which those who have a legal title to precedence dare not dispute, for fear of being thought not to understand the rules of Politeness. Now, Sir, I have told you as much as I know of it, though I have admired and aimed at it all my life.

D 2

MER-

*) *Du bon ton* is a cant Phrase in the modern French Language for the fashionable Air of Conversation and Manners,

52 DIALOGUES OF THE DEAD.

MERCURY.

Then, Madam, you have wasted your time, faded your Beauty, and destroyed your health, for the laudable purposes of contradicting your husband, and being this something and this nothing called the *Bon ton*.

Mrs. MODISH.

What would you have had me do?

MERCURY.

I will follow your mode of instructing. I will tell you what I would not have had you do. I would not have had you sacrifice your time, your reason, and your Duties, to fashion and folly. I would not have had you neglect your husband's happiness, and your childrens education.

Mrs. MODISH.

As to the Education of my Daughters, I spared no expence; They had a dancing-master, music-master, and drawing-master; and a French governess to teach them behaviour and the French Language.

MERCURY.

So their religion, sentiments and manners were to be learnt from a dancing-master, music-master, and a chamber-maid! Perhaps they might prepare them to catch the *Bon ton*. Your daughters must have been so educated as to fit them to be wives without conjugal affection, and mothers without maternal care. I am sorry for the sort of life they are commencing, and for that which you have just concluded. Minos is a four old Gentleman, without the least smattering of the *Bon ton*, and I am in a fright for you. The best thing I can advise you is to do in this world as you did in the other, keep happiness in your view, but never take the road that leads to it. Remain on this side the Styx; wander about without end or aim; look into the Elysian Fields, but never attempt to enter into them; lest Minos should push you into Tartarus: for Duties neglected may bring on a Sentence not much less severe than Crimes committed.

ACCOUNT

ACCOUNT OF THE PRESENT KING OF SPAIN. *)

This day I have seen the King; and I must say that a prominent nose, a piercing eye, and a serene countenance, make him look much better than his coin represents him. I have seen several portraits of him, even one by his favourite *Mengs*: but neither *Mengs*, nor any other painter, had given me a true idea of his face, which is pleasing, though made up of irregular features.

As to his person, it is of a good size, and his walk quite *Bourbonian*; that is, erect and steady. He appears to be robust, and I am told that he has a great deal of bodily strength. His complexion is quite sun-burnt, which is undoubtedly the consequence of his passion for the chase. In this respect he is a true Meleager. No degree of heat or cold can keep him from this exercise. You may possibly think it worth the while to read an account of the life he leads; and here it is, as I had it from people who have been daily witnesses of it for many years.

Every day in the year he gets up about six, and exactly at seven comes out of his bed-room in his night-gown. He finds waiting in the anti-chamber a *Gentilhombre de Camera*, a *Mayordomo de Semana*, a physician, a surgeon, and several other regular attendants, with whom he interchanges words while dressing. The *Gentilhombre*, kneeling on one knee, presents a dish of chocolate, which the King drinks almost cold. He then dismisses some of them with a nod, enters his private chapel, and hears a mass: then retires to a closet, to which no body is ever admitted, and there reads or writes, especially on those days that he does not intend to go a hunting in the morning.

About eleven he comes out of the closet to meet the whole royal family. They all kiss his hand, or offer to do it, lowering a knee. He embraces them all, kissing the Princes at the cheek, and the Princesses on the forehead.

The royal family withdraw after a little chit-chat, and he gives a momentary audience to his confessor: then speaks to those ministers of state, who have any business to communi-

D 3

cate,

*) Baret's Journey from London to Genoa, through England, Portugal, Spain and France. London 1770. 8.

cate, or paper to sign. Then the Family Ambassadors come in: that is, the French and the Neapolitan. With them the King interchanges words for a quarter of an hour; seldom more. Just against the time that he is going to dine, the other Ambassadors and foreign Ministers come in. Exactly at twelve he sits down to table, quite alone now as his queen is dead. The Ambassadors and foreign Ministers, his own Ministers of State, the great officers of his army, and several other great personages, pay their court while he falls to eating, and all those whom the guards have permitted to get in, croud round the table to see him dine. The Cardinal-patriarch of the Indies says grace, not as Cardinal or Patriarch, but as his chief Chaplain.

The ceremony of the table is this. The *Mayordomo Mayor* stands on the King's right hand, and a captain of his bodyguards on his left. One of the weekly Mayordomos, two *Gentilhombres de Camera*, and a croud of pages and servants attend promiscuously. One of the two Gentilhombres carves, the other gives him drink. The dishes, all covered, are brought in one by one in an uninterrupted succession by pages and each dish is put into the hands of the carving Gentilhombre, who takes it with one hand, uncovers it with the other, and presents it to the King. The King gives a nod of approbation or disapprobation at every dish. Those that are approved, the Gentilhombre places upon the Table: the rest are carried back. Many however are the dishes approved, which still are not touched as the King eats only of the plainest, and always with a good appetite.

The Gentilhombre who gives him drink, pours first a few drops of wine and water in a silver - salver that has a beak, and drinks that himself; then kneels on one knee, and pours of both to the king, first the water, then the wine, which is always Burgundy.

When the King has drank his first glass, the Ambassadors and foreign Ministers, who stood the while and all in a row on the King's right hand, make their bows, and go to pay their respects to the rest of the royal family that are all at their dinners, each in his or her own apartment, the Prince of Asturias alone, Don Luis alone, the Infanta alone and the two younger Infantes together. All these tables are sumptuous.

Near a hundred dishes are generally served to the King, of which about forty are laid upon the table. When they are

are removed, an ample desert succeeds: but he seldom tastes of it; except sometimes a little bit of cheese and some fruit. The last thing that is presented is a glass of canary-wine with a sweet biscuit. He breaks the biscuit in two, steeps it in the wine, and eats it, but never drinks the wine.

A moment before he rises from table, which lasts near an hour, the Ambassadors, and foreign Ministers return, pass before him, and go into an adjoining room, where they wait for his coming. With them he converses about half an hour upon indifferent matters.

He then re-enters his private apartment to put on his huntingdress; that is a grey frock of coarse cloth, made at Segovia on purpose for him, and a leather waistcoat. The leather breeches he always puts on when he gets from bed, especially on those days that he intends to go a-hunting. Light boots, a hat flapp'd before, and strong leather gloves complete this dress. While the boots are putting on, the *Sommelier de Corps* (Duke of Lofada) gives him a dish of coffee. Between one and two he steps into his coach drawn by six or eight mules, and away with his brother Don Luis the mules galloping *ventre à terre*. Half a dozen of his body-guards precede the coach on horse-back, and three footmen ride behind it.

No bad weather, as I said, is ever an obstacle to his going out on hunting-days, not even a storm of hail accompanied by thunder and lightning. Don Luis, who is his constant attendant in the coach, is the only person allowed to fire at the game on these daily huntings. But on solemn huntings some of the grandees who wait on him at the chace, are granted the same privilege. However of late the solemn huntings are become rare, because the expence of them was found too great.

A little after sun-set he generally comes back, carrying as much of the feather-game in his hands as he can hold. As to the quadrupeds he has killed, such as stags, deer, wild-boars, wolves, foxes, &c. they are brought to the palace in carts. He surveys the whole, orders it to be weighed in his presence, and rejoices when there is much, most particular when he has killed a wolf or two. It is but seldom that he takes the Prince of Asturias to hunt with him.

When the game is weighed and ordered to the kitchen, he goes to pay a short visit to the Queen-Mother; then gives a private audience to that Minister, whose day it happens to

be, as each of them has his fixed day of private audience. The Minister brings his papers in a bag, and offers to his inspection those that are to the purpose of his errand. If the Minister's business leaves him any time, he plays at Reversino (a game at cards so called) with three of his courtiers, generally the Duke de Losada *Sommelier de Corps*, Duke d'Arcos *Capitan de la Compania Española*, and another grandee whose name I have forgotten. He never plays for any thing, having recourse to this expedient merely to consume a quarter of an hour, or half an hour that he must wait for his supper. At nine he sits down to it, attended only by his courtiers: then goes to bed, to get up again next day to the same round of occupations, and with the same scrupulous nicety of method in the distribution of them, seldom or never to be altered, except on post-days, when, instead of going to hunt, he passes some more time, both morning and afternoon, in the private closet, writing to his son at Naples, to his brother at Parma, to his sisters in Turin and Lisbon, and very often likewise to Marquis Tanucci and to the Prince of Santo Niccandro, the first of whom he has made chief Minister, and the second *Ayo*, or governour, to his Sicilian Majesty.

If on post-days he has any time left, it is employed in his laboratory; that is, in the completest turner's shop that ever existed. He is a most expert turner, and works toys to perfection. The shop contains many turning engines of rare invention, some of which were presents from the King of France, and some contrived by Count Zazzola, one of the greatest mechanists of the age. By him his Majesty is attended when working in the laboratory.

As to his personal character, he was certainly a good husband when his Queen was alive. Never once did he swerve from conjugal fidelity, nor ever had any mistress public or private. His brothers were always his best friends and most familiar companions; and as to his children there is no need of saying that he always proved a kind father. He is rather an easy, than an affectionate master, never descending to great familiarity with his servants, yet always satisfy'd with what they do. They say that he never betrayed any great love to any body out of his own family, no more than hatred. It happened once, that he detected one of his most familiar domestics in a Lye, and forbid him his presence, but still continued him his salary. His conversation is generally cheerful, but always as chaste as his conduct. He repo-

ses much confidence in his chief Ministers, especially Marquis Squillace, who has found the means of prepossessing him in favour of his own abilities; yet neither Squillace, nor any body else, was ever a favourite; when by a favourite we mean a man admitted by a Sovereign to the closest intimacy of friendship.

The King uses every body with a sort of condescension that may be called civility, which impresses his servants with a strong sense of real respect, independent of his Kingship, as the rigidity of his morals gives them no room for the least contempt. His method of spending time, so unalterably regular, may appear somewhat dull: but is certainly laudable, and it is quite necessary that a King should have his Ministers and his servants exactly apprised of the hours, and even the minutes, that they are to approach him for the dispatch of business in their respective stations and employments.

Every body here agrees, that his Majesty is far from wanting knowledge of men or things. He has read much, and never passes a day without looking into a book. Besides his native tongue, he speaks Italian and French with the greatest fluency and propriety, nor is he ignorant of the Latin. They say, that he knows his own as well as other Princes interest full as well as any of his Ministers, and does not spare any expence to be early informed of whatever passes in Europe and out of Europe that may affect him any way.

Since he came to this throne, he never would suffer any Italian opera to be performed either at Madrid or Aranjuez, as was practised in the former reign.

His Majesty, besides retrenching this absurd Article of expence, has lessened that of his stables, so that he has much reduced the vast debt with which he found himself encumbered, by which means, if not interrupted by war, I suppose the whole will be discharged in about 20 Years. He visits the Queen-Mother every day, and treats her with the profoundest respect.

On every gala-day, his Majesty puts on a new suit, and as rich as art can make it: but all his fine cloaths are constantly made after the fashion that was used in his younger years, and he always appears impatient to undress, being never easy, until he resumes his grey frock and leather waistcoat. He was always an enemy to all sort of innovation, and so steady in uniformity, that he wore for above twenty years a silver-watch. His Queen insisted often upon his changing

58 ACCOUNT OF THE PRESENT &c.

it for a better, but to no purpose. Yet, to get rid of her importunity, and incessant jokes, resolved at last to have a gold-case to it, which he made himself on the lathe.

When he resolved to give the Kingdom of Naples to his son, every body expected that he would send to Spain all the antique monuments that had been dug out of Herculaneum. But little did they know him that formed such conjectures, as on the same day that he crowned that son, he went to the place where those monuments were deposited, and there left a ring he had worn many years, which had been found in those ruins, saying, that he had no right to any thing that belonged to another Monarch.

The place where the King hunts is called the Pardo; the situation is very romantic, having an easy hill on one side, and an extensive forest all round; the trees are chiefly green oaks, and their sweet acorns afford plenty of food to the innumerable animals that live in it. When the King is there, the neighbouring peasants get up before day, at the ringing of their church bells, and men, women, and children, run about the country, hooting and beating the bushes, in order to fright the game towards the Pardo, that the King may have plenty, for which each of them is paid two reals, about eleven pence sterling a day. It is said that the King can hit the smallest bird on the wing with a single ball.

An authentic Narrative of the Death
of
MARK ANTHONY CALAS,
and
of the Trial and Execution of his Father,
JOHN CALAS,
for the supposed Murder of his Son.

John Calas was a merchant of the city of *Toulouse*; where he had been settled, and lived in good repute, forty years: He married an *Englishwoman* of French extraction, her grand-mother being of the family of *Garde-Montesquieu*, and related to the chief noblesse of *Languedoc*.

Calas

Calas and his wife were Protestants, and had five sons, whom they educated in the same religion: But *Lewis*, one of the sons, some time since became a Roman Catholic; his father's maid-servant, a religious Catholic, who had lived thirty years in the family, having greatly contributed to his conversion; but the father was so far from expressing any resentment or ill-will on the occasion, that he settled an annuity upon *Lewis*, and still kept the maid in his family.

In *October 1761*, the family seems to have consisted of the father *John Calas* and his wife, one woman servant, *Mark Anthony Calas* the eldest son, and *Peter Calas*, the second son. *Mark Anthony* had been educated as a scholar, with a view to his becoming an advocate or counsellor at law; but he was not able to get himself admitted as a licentiate, because he must either have performed some acts, which, as a Protestant, he could not have performed; or have purchased certificates, which he either thought unlawful, or found too expensive. He could not follow the business of a merchant, because he was not qualified for it by his education, nor his turn of mind; he therefore became discontented and melancholy, and endeavoured to dissipate the gloom of his mind by playing at billiards, and other expensive pleasures, of which his father often expressed his disapprobation with some warmth, and once threatened, that if he did not alter his conduct, he would turn him out of doors; or expressed himself in words to that effect. The young man's discontent and melancholy still increased, and he seems to have entertained thoughts of putting an end to his life, as he was continually selecting and reading passages from *Plutarch*, *Seneca*, *Montaigne*, and many other authors on *suicide*, and could say by heart a *French* translation of the celebrated soliloquy in *Hamlet*, which he frequently repeated, with some passages from a *French* Tragedy-Comedy, called *Sidney*, to the same effect.

On the 13th of *October 1761*, *M. Gober la Vaisse*, a young gentleman about nineteen years of age, the son of *La Vaisse*, a celebrated advocate of *Toulouse*, having been some time at *Bordeaux*, came back to *Toulouse* to see his father; but finding that his father was gone to his country house, at some distance from the city, he went to several places, endeavouring to hire a horse to carry him thither. No horse, however, was to be hired; and about five o'clock in the evening he was met by *John Calas*, the father and the eldest son *Mark Anthony*, who was his friend. *Calas*, the father, invited him

60. AN AUTHENTIC NARRATIVE.

to supper, as he could not set out for his father's that night, and *La Vaisse* consented. All three therefore proceeded to *Calas's* house together, and when they came thither, finding that Mrs. *Calas* was still in her own room, which she had not quitted that day, *La Vaisse* went up to see her. After the first compliments, he told her, he was to sup with her by her husband's invitation; she expressed her satisfaction, and a few minutes afterwards left him, to give some orders to her maid. When that was done, she went to look for her son *Anthony*, whom she found sitting alone in the shop, very pensive; she gave him some money, and desired him to go and buy some Roquefort cheese, he being always the market man for cheese, as he knew how to buy it better than any other of the family.

She then returned to her guest *La Vaisse*, who very soon after went again to the livery-stable, to see if any horse was come in, that he might secure it for the next morning.

In a short time *Anthony* returned, having bought the cheese, and *La Vaisse* also coming back about the same time, the family and their guest sat down to supper in a room up one pair of stairs, the whole company consisting of *Calas* the father and his wife, *Anthony* and *Peter Calas*, the sons, and *La Vaisse* the guest, no other person being in the house except the maid-servant, who has been already mentioned.

It was now about seven o'clock; the supper was not long; but before it was over, or, according to the *French* expression, *when they came to the desert*, *Anthony* left the table, and went into the kitchen, which was on the same floor, as he used to do; the maid asked him if he was a-cold; he answered, *Quite the contrary; I burn*; and then left her. In the mean time his friend and the family left the room they had supped in, and went into a bed-chamber: the father and M. *La Vaisse* sat down together on a sofa; the younger son *Peter* in an elbow-chair, and the mother in another chair; and without making any enquiry after *Anthony*, continued in conversation together till between nine and ten o'clock, when *La Vaisse* took his leave, and *Peter*, who had fallen asleep, was awaked to attend him with a light. *)

On

*) This little narrative contains a picture of domestic life, which must be altogether new to an *English* reader. A merchant who had bred his eldest son a scholar, in order to have him called to the bar, sends this son out to buy cheese, having only one

On the ground floor of *Calas's* house was a shop and a warehouse; the warehouse was divided from the shop by a pair of folding doors: When *Peter Calas* and *La Vaisse* came down stairs into the shop, they were extremely shocked to see *Anthony* hanging in his shirt, from a bar which he had laid across the top of the two folding doors, having half opened them for that purpose. Upon discovery of this horrid spectacle, they shrieked out, and the cry brought down *Calas* the father, the mother being seized with such a terror as kept her trembling in the passage above. The unhappy old man rushed forward, and taking the body in his arms, the bar to which the rope that suspended him was fastened, slipped off from the folding doors of the warehouse, and fell down: Having placed the body on the ground, he loosed and took off the cord, in an agony of grief and anguish not to be expressed, weeping, trembling, and deploring himself and his child. The two young men, his second son and *La Vaisse*, who had not had presence of mind enough to attempt taking down the body, where standing by, stupid with amazement and horror; in the mean time the mother, hearing the confused cries and complaints of her husband, and finding no-body come to her, found means to get down stairs. At the bottom she found *La Vaisse*, and hastily and eagerly demanded what was the matter; this question roused him in a moment, and instead of answering her, he urged her to go again up stairs, to which, with much reluctance, she consented; but the conflict of her mind being such as could not be long borne, she sent down the maid, *Jannet*, to see what was the matter; when the maid discovered what had happened, she continued below, either because she feared to carry an account of it to her mistress, or because she busied herself in doing some good office to her master, who was still embracing

one servant in the family, who, after preparing the supper, sets in upon the table at seven o'clock, and leaves the company to wait upon themselves: This supper, however, had what they call a desert, but before it is over, *Anthony*, the eldest son, the particular friend of the guest, leaves the table, and goes into the kitchen; no enquiry was made about him, though the company continued together above two hours afterwards; they spent their evening in a bed-chamber, having left the eating room with the table still covered; as soon as they had supped, son *Peter* goes to sleep, and is not disturbed till he is wanted to wait upon the guest with a light.

bracing the body of his son, and bathing it in his tears. The mother therefore, being thus left alone, went down, and mixed in the scene, that has been already described, with such emotions as it would naturally produce. In the mean time, *Peter* had been sent for *La Moire*, a surgeon in the neighbourhood; *La Moire* was not at home, but his apprentice, *M. Grosse*, came instantly. Upon examination, he found the body quite dead; and upon taking off the neckcloth, which was of black taffety, he saw the mark of the cord, and immediately pronounced, that the deceased had been strangled. This particular had not been told; for the poor old man, when *Peter* was going for *La Moire*, cried out, "Save at least the honour of my family; do not go and spread a report that your brother has made away with himself."

By this time a crowd of people was gathered about the door, and one *Casim*, with another friend or two of the family were come in; some of those who were in the street had heard the cries and exclamations of the father, the mother, the brother, and his friend, before they knew what was the matter; and having by some means learnt that *Anthony Calas* was suddenly dead, and that the surgeon who had examined the body, declared he had been strangled, they took it into their heads that he had been murdered; and as his family were Protestants, they presently supposed that the young man was about to abjure their religion, and had been put to death for that reason. The cries they had heard, they fancied were those of the deceased, while he was resisting the violence that was offered him. The tumult in the street increased every moment; some said that *Anthony Calas* was to have abjured the next day; others, that Protestants are bound by their religion to strangle or cut the throats of their children, when they are inclined to become Catholics. Others, who had found out that *La Vaisse* was in the house when the accident happened, very confidently affirmed, that the Protestants, at their last assembly, appointed a person to be their common executioner on these occasions, and that *La Vaisse* was the man, who, in consequence of the office to which he had been appointed, had come to *Calas's* to hang his son.

The poor father, therefore, who was overwhelmed with grief for the loss of his child, was advised by his friends to send for the officers of justice, to prevent his being torn to pieces for having murdered him.

This

This was accordingly done: One was dispatched to the Capitoul, one *David*, the first magistrate of the police, or principal civil magistrate of the place; and another to an inferior officer, called an *assessor*. The Capitoul, was already set out, having been alarmed by the rumour of a murder, before the messenger sent from *Calas's* got to his house. He entered the house with 40 soldiers, took the father, *Peter* the son, the mother, *La Vaisse*, and the maid, all into custody, and set a guard over them: He sent for M. *de la Tour*, a physician, and M. *La Marque* and *Perronet*, surgeons, who examined the body for marks of violence, but found none except the mark of the ligature on the neck; they found also the hair of the deceased done up in the usual manner, perfectly smooth, and without the least disorder; his cloaths also were regularly folded up, and laid upon the counter, nor was his shirt either torn or unbuttoned.

Notwithstanding these appearances, *David* thought fit to give into the opinion of the mob, and took it into his head that old *Calas* had sent for *La Vaisse*, telling him he had a son to be hanged, that *La Vaisse* had come to perform his office of executioner, and that the father and the brother had assisted him in it.

The body, by order of this poor ignorant bigot, was carried to the town-house with the cloaths. The father and son were thrown into a dark dungeon; and the mother, *La Vaisse*, the maid, and *Casing*, were imprisoned in one that admitted the light. The next day, what is called the *verbal process* was taken at the Town-house, instead of the spot where the body was found, as the law directs, and was dated at *Calas's* house, to conceal the irregularity. This *verbal process* is somewhat like our *Coroner's Inquest*; witnesses are examined, and the magistrate makes his report, which is the same there as the verdict of the coroner's jury with us. The witnesses examined by this Capitoul were the physician and surgeon, who proved *Anthony Calas* to have been strangled; the surgeon having been ordered to examine the stomach of the deceased, deposed also, that the food which was found there had been taken four hours before his death: As no proof of the supposed fact could be procured, the Capitoul had recourse to a *Monitory*, in which the crime was taken for granted, and all persons were required to give such testimony concerning it as they were able, particularizing the points to which they were to speak. This *Monitory* recites,
that

64 AN AUTHENTIC NARRATIVE

that *La Vaisse* was commissioned by the Protestants to be their executioner in ordinary, when any of their children were to be hanged for changing their religion; it recites also, that when Protestants thus hang their children, they compel them to kneel, and one of the interrogatories was, whether any person had seen *Anthony Calas* kneel before his father when he strangled him; it recites too, that *Anthony* died a Roman Catholic, and requires evidence of his Catholicism. These ridiculous opinions being thus adopted and published by the principal magistrate of a considerable city, the church of *Geneva* thought itself obliged to send an attestation of its abhorrence of opinions so abominable and absurd, and of its astonishment that they should be suspected of such opinions, by persons whose rank and office required them to have more knowledge and better judgment.

But before this Monitory was published, the mob had got a notion that *Anthony Calas* was the next day to have entered into the fraternity of the White Penitents. The Capitoul immediately adopted this opinion also, without the least examination, and ordered *Anthony's* body to be buried in the middle of St. *Stephen's* church, which was done; forty priests, and all the White penitents assisting in the funeral procession.

Four days afterwards, the White Penitents performed a solemn service for him in their chapel; the church was hung with white, and a tomb was raised in the middle of it, on the top of which was placed a human skeleton, holding in one hand a paper, on which was written *abjuration of heresy*, and in the other a palm, the Emblem of Martyrdom.

The next day the Franciscans performed a service of the same kind for him, and it is easy to imagine how much the minds of the people were inflamed by this strange folly of their magistrates and priests.

The Capitoul continued the prosecution with unrelenting severity, and though the grief and distraction of the family when he first came to the house, were alone sufficient to have convinced any reasonable being that they were not the authors of the event which they deplored, yet having publicly attested that they were guilty in his monitory without proof, and no proof coming in, he thought fit to condemn the unhappy father, mother, brother, friend and servant to the torture, and put them all into irons on the 18th of *November*. *Casing* was enlarged upon proof that he was not in *Calas's* house till after *Anthony* was dead.

From

From these dreadful proceedings the sufferers appealed to the parliament, which immediately took cognizance of the affair, annulled the sentence of the Capitoul as irregular, and continued the prosecution.

When the tryal came on, the hangman, who had been carried to *Calas's* house, and shewn the folding doors and the bar, deposed, that it was impossible *Anthony* should hang himself as was pretended; another witness swore that they looked through the key hole of *Calas's* door into a dark room, where they saw men running hastily to and fro; a third swore, that his wife had told him, that a woman, named *Mandrill*, had told her, that a certain woman unknown had declared she heard the cries of *Mark Anthony Calas* at the farther end of the city. Upon such evidence as this, the majority of the parliament were of opinion, that the father and mother ordered *La Vaisse* to hang their son, and that another son and a maid servant, who was a good Catholic, had assisted him to do it.

One *la Borde* presided at the tryal, who had zealously espoused the popular prejudices, and though it was manifest to demonstration that the prisoners were either all innocent, or all guilty, he voted that the father should first suffer the torture ordinary and extraordinary, to discover his accomplices, and be then broken alive upon the wheel, to receive the last stroke when he had lain two hours, and then to be burnt to ashes. In this opinion he had the concurrence of six others, three were for the torture alone, two were of opinion that they should endeavour to ascertain upon the spot whether *Anthony* could hang himself or not, and one voted to acquit the prisoner. After long debates, the majority was for the torture and the wheel, and probably condemned the father by way of experiment, whether he was guilty or not, hoping he would, in his agony, confess the crime, and accuse the other prisoners, whose fate, therefore, they suspended. It is, however, certain, that if they had had evidence against the father that would have justified the sentence they pronounced against him, that very evidence would have justified the same sentence against the rest, and that if they could not justly condemn the rest, they could not justly condemn him, for they were all in the house together when *Anthony* died, all concurred in declaring he hanged himself, which those who did not help to hang him, if hanged by others, could have had no motive to do, nor could any of the prisoners have hanged him by violence without the knowledge of the rest.

66. AN AUTHENTIC NARRATIVE &c.

Poor *Calas*, however, an old man of sixty-eight, was condemned to this dreadful punishment alone; he suffered the torture with great constancy, and was led to execution in a frame of mind which excited the admiration of all that saw him.

Two Dominicans, Father *Bourges* and Father *Galdagues*, who attended him in his last moments, wished, "that their latter end might be like his," and declared that they thought him not only wholly innocent of the crime laid to his charge, but an exemplary instance of true christian patience, fortitude, and charity.

One single shriek, and that not very violent, escaped him when he received the first stroke; after that he uttered no complaint. Being at length placed on the wheel, to wait for the moment which was to end his life and his misery together, he expressed himself with an humble hope of an happy immortality, and a compassionate regard for the judges who had condemned him. When he saw the executioner preparing to give him the last stroke, he made a fresh declaration of his innocence to Father *Bourges*, but while the words were yet in his mouth, the Capitoul, the author of this catastrophe, and who came upon the scaffold merely to gratify his desire of being a witness of his punishment and death, ran up to him and bawled out, *Wretch, there are the faggots which are to reduce your body to ashes; speak the truth.* Calas made no reply, but turned his head a little aside, and that moment the executioner did his office.

Though the testimony of a dying man had thus acquitted the rest of the prisoners, yet the judges, that they might act with a uniform absurdity through the whole affair, banished *Peter Calas* for life, and acquitted the rest. The widow and the other sufferers are seeking such redress from the king as can now be had, to whom the sentence of the judges was not sent for confirmation as it ought to have been.

The judges have thought fit to suppress the trial; the widow petitions that it may be ordered to be laid before the parliament of *Paris* for a revision.

ANSON'S VOYAGE TO ASIA. *)

The *Centurion* and *Gloucester* left the coast of *America* the 6th of May 1742. The first land in *Asia* which they could reach was the islands *Ladrones*, which are separated from *America* by near one third of the globe's circumference. But as the N. E. winds, which are favourable for this voyage, usually blow between the tropics, the *English* could not think that they could be longer about it than the *Spaniards*, who generally perform it in two months. In this confidence they put to sea, and stood for the latitude where the most regular winds are expected; but contrary to their expectations, the wind shifted so often, and they had so many strong gales at W. that, in seven weeks, they had not proceeded one fourth of the voyage. Several misfortunes happen'd during this tedious delay. Both ships sprung their masts in several places, and being obliged to keep their pumps continually going, on account of the leaks, it was an insupportable fatigue to the men, the greatest part of whom were weakned by the scurvy.

Tho' they had plenty of provisions, and tho' the rains constantly supplied them with water, and all possible care was taken to keep the ships cool and clean; yet the scurvy continued its havock, notwithstanding all their skill and precaution: and even when the fair winds set in towards the end of June, the voyage was far from being so speedy as might have been hoped. The *Gloucester* having lost her main-mast, sail'd heavily, and the *Centurion* lost near a month in waiting for her. When they were within 300 leagues of the port, the *Gloucester's* other masts were all carried away by some contrary gales; nor were her crew any longer able to free her of water; so that on the 15th of August, having taken out the most necessary stores, they set her on fire; and on the 23d they made some islands, which were the first that they had seen during this long passage; and on the 26th, while they were regretting the apparent difficulty of landing at any of these, and fearing they should not get light of any others, they discovered three more. Of one of these, a boat, which they had taken, gave them such an inviting account, that they immediately set about landing their men. The sick, who were now grown very numerous, were, without delay, put

E 2

on

*) A Voyage round the World by George Anson Esq. compiled by R. Walter. Lond. 1748. 8. Gentleman's Magazine 1749.

on shore, being carried on the shoulder even of their officers, their humane Commodore setting the example. Here they recover'd surprisingly, so that all the time they stay'd, they lost but ten men. Their quick recovery was owing to the acid fruits and anti-scorbutic plants, as well as to the healthful qualities of the air. Beasts, fowls, and vegetables were here in great abundance; and tho' there was no river, this defect was amply supply'd by several reservoirs of excellent water, issuing from the springs. But, as the finest countries are subject to some inconveniencies, so was this delightful island of *Tinian*. The chief is the want of harbours, for there is but one place where ships can anchor, which is to the S. E. and this, from the middle of *June* to the middle of *October*, is exposed to very furious tempests, which blow at the new and full moons. The coral which spreads all over the bottom of the sea, wounds the cables, so that they easily part in a strong current, or hard gale. This the *Centurion* experienced on the 22d of *September*, when a strong gust of wind broke both her cables, and drove her from the coast, so that it was 19 days before she could get back again. As the greatest part of the ship's company was on shore with Mr. *Anson*, only 108 men were on board, and most of them sickly. This was a number so unequal to the working of the pumps, and at the same time navigating the ship, that it was impossible for them to bring her sooner back to the island, where indeed she had been given over for lost. The Commodore who at first shew'd no signs of uneasiness, was unable to conceal the emotion of his mind, when, some days after the ship's departure, he perceived two boats, which at first he imagined to belong to the *Centurion*, and feared that the ship was foundered, and that the persons who had saved themselves in these boats, were all that remained of the crew. This conjecture, but especially the apprehension that all the expected glory and advantage of his hazardous expedition was irretrievably prevented, affected him so strongly that he retired to his tent, that he might have no witnesses to the grief and anguish which he could no longer suppress. Except this single instance of human frailty, which some persons have insolently censured, his constancy, his prudence, his serenity, and alacrity, justly excite our astonishment, and deserve our imitation: and from this he soon recover'd, resuming his usual chearfulness. He told his men, that, as the ship had not been able to regain the island, it was probable that she was gone for

Chili,

Chili, and that the only means which remained to meet her there, was to saw the boat which they had taken through the middle, and lengthen it, so that it might be large enough to carry them all. He not only exhorted them to this work, but, to encourage them in forwarding it, he himself condescended to be a workman. Most of the ship's carpenters happening to be on the island, they soon got tools and materials ready to join the two ends of the boat, when, on the 11th of *October*, the ship again appeared, and put an end at once to their labour and apprehensions. Mr. *Anson* immediately went on board, with the greatest part of his men; and tho', some days after, she was again driven off, the crew, being now stronger, brought her back into the road in five days. The sailors who had been left on shore had already begun to refit the boat, which would conveniently have held their small number. But being at last once more got all together, they left this island, where they had experienced the greatest vicissitudes of joy and consternation. This last trip moved more prosperous, and they arrived at *Macao* on the 12th *December*, which was the first friendly port they had seen during two years. The *Portuguese* governor shew'd himself both a weak counsellor and a timorous friend. For tho' he was inclined to favour Mr. *Anson*, his selfish dependence on the *Chinese* hinder'd him from doing it effectually. He advised him against going to *Canton*, to avoid a dispute with the inhabitants, who not being used to see ships of that force, would insist upon the same fees which merchant ships paid, and from which a man of war might justly think itself exempt. Upon receiving this account, the Commodore sail'd to a small port called *Tupa*, and here he was put to infinite trouble in procuring necessaries from the *Chinese*, because they are strictly attached, by their interest, to the *Spaniards* of *Manilla*. They regarded the *English* Commodore as no better than a powerful pirate, and this, joined with the perfidy of their Mandarines, the venality of their courts of justice, and the fraud of their traders, occasion'd delay after delay, in fitting their ship, and buying the necessary stores and provisions. Mr. *Anson*, out of patience at being thus amused and retarded, was at length convinced that resolution and threatenings availed more than courtesy and presents. Accordingly, having at length procured the ship to be refitted and victualled, he left *Tupa* the 6th, and *Macao* the 19th of *April* 1743. Mr. *Anson*, when he was about to leave this port, had given out that he was going to return to *Europe*;

and, tho' this seem'd impracticable at that season, by reason of the western monsoon, he had made his men believe, that, in confidence of their skill, and the goodness of the ship, he would venture to attempt it; for he was persuaded that, if his intention upon the *Manilla* galleon had taken wind at *Macao*, the *Spaniards* would have been soon apprized of it by their *Chinese* friends. But, notwithstanding all his precaution to keep at such a distance from the *Philippine* islands as not to be perceived, they had often sight of him; and the governor of *Manilla*, at the instances of the merchants, had resolved to send out some ships of force against him. But the contrary winds, the slowness in fitting out the largest ship, and especially the dissensions among the proprietors, happily retarded this expedition. Nor was this the only scheme which proved abortive; for when the *Centurion* was repairing at *Tupa*, and consequently unable to make any defence, some *Spaniards* had form'd a design to send thither a kind of fireship, in order to destroy her. But tho' no more than 40,000 crowns was required for an action which would have saved a million, the merchants, suspecting the governor's view was only to get the money into his hands, could not be brought to advance it: and thus the *English* owed the safety of their ship to the mistrust and parsimony of their enemies.

Mr. *Anson* was no sooner at sea, than he called the ship's company upon deck, and told them his design was to go and wait for the *Acapulco* ship at Cape *Spirito Santo*, that being her constant course in her return to *Manilla*; adding that, notwithstanding it had been given out that the sides of this ship were cannon proof, he was resolved to be so near to her, that his shot should go in at one side and out at the other. This speech animated them with hopes of obtaining that inestimable prize, and they waited for her off the cape with unexampled patience for above a month. At length, on the 20th of *June*, the galleon, the object of their hopes, appeared, and so far from seeming to shun the *Centurion*, she boldly made towards her, and prepared for an engagement. But Mr. *Anson* keeping a continual fire both with his guns and small arms, at which his ship's company were very expert, he soon became master of this rich galleon. For the *Spaniards*, seeing a great many of the common men, and especially of the officers, fall, were so terrified, that they struck to an enemy who was not half their number. The name of the prize was the *Nuestra Señora de Cabadonga*; and she was much larger than
the

the *Centurion*, mounted 36 guns, and 27 padereroes, with 550 men. Don Jeronimo de Montaro, who was commander, was esteemed the best seaman of all the captains of the galleons, and was stiled General. The *English* were informed by their prisoners that the ship which last year had been detained at *Acapulco* had set out this year on her return sooner than ordinary, and must have reached *Manilla* before Mr. Anson got to the cape, where he had the good fortune to meet with them; so that the delays of the *Chinese* may be said to have hinder'd Mr. Anson from taking another prize. However, this being so immensely rich, they did not much regret the disappointment. All that remained now, was to carry their prize to some port in *China*; and during the voyage, which, proved but short, the prisoners were secured as far as humanity would admit of, an account being taken of the cargo, and the treasure put on board the *Centurion*. There were on board 1,313,843 pieces of eight, and 35,682 ounces of silver, which with what the *English* had before taken from the *Spaniards*, amounted to 400,000 l. sterling. And if to this sum we add the effects which were destroy'd, to the value of at least 600,000 l. the charges of *Pizarro's* fleet, and the expences of repairing the fortifications in *America*, it will appear that the *Spaniards* were very great sufferers; and, consequently, that expedition of the *English* fleet was of considerable advantage to their country. Mr. Anson arrived at *Macao* the 11th of July, and sailing from thence to the river of *Canton*, he advanced through the narrow passage which defends the harbour, notwithstanding a message which the *Chinese* had sent to forbid him. The two forts on each side the gut did not presume to make any opposition, with their batteries of 8 or 10 iron guns, as it must have been to their own loss. But the governors, as well as the pilot, whom Mr. Anson had compelled to carry his ship in, were punished for permitting what they could not prevent. This resolution, together with the vast riches of the *English*, raised their character with a timorous and mercenary people. Some *Spaniards*, who had been permitted to go on shore, spoke in very honourable terms of their conquerors. Mr. Anson had wrote to the Viceroy for a supply of provisions, and an audience. The first was readily granted him, but the audience was deferred upon pretence of the heat; but, in reality, to gain time for receiving ordres from his court. The accustomed duty was also required: but, upon the commodore's inflexibly persisting in a refusal,

fusal, the Mandarin, who had been deputed by the Viceroy, made no farther mention of it, requiring only that the *Spanish* prisoners should be set at liberty. Some seeming difficulties were made on this head, to give it the appearance of a favour, tho', in reality, the *English* wanted to be rid of them.

It would be no less tedious than unnecessary to relate all the preparations the *English* made for their return, and the obstructions which the *Chinese*, whether out of fear, interest, or formality, were continually throwing in their way. In short, Mr. Anson was obliged himself to go up to Canton, and enforce his orders in person. Being now ready to depart, he sent the Viceroy another message, to remind him of the audience he had desired. This probably would have been again put off, but for the following accident: A fire broke out with such violence, that it soon spread thro' a great part of the city, and probably would have consumed the whole, had it not been extinguished by the boldness and activity of the *English* sailors. For this service they received the thanks of the citizens, and the Viceroy immediately granted an audience, in which all Mr. Anson's demands met with a ready compliance. Upon which, having sold the *Spanish* galleon to some merchants at Macao, he left that port the 15th of December, and returned to Europe by the streights of Sunda, and the Cape of Good Hope. The 15th of June was the auspicious day which gave him a sight of his country, after an absence of three years and nine months, in an expedition which will be an eternal monument, that, tho' *prudence, intrepidity, and perseverance united, are not exempted from the blows of adverse fortune; yet in a long series of transactions, they usually rise superior to its power, and in the end rarely fail of proving successful.*

Account

of Sir CHARLES GRANDISON'S rescuing
MISS HARRIET BYRON. *)

Mr. REEVES, to GEORGE SELBY, Esq.

Dear Mr. Selby,

Friday, Feb. 17.

No one, at present, but yourself, must see the contents of what I am going to write.

But

*) The History of Sir Charles Grandison. Lond. 1754. 6 Vol. 3.

But how shall I tell you the news; the dreadful news?—

You must not — But how shall I say, *You* must not, be too much affected, when *we* are unable to support ourselves?

O my cousin Selby! — We know not what is become of our dearest Miss Byron!

I will be as particular as my grief and surprize will allow. There is a necessity for it, as you will find.

We were last night at the Ball in the Hay-market.

The chairmen who carried the dear creature, and who, as well as *our* chairmen, were engaged for the night, were inveigled away to drink somewhere. They promised Wilson, my cousin's servant, to return in half an hour.

It was then but little more than twelve.

Wilson waited near two hours, and they not returning, he hired a chair to supply their place.

Between two and three, we all agreed to go home. The dear creature was fatigued with the notice every-body took of her. Every body admired her. She wanted to go before; but Lady Betty prevailed on her to stay a little longer.

She hurried into it because of her dress, and being warm; and no less than four gentleman following her to the very chair.

I ordered Wilson to bid the chairmen stop, when they had got out of the croud, till Lady Betty's chair, and mine, and my wife's, joined them.

I saw her chair move, and Wilson with his lighted flambeaux before it; and the four masks who followed her to the chair, return into the house.

When our servants could not find that her chair had stopt, we supposed that in the hurry, the fellow heard not my orders; and directed our chairmen to proceed; not doubting but we should find her got home before us.

We had before agreed to be carried directly home; declining Lady Betty's invitation to resume our own dresses at her house, where we dressed for the Ball.

We were very much surprised at finding her not arrived: But concluding that, by mistake, she was carried to Lady Betty's, and was there expecting us, we sent thither immediately.

But, good God! what was our consternation, when the servants brought us word back, that Lady Betty had not either seen or heard of her!

Mr. Greville, as I apprehend — you know he is a man of enterprize.

He came to town, having professedly no other material business but to give obstruction to my cousin's visitors. He saw she had two new ones. He talked at first of staying in town, and partaking of its diversions, and even of bespeaking a new equipage.

But all of a sudden, tho' expecting Mr. Fenwick would come up, he pretended to leave the town, and to set out directly for Northamptonshire, without having obtained any concession from my cousin in his favour.

Laying all these circumstances together, I think it is hardly to be doubted, but Mr. Greville is at the bottom of this black affair.

I have six people out at different parts of the town, who are to make enquiries among chairmen, coachmen, &c.

Her new servant cannot be a villain — What can one say! — What can one think?

We have sent to his sister, who keeps an inn in Smithfield. She has heard nothing of him.

I had half a suspicion of Sir Hargrave, as well from the character given us of him by a friend of mine, as because of his unpolite behaviour to the dear creature on her rejecting him: And sent to his house in Cavendish-square, to know if he were at home, and if he were, at what time he returned from the Ball.

Answer was brought, that he was in bed, and they supposed would not be stirring till dinner-time; when he expected company; and that he returned not from the Ball till between four and five this morning.

You will be so good, as to dispatch the bearer instantly with what information can be got about Mr. Greville.

Ever, ever, Yours!

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Mr. SELBY, to ARCHIBALD REEVES, Esq.

Saturday, Feb. 18.

○ Mr. Reeves! — Dear sweet child! — Flower of the world! —

How could I conceal my consternation! — My wife saw it. She would know the cause of it.

I could not tell her the fatal news — Fatal news indeed! It will be immediate death to her poor grandmother. —

We must keep it from her as long as we can! — But *keep* it from her! — And *is* the dearest creature spirited away? — O Mr. Reeves!

I gave my wife your Letter. She fainted away, before she had read it thro'.

Masquerades, I have generally heard said, were more silly than wicked: But they are now, I am convinced, the most profligate of all diversions.

Some damned villain, to be sure! — Greville it is not. Greville was seen late last night, alighting at his own house from a post-chaise. He had no-body with him.

Find out where she is: And find her safe and well: Or we will never forgive those who were the cause of her going to London.

Dear soul! She was over-persuaded! She was not fond of going!

Search every-where — But you will, no doubt! — Suspect every-body — This Lady Betty Williams — Such a plot must have a woman in it. Was she not Sir Hargrave's friend? — This Sir Hargrave! — Greville it could not be. Had we not the proof I mentioned, Greville, bad as he is, could not be such a villain.



Greville was this moment here.

We could not see him. We did not let him know the matter.

He is gone away, in great surprize, on the servants telling him that we had received some bad news, which made us unfit to see any-body. The servants could not tell him what: Yet they all guess, by your livery, and by our grief, that something has befallen their beloved young Lady. They are all in tears — And they look at us, when they attend us, with *such* inquisitive, yet silent grief! — We are speechless before them; and tell them our wills by motions, and not by words.

Good God! — After so many happy years! — Happy in ourselves! to be at last in so short a time made the most miserable of wretches!

But this had not been, if — But no more — Good God of heaven, what will become of my poor aunt Shirley! —
But

But no more — Hasten your next — And forgive this distracted Letter. I know not what I have written. But I am

Yours,

GEORGE SELBY.

Mr. REEVES, to GEORGE SELBY, Esq.

Every hour we have one messenger or other returning with something to say; but hitherto with nothing to the purpose. This has kept me within. O Mr. Selby, I know not what to direct! I know not what to do! I send them out again as fast as they return: Yet rather shew my despair, than my hope.

Surely this villany must be Mr. Greville's. Tho' I have but just dispatched away my servant to you, I am impatient for his return.

We begin to suspect the servant (that Wilson) whom my cousin so lately hired. Were *he* clear of the matter, either he or the chairmen he hired, must have been heard of. He would have returned. They could not all three be either murdered or secreted.

One o'Clock,

Lady Betty's chairmen have found out, and they brought with them, one of the fellows, whom that vile Wilson hired. The other was afraid to come. I have secured this fellow: Yet he seems to be ingenuous; and I have promised, that if he prove innocent, he shall be rewarded instead of punished; and the two chairmen, on this promise, are gone to try to prevail upon his partner to come, were it but to release the other, as both insisted upon their innocence.

And now will you be impatient to know what account this fellow gives.

O Mr. Selby! The dear, dear creature — But before I can proceed, I must recover my eyes.

Two o'Clock

This fellow's name is Macpherson. His partner's M'Dermot. This is Macpherson's account of the matter.

Wilson hired them to carry his young Lady to Paddington — To Paddington! A vile dog! —

They objected distance and danger; the latter, as Macpherson owns, to heighten the value of the service.

As to the danger, Wilson told him, they would be met by three others of his fellow-servants, armed, at the first fields: And as to the distance, they would be richly rewarded;

warded; and he gave them a crown a piece earnest, and treated them besides with brandy. +

To prevent their curiosity, and entirely to remove their difficulties, the villain told them, that his young Lady was an heiress, and had agreed to go off from the Masquerade with her Lover: But that the gentleman would not appear to them till she came to the very house, to which she was to be conveyed.

She thinks, said the hellish villain, that she is to be carried to May-Fair Chapel, and to be married directly; and that the minister (unseasonable as the hour is) will be there in readiness. But the gentleman, who is a man of the utmost honour, intends first to try whether he cannot obtain her friends consent. So when she finds her way lengthened, proceeded the vile wretch, she will perhaps be frightened, and will ask me questions. I would not for the world disoblige her; but here she must be cheated for her own sake; and when all is over, will value me the more for the innocent imposture. But whatever orders she may give you, observe none but mine, and follow me. You shall be richly rewarded, repeated the miscreant. Should she even cry out, mind it not: She is full of fears, and hardly holds in one mind for an hour together.

He further cautioned them not to answer any questions which might possibly be asked of them, by the person who should conduct his young Lady to her chair; but refer to himself: And in case any other chairs were to go in company with hers, he bid them fall behind, and follow his flambeaux.

Macpherson says, that she drew the curtains close (because of her dress, no doubt) the moment I had left her, after seeing her in chair.

The fellows thus prepossessed and instructed, speeded away, without stopping for our chairs. Yet the dear creature must have heard me give that direction.

They had carried her a great way before she called out: And *then* she called three times before they would hear her, at the third time they stopt, and her servant asked her commands. Where am I, William? said she. Just at home, madam, answered he. Surely you have taken a strange round-about way. We *are* come about, said the rascal, on purpose to avoid the croud of chairs and coaches.

They proceeded onwards, and were joined by three men, as Wilson had told them they would: but they fancied one of +

of them to be a gentleman; for he was muffled up in a cloak, and had a silver-hilted sword in his hand: But he spoke not: He gave no directions: And all three kept aloof, that they might not be seen by her.

At Marybone, she again called out; William, William, said she, with vehemence: The Lord have mercy upon me! Where are you going to carry me? Chairmen, stop! Stop, chairmen! Set me down! — William! — Call my servant, chairmen! —

The chairmen called him. They lifted up the head. The side curtains were still undrawn, and McDermot stood so close, that she could not see far before her. Did you not tell me, said the villain to them, that is was not far about? — See how you have frightened my Lady! — Madam, we are now almost at home.

They proceeded with her, saying, they had indeed mistaken their way; but they were just there; and hurried on.

She then undrew the side curtains — Good God of heaven protect me! they heard her say — I am in the midst of fields — They were then at Liffom-Green.

They heard her pray; and Macpherson said, he began then to conclude, that the Lady was too much frightened, and *too pious*, to be in a Love-plot.

But, nevertheless, beckoned by their villainous guide, they hurried on: And then she screamed out; and happening to see one of the three men, she begged his help for God's sake.

The fellow blustered at the chairmen, and bid them stop. She asked for Grosvenor-street. She was to be carried, she said, to Grosvenor-street.

She was just there, that fellow said — It can't be, Sir! It can't be! Don't I see fields all about me? — I am in the midst of fields, Sir.

Grosvenor-Square, madam, replied that villain: the trees and garden of Grosvenor-Square.

What a strange way have you come about! cried her miscreant: And then trod out his flambeaux; while another fellow took the chairmens lantern from them; and they had only a little glimmering star-light to guide them.

She then, poor dear soul! screamed so dismally; that Macpherson said, it went to his heart to hear her. But they following Wilson, who told them they were just *landed*, that was his word, he led them up a long garden-walk, by a back-

back-way. One of the three men having got before, opened the garden-door, and held it in his hand; and by the time they got to the house to which the garden seemed to belong, the dear creature ceased screaming.

They too well saw the cause, when they stopt with her. She was in a fit.

Two women, by the assistance of the person in the cloak, helped her out, with great seeming tenderness. They said something in praise of her beauty, and expressed themselves concerned for her, as if they were afraid she was past recovery: Which apparently startled the man in the cloak.

Wilson entered the house with those who carried in the dear creature; but soon came out to the chairmen. They saw the man in the cloak (who hung about the villain, and hugged him, as in joy) give the rascal money: who then put a guinea into each of their hands; and conveyed them thro' the garden again, to the door at which they entered; but refused them light even so much as that of their own candle and lantern. However he sent another man with them, who led them over rough and dirty by-ways into a path that pointed London-ward; but plainly so much about with design to make it difficult for them to find out the place again.



The other fellow is brought hither: He tells exactly the same story.

I asked of both, what sort of man he in the cloak was; but he so carefully muffled himself up, and so little appeared to them, either walking after them, or at the house, that I could gain no light from their description.

On their promise to be forth-coming, I have suffered them to go with Lady Betty's chairmen to try if they can trace out their own footsteps, and find the place.



The four chairmen are just returned. They think they have found the place; but having gained some intelligence (intelligence which distracts me!) they hurried back for directions.

They had asked a neighbouring alehouse-keeper, if there were not a long garden (belonging to the house they suspected) and a back-door out of it to a dirty lane and fields. He answered in the affirmative. The front of this house faces the road.

They

They called for some hot liquors; and asked the landlord after the owners. He knew nothing of harm of them, he said. They had lived there near a twelvemonth in reputation. The family consisted of a widow, whose name is Awberry, her son and two daughters. The son (a man of about thirty years of age) has a place in the Custom-house, and only came down on a Saturday, and went up on Monday. But an odd circumstance, he said, had alarmed him that very morning.

He was at first a little shy of telling what it was. He loved, he said, to mind his own business: What other people did was nothing to him: But, at last, he told them, that about six o'clock in the morning he was awakened by the trampling of horses; and looking out of his window, saw a chariot-and-six, and three or four men on horseback, at the widow Awberry's door. He got up. The footmen and coachmen were very *hush*, not calling for a drop of liquor, tho' his doors were open: A rare instance, he said, where there were so many men-servants together, and a coachman one of them. This, he said, could not but give a greater edge to his curiosity.

About seven o'clock, one of the widow's daughters came to the door, with a lighted candle in her hand, and directed the chariot to drive up close to the house. The alehouse-keeper then slipped into an arbour-like porch, next door to the widow's; where he had not been three minutes before he saw two persons come to the door; the one a tall gentleman in laced cloaths, who had his arms about the other, a person of middling stature, wrapt up in a scarlet cloak; and resisting, as one in great distress, the other's violence, and begging not to be put into the chariot, in a voice and accent, that evidently shewed it was a woman.

The gentleman made vehement protestations of honour; but lifted the Lady into the chariot. She struggled, and seemed to be in agonies of grief; and on being lifted in, and the gentleman going in after her, she screamed out for help; and he observed in the struggling, that she had on, under her cloak, a silverlaced habit (The Masquerade habit, no doubt!) Her screaming grew fainter and fainter, and her voice sounded to him, as if her mouth were stopped. And the gentleman seemed to speak high, as if he threatened her.

Away drove the chariot. The servants rode after it.

In about half an hour, a coach and four came to the widow's door; the widow and her two daughters went into it, and it took the same road,

They

The alehouse-keeper had afterwards the curiosity to ask the maid-servant, an ignorant country wench, whither her mistresses went so early in the morning? She answered, they were gone to Windsor, or that way, and would not return, she believed, in a week.

O this damn'd Sir Hargrave! He has a house upon the forest. I have no doubt but he is the villain. Who knows what injuries the dear creature might have sustained before she was forced into the chariot? — God give me patience! Dear soul! Her prayers! Her struggling! Her crying out for help! Her mouth stopt! — O the villain!

I have ordered as many men and horses as two of my friends can furnish me with, to be added to two of my own (we shall be nine in all) to get ready with all speed. I will pursue the villain to the world's end, but I will find him.

I have, however, accepted Lady Betty's offer of her steward's going with the two chairmen, to get what farther intelligence he can from Paddington; against my return.

At four in the morning the six men I borrow, and myself, and two of my servants, well armed, are to rendezvous at Hyde-Park Corner. It is grievous that another night must pass. But so many people cannot be got together as two or three might.

My poor wife has made me promise to take the assistance of peace-officers, where-ever I find either the villain, or the suffering angel.

Where the road parts, we shall divide, and enquire at every turnpike; and shall agree upon our places of meeting.

I am harassed to death: But my mind is the greatest sufferer.



O my dear Mr. Selby! We have tidings — God be praised, we have tidings — Not so happy indeed as were to be wished: Yet the dear creature is living, and in honourable hands — God be praised!

Read the inclosed Letter directed to me.

S I R,

Miss Byron is in safe and honourable hands.

The first moment she could give any account of herself, she besought me to quiet your heart, and your Lady's, with this information.

She has been cruelly treated.

F

Parti-

Particulars, at present, she cannot give.

She was many hours speechless.

But don't fright yourselves: Her fits, tho' not less frequent, are weaker and weaker.

The bearer will acquaint you who my Brother is; to whom you owe the preservation and safety of the lovelest woman in England; and he will direct you to a house where you will be welcome with your Lady (for Miss Byron cannot be removed) to convince yourselves that all possible care is taken of her, by, Sir,

Friday, Feb. 17.

Your humble Servant,

CHARLOTTE GRANDISON.

In fits! — Has been cruelly treated! — Many hours speechless! — Cannot be removed! — Dearest, dear creature! — But you will rejoice with me, my cousins, that she is in such honourable hands.

She is at a nobleman's house, the Earl of L. near Colnebrooke.

I shall set out before day, on horseback. My servant shall carry with him a portmanteau of things, ordered by my wife. My cousin must have made a strange appearance in her Masquerade dress, to her deliverer.

The honest man who brought the Letter was but just returned from Windsor, whither he had been sent early in the morning, to transact some business, when he was dispatched away to us with the welcome Letter. He could not therefore be so particular as we wished him. What he gathered was from the housekeeper; the men-servants, who were in the fray (A fray there was!) being gone to town with their master. But what we learnt from him, is, briefly, as follows:

His master is Sir Charles Grandison; a gentleman who has not been long in England. I have often heard mention of his father, Sir Thomas, who died not long ago. This honest man knew not when to stop in his master's praise. He gives his young Lady also an excellent character.

Sir Charles was going to town in his chariot-and-six when he met (most happily met!) our distressed cousin.

Sir Hargrave is the villain.

Sir Charles had earnest business in town; and he proceeded thither, after he had rescued the dear creature, and committed her to the care of his sister. — God for ever bless him!

The

The vile Sir Hargrave, as the servant understood, was wounded. Sir Charles it seems was also hurt. Thank God it was so slightly, as not to hinder him from pursuing his journey to town after the glorious act.

I will speed this away by Richard Fennell. I will soon send you farther particulars by the post: Not unhappy ones, I hope.

Ever Yours,

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Mr. REEVES, to GEORGE SELBY, Esq.

Dear Sir,

Sat. Feb. 18.

I am just returned from visiting my beloved cousin. You will be glad of every minute particular, as I can give it to you, relating to this shocking affair; and to her protector and his sister. There are not such another brother and sister in England.

I got to the hospitable mansion by nine this morning. I enquired after Miss Byron's health; and, on giving in my name, was shewn into a handsome parlour, elegantly furnished.

Immediately came down to me a very agreeable young Lady, Miss Grandison. I gave her a thousand thanks for the honour of her Letter, and the joyful information it had given me of the safety of one so deservedly dear to us.

She *must* be an excellent young Lady, answered she. I have just left her — You must not see her yet —

Ah, madam, said I, and looked surprised and grieved, I believe —

Don't affright yourself, Sir. Miss Byron will do very well. But she must be kept quiet. She has had a happy deliverance — She —

O madam, interrupted I, your generous, your noble brother —

Is the best of men, Mr. Reeves: His delight is in doing good. — And, as to this adventure, it has made him, I am sure, a very happy man.

But is my cousin, madam, so ill, that I cannot be allowed to see her for one moment?

She is but just come out of a fit. She fell into it in the relation she would have made of her story, on mentioning the villain's name by whom she has suffered. She could give only broken and imperfect accounts of herself all day

yesterday, or you had heard from me sooner. When you see her, you must be very cautious of what you say to her. We have a skilful physician, by whose advice we proceed.

God for ever blefs you, madam!

He has not long left her. He advises quiet. She has had a very bad night. Could she compose herself, could she get a little natural rest, the cure is performed. Have you breakfasted, Sir?

Breakfasted, madam! My impatience to see my cousin allowed me not to think of breakfast.

You must breakfast with me, Sir. And when that is over, if she is tolerable, we will acquaint her with your arrival, and go up together. I read your impatience, Sir: We will make but a very short breakfasting. I was just going to breakfast.

She rang. It was brought in.

I longed, I said, as we sat at tea, to be acquainted with the particulars of the happy deliverance.

We avoid asking any questions that may affect her. I know very little of the particulars myself. My brother was in haste to get to town. The servants that were with him at the time, hardly dismounted: He doubted not but the Lady (to whom he referred me for the gratifying my curiosity) would be able to tell me every-thing. But she fell into fits, and, as I told you, was so ill, on the recollection of what she had suffered —

Good God! said I, what *must* the dear creature have suffered!

— That we thought fit to restrain our curiosity, and so must you, till we see Sir Charles. I expect him before noon.

I am told, madam, that there was a skirmish. I hope Sir Charles —

I hope so too, Mr. Reeves, interrupted she. I long to see my brother as much as you can do to see your cousin — But on my apprehensions, he assured me upon his honour, that he was but very slightly hurt. Sir Charles is no qualifier, Sir, when he stakes his honour, be the occasion either light or serious.

I said, I doubted not but she was very much surpris'd at a Lady's being brought in by Sir Charles, and in a dress so fantastic.

I was, Sir. I had not left my chamber: But hastened down at the first word, to receive and welcome the stranger.

My

My maid, out of breath, burst into my room — Sir Charles, madam, beseeches you this moment to come down. He has saved a Lady from robbers (that was her report) a very fine Lady! and is come back with her. He begs that you will come down this instant.

I was too much surprised at my brother's unexpected return, and too much affected with the Lady's visible grief and terror, to attend to her dress, when I first went down. She was sitting, dreadfully trembling, and Sir Charles next her, in a very tender manner, assuring her of his and of his sister's kindest protection. I saluted her, continued the Lady: Welcome, welcome, thrice welcome to this house, and to me —

She threw herself on one knee to me. Distress had too much humbled her. Sir Charles and I raised her to her seat. You see before you, madam, said she, a strange creature; and looked at her dress. Think not hardly, Sir, turning to Sir Charles, her hand clasped and held up, of her whom you have so generously delivered. Think not hardly of me, madam, turning to me: I am not a bad creature. That vile, vile man! — She could say no more.

Charlotte, said my brother, you will make it your first care to raise the spirits of this injured beauty: Your next, to take her directions, and inform her friends of her safety.

She wished to be conveyed to town; but looking at her dress, I offered her cloaths of mine; and my brother said, if she were very earnest, and thought herself able to go, he would take horse, and leave the chariot, and he was sure that I would attend her thither.

But before she could declare her acceptance of this offer, as she seemed joyfully ready to do, her spirits failed her, and she sunk down at my feet.

Sir Charles just staid to see her come to herself; and then — Sister, said he, the Lady cannot be removed. Let Dr. Holmes be sent for instantly. I know you will give her your best attendance. I will be with you before noon to-morrow. The Lady is too low, and too weak, to be troubled with questions now. Johnson will be back from Windsor. Let him take her commands to any of her friends. Adieu, dear madam — (Your cousin, Sir, seemed likely to faint again) Support yourself. Repeating, You are in safe and honourable hands; bowing to her, as she bowed in return, but spoke not — Adieu, Charlotte: And away went the best of brothers.

And God Almighty bless him, said I, where-ever he goes!

Miss Grandison then told me, that the house I was in belonged to the Earl of L. who had lately married her elder sister: About three months ago, they set out, she said, to pay a visit to my Lord's estate and relations in Scotland, for the first time, and to settle some affairs there: They were expected back in a week or fortnight: She came down but last Tuesday, and *that* in order to give directions for every-thing to be prepared for their reception. It was happy for your cousin, said she, that I obtained the favour of my brother's company; and that he was obliged to be in town this morning. He intended to come back to carry me to town this evening. We are a family of love, Mr. Reeves. We are true brothers and sisters — But why do I trouble you with these things now? We shall be better acquainted. I am charmed with Miss Byron.

She was so good as to hurry the breakfast; and when it was over, conducted me up stairs. She bid me stay at the door, and slept gently to the bed-side, and opening the curtain, I heard the voice of our cousin.

Dear madam, what trouble do I give! were her words.

Still talk of trouble, Miss Byron! answered Miss Grandison, with an amiable familiarity; you will not forbear — Will you promise me not to be surprised at the arrival of your cousin Reeves?

I do promise — I shall rejoice to see him.

Miss Grandison called to me. I approached, and catching my cousin's held-out hand, Thank God, thank God, best beloved of an hundred hearts! said I, that once more I behold you! that once more I see you in safe and honourable hands! — I will not tell you what we have all suffered.

No, don't, said she — You need not — But, O my cousin! I have fallen into the company of angels.

Forbear, gently patting her hand, forbear these high flights, said the kind Lady, or I shall beat my charming patient. I shall not think you in a way to be quite well, till you *descend*.

She whispered me, that the doctor had expressed fears for her head, if she were not kept quiet. Then raising her voice, Your cousin's gratitude, Mr. Reeves, is excessive. You must allow me, smiling, to beat her. When she is well, she shall talk of angels, and of what she pleases.

She

She then asked me, if I had let her friends in the country know of this shocking affair?

I had suspected Mr. Greville, I said; and had written in confidence to her uncle Selby —

O my poor grandmamma — O my good aunt Selby, and my Lucy — I hope —

Miss Grandison interposed, humorously interrupting — I will have nothing said that begins with O. Indeed, Miss Byron, Mr. Reeves, I will not trust you together — Cannot you have patience —

We both asked her pardon. My cousin desired leave to rise — But these odious cloaths, said she —

If you are well enough, child, replied Miss Grandison, you shall rise, and have no need to see those odious cloaths, as you call them. I told them Mrs. Reeves had sent her some of her cloaths. The portmanteau was ordered to be brought up.

Then Miss Grandison, sitting down on the bed by my cousin, took her hand; and, feeling her pulse, Are you sure, my patient, that you shall not suffer if you are permitted to rise? Will you be calm, serene, easy? Will you banish curiosity? Will you endeavour to avoid recollection?

I will do my endeavour, answered my cousin.

Miss Grandison then rung, and a maid-servant coming up. Jenny, said she; pray give your best assistance to my lovely patient. But be sure don't let her hurry her spirits. I will lead Mr. Reeves into my dressing-room. And when you are dressed, my dear, we will either return to you here, or expect you to join us there, at your pleasure.

And then she obligingly conducted me into her dressing-room; and excused herself for refusing to let us talk of interesting subjects. I am rejoiced, said she, to find her more sedate and composed than hitherto she has been. Her head has been greatly in danger. Her talk, for some hours, when she *did* talk, was so wild and incoherent, and she was so full of terror, on every one's coming in her sight, that I would not suffer any-body to attend her but myself.

Let me tell you, Mr. Reeves, I am as curious as you can be, to know the whole of what has befallen her. But her heart is tender and delicate. Her spirits are low; and we must not pull down with one hand, what we build up with the other: My brother also will expect a good account of my charge.

I blessed her for her goodness. And finding her desirous of knowing all that I could tell her, of our cousin's character, family, and lovers, I gave her a brief history, which extremely pleased her. Good God! said she, what a happiness is it, that such a Lady, in such a distress, should meet with a man as excellent, and as much admired, as herself! My brother, Mr. Reeves, can never marry but he must break half a score hearts. Forgive me, that I bring *him* in, whenever any good person, or thing, or action, is spoken of. Every-body, I believe, who is strongly possessed of a subject, makes everything seen, heard, or read of, that bears the least resemblance, turn into and illustrate that subject,

But here I will conclude this Letter, in order to send it by the post. Besides, I have been so much fatigued in body and mind, and my wife has also been so much disturbed in *her* mind, that I must give way to a call of rest.

If our cousin has a good day to-morrow, and no return of her fits, she proposes to be in town on Monday. I am to wait on her, and Sir Charles and his sister, at breakfast on Monday morning, and to attend her home; where there will be joy indeed, on her arrival.

Pray receive for yourself, and make for me to your Lady, and all friends, my compliments of congratulation.

I have not had either leisure or inclination to enquire after the villain, who has given us all this disturbance.

Saturday Night.

Ever, ever yours,

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

From Mr. REEVES, to GEORGE SELBY, Esq.

In Continuation.

Miss Grandison went to my cousin, to see how she bore rising, supposing her near dressed.

She soon returned to me. The most charming woman, I think, said she, I ever saw! But she trembles so, that I have persuaded her to lie down. I answered for you, that you would stay dinner.

I must beg excuse, madam. I have an excellent wife. She loves Miss Byron as her life: She will be impatient to know —

Well, well, well, say no more, Mr. Reeves: My brother has redeemed one prisoner, and his sister has taken another: And glad you may be, that it is no worse.

I bowed, and looked silly, I believe.

You

You *may* look, and beg and pray, Mr. Reeves. When you know me better, you'll find me a very whimsical creature: But you must stay to see Sir Charles. Would you go home to your wife with half your errand? She won't thank you for that, I can tell you, let her be as good a woman as the best. But, to comfort you, we give not into every modern fashion. We dine earlier, than most people of our condition. My brother, tho' in the main above singularity, will, nevertheless, in things he thinks right, be govern'd by his own rules, which are the laws of reason and convenience. You are on horseback; and, were I you, such good news as I should have to carry, considering what *might* have happened, would give me wings, and make me fly thro' the air with it.

I was equally delighted and surpris'd at her humorous raillery; but could not answer a single word. If it be midnight before you will suffer me to depart, thought I, I will not make another objection.

While this amiable Lady was thus entertaining me, we heard the trampling of horses — My brother! said she, I hope! — He comes! pardon the fondness of a sister, who speaks from sensible effects — A father and brother in one!

Sir Charles entered the room. He address'd himself to me in a most polite manner. Mr. Reeves! said he, as I understand from below — Then turning to his sister. Excuse me, Charlotte. I heard this worthy gentleman was with you: And I was impatient to know how my fair guest —

Miss Byron is in a good way, I hope, interrupted she, but very weak and low-spirited. She arose and dress'd; but I have prevail'd on her to lie down again.

Then turning to me, with a noble air, he both welcomed and congratulated me.

Sir Charles Grandison is indeed a fine figure. He is in the bloom of youth. I don't know that I have ever seen an handsomer or genteeler man. Well might his sister say, that if he married, he would break half a score hearts. O this vile Pollexfen! thought I, at the moment; Could he draw upon, has he hurt, such a man as this?

After pouring out my acknowledgements, in the name of several families, as well as in my own, I could not but enquire into the nature of the hurt he had received.

A very trifle! — My coat only was hurt, Mr. Reeves. The skin of my left shoulder raked a little, putting his hand upon it.

Thank God, said I: Thank God, said Miss Grandison — But so *near*! — O the villain! what might it have been! —

Sir Hargrave, pent up in a chariot, had great disadvantage. My reflexions on the event of yesterday, yield me the more pleasure, as I have, on enquiry, understood that he will do well again, if he will be ruled. I would not, on any account, have had his instant death to answer for. But no more of this just now. Give me the particulars of the young Lady's state of health. I left her in a very bad way. — You had advice?

Miss Grandison gave her brother an account of all that had been done; and of every-thing that had passed since he went away; as also of the character and excellencies of the Lady whom he had rescued.

I confirmed what she said in my cousin's favour; and he very gratefully thanked his sister for her care, as a man would do for one the nearest and dearest to him.

We then besought him to give an account of the glorious action, which had restored to all that knew her, the darling of our hearts.

I will relate all he said, in the first person, as nearly in his own words as possible; and will try to hit the coolness with which he told the agreeable story.

"You know, sister, said he, the call I had to town. It was happy, that I yielded to your importunity to attend you hither.

"About two miles on this side Hounslow, I saw a chariot-and-six driving at a great rate. I also had ordered Jerry to drive pretty fast.

"The coachman seemed inclined to dispute the way with mine. This occasioned a few moments stop to both. I ordered my coachman to break the way. I don't love to stand upon trifles. My horses were fresh. I had not come far.

"The curtain of the chariot we met was pulled down. I saw not who was in it. But on turning out of the way, I knew by the arms it was Sir Hargrave Pollexfen's.

"There was in it a gentleman, who immediately pulled up the canvas.

"I saw, however, before he drew it up, another person, wrapt up in a man's scarlet cloak.

"For God's sake! help, help! cried out the person: For God's sake! help!

"I or-

"I ordered my coachman to stop.

"Drive on, said the gentleman; cursing his coachman:

"Drive on when I bid you.

"Help! again cried she, but with a voice as if her mouth
"was half stopt.

"I called to my servants on horseback to stop the postillion
"of the other chariot. And I bid Sir Hargrave's coachman
"proceed at his peril.

"Sir Hargrave called out on the contrary side of the chariot
"(his canvas being still up on that next me) with vehement
"execrations to drive on.

"I alighted, and went round to the other side of the
"chariot.

"Again the Lady endeavoured to cry out. I saw Sir Har-
"grave struggle to pull over her mouth an handkerchief,
"which was tied round her head. He swore outrageously.

"The moment she beheld me, she spread out both her
"hands — For God's sake —

"Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, said I, by the arms. — You are
"engaged, I doubt, in a very bad affair.

"I *am* Sir Hargrave Pollexfen; and am carrying a fugitive
"wife — Your *own* wife, Sir Hargrave!

"Yes, by G —, said he; and she was going to elope from
"me at a damned Masquerade — See! drawing aside the cloak,
"detected in the very dress!

"O no, no, no! said the Lady —

"Proceed, coachmann, said he, and cursed and swore —

"Let me ask the Lady a question, Sir Hargrave.

"You are impertinent, Sir. Who the devil are you?

"Are you, madam, Lady Pollexfen, said I.

"O no! no! no! — was all she could say —

"Two of my servants came about me; a third held the
"head of the horse on which the postillion sat. Three of Sir
"Hargrave's approached on their horses, but seemed as if
"afraid to come too near, and parleyed together.

"Have an eye to those fellows, said I. Some base work is
"on foot. You'll presently be aided by passengers. Sirrah,
"said I to the coachman (for he lashed the horses on) proceed
"at your peril.

"Sir Hargrave then, with violent curses and threatenings,
"ordered him to drive over every one that opposed him.

"Coachman, proceed at your peril, said I. Madam, will
"you —

"O

"O Sir, Sir, Sir, relieve, help me for God's sake! I am in
 "a villain's hands! Tricked, vilely tricked, into a villain's
 "hands. Help, help, for God's sake!

"Do you, said I, to Frederick, cut the traces, if you cannot
 "otherwise stop this chariot. Bid Jerry cut the reins; and
 "then seize as many of those fellows as you can. Leave Sir
 "Hargrave to me.

"The Lady continued screaming and crying out for help.

"Sir Hargrave drew his sword, which he had held between
 "his knees in the scabbard; and then called upon his servants
 "to fire at all that opposed his progress.

"My servants, Sir Hargrave, have fire-arms as well as yours.
 "They will not dispute my orders. Don't provoke me to
 "give the word.

"Then addressing the Lady, Will you, madam, put yourself
 "into my protection?

"O yes, yes, yes, with my whole heart — Dear good Sir,
 "protect me!

"I opened the chariot-door. Sir Hargrave made a pass at
 "me. Take *that*, and be damned to you, for your insolence,
 "scoundrel! said he.

"I was aware of his thrust, and put it by; but his sword a
 "little raked my shoulder.

"My sword was in my hand, but undrawn.

"The chariot-door remaining open (I was not so ceremo-
 "nious, as to let down the foot-step to take the gentleman
 "out) I seized him by the collar before he could recover
 "himself from the pass he had made at me; and with a jerk,
 "and a kind of twist, laid him under the hind-wheel of his
 "chariot.

"I wrenched his sword from him, and snapped it, and
 "flung the two pieces over my head.

"His coachman cried out for his master. Mine threatened
 "his if he stirred. The postillion was a boy. My servant
 "had made him dismount, before he joined the other two,
 "whom I had ordered aloud to endeavour to seize (but my
 "view was only to terrify) wretches, who, knowing the bad-
 "ness of their cause, were before terrified.

"Sir Hargrave's mouth and face were very bloody. I be-
 "lieve I might hurt him with the pommel of my sword.

"One of his legs, in his sprawling, had got between the
 "spokes of his chariot-wheel. I thought that was a fortunate
 "circumstance for preventing further mischief; and charged
 "his

“his coachman not to stir with the chariot for his master’s sake.

“He cried out, curs’d, and swore. I believe he was bruised with the fall. The jerk was violent. So little able to support an offence, Sir Hargrave, upon his own principles, should not have been so ready to give it.

“I had not drawn my sword: I hope I never shall be provoked to do it in a private quarrel. I should not however, have scrupled to draw it, on such an occasion as this, had there been an absolute necessity for it.

“The Lady, though greatly terrified, had disengaged herself from the man’s cloak. I had not leisure to consider her dress; but I was struck with her figure, and more with her terror.

“I offered my hand. I thought not now of the foot-step, any more than I did before: She not of any-thing, as it seemed, but her deliverance.

“I carried the lovely creature round Sir Hargrave’s horses, and seated her in my chariot — Be assured, madam, said I, that you are in honourable hands. I will convey you to my sister, who is a young Lady of honour and virtue.

“She look’d out at one window, then at the other, in visible terror, as if fearing still Sir Hargrave. Fear nothing, said I: I will attend you in a moment. I shut the chariot-door.

“I then went backward a few paces (keeping, however, the Lady in my eye) to see what had become of my servants.

“It seems, that at their first coming up pretty near with Sir Hargrave’s horsemen, they presented their pistols.

“What shall we do, Wilkins, or Wilson, or some such name, said one of Sir Hargrave’s men to another, all three of them on their defence? Fly for it, answered the fellow. We may swing for this. I see our master down. There may be murder.

“Their consciences put them to flight.

“My servants pursued them a little way; but were returning to support their master, just as I had put the Lady into my chariot.

“I saw Sir Hargrave at a distance, on his legs, supported by his coachman. He limped; leaned his whole weight upon his servant; and seemed to be in agonies.

“I bid one my servants tell him who I was.

“He

"He cursed me, and threatened vengeance. He cursed my
 "servant; and still more outrageously his own scoundrels, as
 "he called them.

"I then stept back to my chariot.

"Miss Byron had, thro' terror, sunk down at the bottom
 "of it; where she lay panting, and could only say, on my
 "approach, Save me! Save me!

"I re-assured her. I lifted her on the seat; and brought
 "her to my sister. And what followed, I suppose, Charlotte,
 "bowing to her, you have told Mr. Reeves.

We were both about to break out in grateful applauses;
 but Sir Charles, as if designing to hinder us, proceeded.

"You see, Mr. Reeves, what an easy conquest this was.
 "You see what a small degree of merit falls to my share.
 "The violator's conscience was against him. The consciences
 "of his fellows were on my side. My own servants are honest
 "worthy men. They love their master. In a good cause I
 "would set any three of them against six who were engaged
 "in a bad one. Vice is the greatest coward in the world,
 "when it knows it will be resolutely opposed. And what
 "have good men, engaged in a right cause, to fear?

What an admirable man is Sir Charles Grandison! — Thus
 thinking! Thus acting!

I explained to Sir Charles who this Wilson was, whom
 the others consulted, and were directed by; and what an
 implement in this black transaction.

To what other man's protection in the world, Mr. Selby,
 could our kinswoman have been obliged, and so little mischief
 followed?

Sir Hargrave, it seems, returned back to town. What a
 recreant figure, my dear Mr. Selby, must he make, even to
 himself! — A villain!

I long to have Miss Byron's account of this horrid affair. —
 God grant, that it may not be such a one, as will lay us under
 a necessity — But as our cousin has a great notion of female
 delicacy — I know not what I would say — We must have
 patience a little while longer.

Miss Grandison's eyes shone with pleasure all the time her
 brother was giving his relation.

I can only say, my brother, said she, when he had done.
 that you have rescued an angel of a woman; and you have
 made me as happy by it, as yourself.

I have

I have a generous sister, Mr. Reeves, said Sir Charles.

Till I knew my brother, Mr. Reeves, as I now know him, I was an inconsiderate, unreflecting girl. Good and evil which immediately affected not myself, were almost alike indifferent to me. But he has awakened in me a capacity to enjoy the true pleasure that arises from a benevolent action.

Depreciate not, my Charlotte, your own worth. Absence, Mr. Reeves, endears. I have been long abroad. Not much above a year returned: But when you know us better, you will find I have a partial sister.

Mr. Reeves will not then think me so. But I will go and see how my fair patient does.

She went accordingly to my cousin.

O Sir Charles, said I, what an admirable woman is Miss Grandison!

My sister Charlotte, Mr. Reeves, is indeed, an excellent woman. I think myself happy in her. But I tell her sometimes, that I have still a *more* excellent sister. And it is no small instance of Charlotte's greatness of mind, that she herself will allow me to say so.

Just then came in the Ladies. The two charming creatures entered together, Miss Grandison supporting my trembling cousin: But she had first acquainted her, that she would find Sir Charles in *her* dressing-room.

She looked indeed lovely, tho' wan, at her first entrance: But a fine glow overspread her cheeks, at the sight of her deliverer.

Sir Charles approached her, with an air of calmness and serenity, for fear of giving her emotion. She cast her eyes upon him, with a look of the most respectful gratitude.

I will not oppress my fair guest with many words: But permit me to congratulate you, as I hope I may, on your recovered spirits — Allow me, madam —

And he took her almost motionless hand, and conducted her to an easy chair that had been set for her. She sat down, and would have said something; but only bowed to Sir Charles, to Miss Grandison, and me; and reclined her head against the cheek of the chair.

Miss Grandison held her salts to her.

She took them into her own hands, and smelling to them, raised her head a little: Forgive me, madam! Pardon me, Sir — O my cousin, to me — How can I — So oppressed with obligations! — Such goodness! —

And

And then she again reclined her head, as giving up hopelessly the effort she made to express her gratitude.

You must not, madam, said Sir Charles, sitting down by her, over-rate a common benefit. — Dear Miss Byron (Permit me to address myself to you, as of long acquaintance) by what Mr. Reeves has told my sister, and both have told me, I must think yesterday one of the happiest days of my life. I am sorry that our acquaintance has begun so much at your cost: But you must let us turn his evil appearance into real good. I have two sisters: The world produces not more worthy women. Let me henceforth boast that I have three: And shall I not then have reason to rejoice in the event that has made so lovely an addition to my family?

Then taking her passive hand with the tenderness of a truly affectionate brother, consoling a sister in calamity, and taking his sister's, and joining both; Shall I not, madam, present my Charlotte to a sister? And will you not permit me to claim as a brother under that relation? — Our Miss Byron's Christian name, Mr. Reeves?

Harriet, Sir.

My sister Harriet, receive and acknowledge your Charlotte. My Charlotte —

Miss Grandison arose and saluted my cousin; who looked at Sir Charles with reverence, as well as gratitude; at Miss Grandison with delight; and at me with eyes lifted up. And, after a little struggle for speech; How shall I bear this goodness! said she — This indeed is bringing good out of evil! — Did I not say, my cousin, that I was fallen into the company of angels?

I was afraid she would have fainted.

We must endeavour, Mr. Reeves, said Sir Charles to me, to lessen the sense *our* Miss Byron has of her past danger, in order to bring down to reasonable limits the notion *she* has of her obligation for a common relief.

Miss Grandison ordered a few drops on sugar. — You must be orderly, my sister Harriet, said she. Am I not your elder sister? *My* elder sister makes me do what she pleases.

Oh! madam! said my cousin —

Call me not *madam*; call me *your Charlotte*. My brother has given me and himself a sister; — Will you not own me?

My lips and my heart, I will be so bold as to say, ever went together: But how — And yet so sweetly invited, My — My — My Charlotte (withdrawing her hand from Sir Charles,

and

and clasping both her arms round Miss Grandison's neck,) take your Harriet, person and mind — May I be found worthy, on proof, of all this goodness!



I stayed to dine with this amiable brother and sister. My cousin exerted herself, to go down, and sat at table for one half-hour: But changing countenance, once or twice, as she sat, Miss Grandison would attend her up, and make her lie down. I took leave of her, at her quitting the table.

On Monday I hope to see her once more among us.

If our dear Miss Byron cannot write, you will perhaps have one Letter more, my dear Mr. Selby, from

Your ever-affectionate

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Mr. REEVES. In Continuation.

Monday Night, Feb. 20.

I will write one more Letter, my dear cousin Selby, and then I will give up my pen to our beloved cousin.

I got to Colnebrooke by nine this morning. I had the pleasure to find our Miss Byron recovered beyond my hopes. She had a very good night on Saturday; and all Sunday, she said, was a cordial day to her from morning till night; and her night was quiet and happy.

Miss Grandison staid at home yesterday to keep my cousin company. Sir Charles passed the greatest part of the day in the library. The two Ladies were hardly ever separated. My cousin expresses herself in raptures whenever she speaks of this brother and sister. Miss Grandison, she says (and indeed every one must see it) is one of the frankest and most communicative of women. Sir Charles appears to be one of the most unreserved of men, as well as one of the most polite. He makes not his guest uneasy with his civilities: But you see freedom and ease in his whole deportment; and the stranger cannot doubt but Sir Charles will be equally pleased with freedom and ease, in return. I had an encouraging proof of the justness of this observation this morning from him, as we sat at breakfast. I had expressed myself, occasionally, in such a manner, as shewed more respect than freedom: My dear Mr. Reeves, said he, like minds will be intimate at first sight. Receive me early into the list of your friends; I have already numbered you among mine. I should think amiss of myself,

G

if

if so good a man as I am assured Mr. Reeves is, should by his distance shew a diffidence of me, that would not permit his mind to mingle with mine.

Miss Grandison, my cousin says, put her on relating to her, her whole history; and the histories of the several persons and families to whom she is related.

Miss Byron concluding as well as I, that Sir Charles would rather take his place in the coach than go on horseback to town; and being so happily recovered, as not to give us apprehension about her bearing tolerably the little journey; I kept my horse in our return, and Sir Charles went in the coach. This motion coming from Miss Byron, I raillied her upon it when I got her home: But she won't forgive me, if she knows that I told you, whose the motion was. And yet the dear creature's eyes sparkled with pleasure when she had carried her point.

I was at home near half an hour before the coach arrived; and was a welcome guest.

My dear Mrs. Reeves told me she had expected our arrival before dinner, and hoped Sir Charles and his sister would dine with us. I hoped so too, I told her.

I found there Lady Betty and Miss Clements, a favourite of us all, both impatiently waiting to see my cousin.

Don't be jealous, Mr. Reeves, said my wife, if after what I have heard of Sir Charles Grandison, and what he has done for us, I run to him with open arms.

I give you leave, my dear, to love him, replied I; and to express your Love in what manner you please.

I have no doubt, said Lady Betty, that I shall break my heart, if Sir Charles takes not very particular notice of me.

He shall have my prayers as well as my praises, said Miss Clements.

She is acquainted with the whole shocking affair.

When the coach stopt, and the bell rung, the servants contended who should first run to the door. I welcomed them at the coach. Sir Charles handed out Miss Byron, I Miss Grandison; Sally, said my cousin, to her raptured maid, take care of Mrs. Jenny.

Sir Charles was received by Mrs. Reeves, as I expected. She was almost speechless with joy. He saluted her: But I think, as I tell her, the first motion was hers. He was then obliged to go round; and my cousin, I do assure you, looked as if she would not wish to have been neglected.

As

As soon as the Ladies could speak, they poured out their blessings and thanks to him, and to Miss Grandison; whom, with a most engaging air, he presented to each Lady; and she, as engagingly, saluted her sister Harriet by that tender relation, and congratulated them, and Miss Byron, and herself, upon it; kindly bespeaking a family relation for herself, thro' her dear Miss Byron, were her words.

When we were seated, my wife and Lady Betty wanted to enter into the particulars of the happy deliverance, in praise of the deliverer: But Sir Charles interrupting them, My dear Mrs. Reeves, said he, you cannot be too careful of this jewel. Every-thing may be trusted to her own discretion; but how can we well blame the man who would turn thief for so rich a treasure? I do assure you, my sister Harriet, (Do you know, Mrs. Reeves, that I have found my third sister?) that if Sir Hargrave will repent, I will forgive him for the sake of the temptation.

Mrs. Reeves was pleased with this address, and has talked of it since.

I never can forgive him, Sir, said Miss Byron, were it but —

That he has laid you under such an obligation, said Miss Grandison, patting her hand with her fan, as she sat over-against her: But hush, child! You said that before! — And then turning to Mrs. Reeves. Has not our new-found sister a very proud heart, Mrs. Reeves?

And, dearest Miss Grandison, replied my smiling, delighted cousin, did you not ask that question before?

I did, child, I did, but not of Mrs. Reeves. — A compromise, however — Do you talk no more of *obligation*, and I'll talk no more of *pride*.

Charlotte justly chides her Harriet, said Sir Charles. What must the man have been that had declined his aid in a distress so alarming? Not one word more therefore upon this subject.

We were all disappointed, that this amiable brother and sister excused themselves from dining with us. All I mean of our own family; for Lady Betty and Miss Clements, not being able to stay, were glad *they* did not.

They took leave, amidst a thousand grateful blessings and acknowledgements; Miss Grandison promising to see her sister Harriet very soon again; and kindly renewing her wishes of intimacy.

When they went away, There goes your heart, Miss Byron, said Mrs. Reeves.

True, answered Miss Byron, if my heart have no place in it for any-thing but gratitude, as I believe it has not.

Miss Grandison, added she, is the most agreeable of women —

And Sir Charles, rejoined Mrs. Reeves, archly, is the most *dis*-agreeable of men.

Forbear, cousin, replied Miss Byron, and blushed.

Well, well, said Lady Betty, you need not, my dear, be ashamed, if it be so.

Indeed you need not, joined in Miss Clements; I never saw a finer man in my life. Such a Lover, if one *might* have him —

If, if — replied Miss Byron — But till *if* is out of the question, should there not be such a thing as discretion, Miss Clements?

No doubt of it, returned that young Lady: and if it *be* to be shewn by any woman on earth, where there is such a man as this in the question, and in such circumstances, it must be by Miss Byron.

Miss Byron was not so thoroughly recovered, but that her spirits began to flag. We made her retire, and at her request excused her coming down to dinner.

I told you I had accepted of the offer made by Lady Betty, when we were in dreadful uncertainty, that her steward should make further enquiries about the people at Paddington. Nothing worth mentioning has occurred from those enquiries; except confirming, that the widow and her daughters are not people of bad characters. In all likelihood they thought they should entitle themselves to the thanks of all Miss Byron's friends, when the marriage was completed with a man of Sir Hargrave's fortune.

This vile wretch, I hear, keeps his room; and it is whispered that he is more than half-crazed; inasmuch that his very attendants are afraid to go near him. We know not the nature of his hurt; but hurt he is, tho' in a fair way of recovery. He threatens, it seems, destruction to Sir Charles the moment he is able to go abroad. God preserve one of the worthiest and best of men!

Sir Hargrave has turned off all the servants, we are told, that attended him on his shocking but happily-disappointed enterprize.

Miss Byron intends to write to her Lucy by tomorrow's post (if she continue mending) an ample account of all that

the

she suffered from the date of her last Letter, to the hour of her happy deliverance.

Sir Rowland — But let my cousin write to you upon that and other matters. She knows what to say on that subject better than I do.

Mean time I heartily congratulate every one of the dear family upon the return and safety of the darling of so many hearts; and remain, dear Mr. Selby,

Your most faithful and obedient Servant,

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Miss BYRON, to Miss SELBY.

Monday, Feb. 20.

Is it again given me to write to you, my Lucy! and in you, to all my revered friends! To write with cheerfulness! To call upon you all to rejoice with me! — God be praised!

What dangers have I escaped! How have my head and my heart been affected! I dare not, as yet, think of the anguish you all endured for me.

With what wretched levity did I conclude my last Letter! Giddy creature, that I was, vain and foolish!

But let me begin my sad story. Your impatience all this while must be too painful. Only let me premise, that gaily as I boasted, when I wrote to you so conceitedly, as it might seem, of my dress, and of conquests, and I know not what nonsense, I took no pleasure at the place, in the shoals of fools that swam after me. I despised myself and them. *Despised!* was shocked at both.

Two Lucifers were among them: But the worst, the very worst Lucifer of all, appeared in a Harlequin dress. He hopped and skipt, and played the fool about me; and at last told me, He knew Miss Byron; and that he was, as he called himself, the despised, the rejected, Sir Hargrave Pollexfen.

He behaved, however, with complaisance; and I had no apprehension of what I was to suffer from his villainy.

Mrs. Reeves has told you, that he saw me into the chair provided for me by my vile new servant.

Mr. Reeves has told you every-thing about the chair, and the chairmen. How can I describe the misgivings of my heart when I first began to suspect treachery! But when I undrew the curtains, and found myself further deluded by another false heart, whose help I implored, and in the midst

of fields, and soon after the lights put out, I pierced the night air with my screams, till I could scream no more. I was taken out in fits: And when I came a little to my senses, I found myself on a bed, three women about me, one at my head, holding a bottle to my nose, my nostrils sore with hartshorn, and a strong smell of burnt feathers: but no man near me.

Where am I? Who are you, madam? And who are you? Where am I? Were the questions I first asked.

The women were a mother and two daughters. The mother answered, You are not in bad hands.

God grant you say truth! said I.

No harm is intended you; only to make you one of the happiest of women. We would not be concerned in a bad action.

I hope not: I hope not: Let me engage your pity, madam. You seem to be a mother. These young gentlewomen, I presume, are your daughters. Save me from ruin; I beseech you, madam: Save me from ruin, as you would your daughters.

These young women *are* my daughters. They are sober and modest women. No ruin is intended you. One of the richest and noblest men in England is your admirer. He dies for you. He assures me that he intends honourable marriage to you. You are not engaged, he says: And you must and you shall be his. You may save murder, madam, if you consent. He resolves to be the death of any Lover whom you encourage.

This must be the vile contrivance of Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, immediately cried I out: Is it not? Is it not? Tell me; I beg of you to tell me.

I arose, and sat on the bed-side; and at that moment in came the vile, vile Sir Hargrave.

I screamed out. He threw himself at my feet. I reclined my head on the bosom of the elderly person, and by hartshorn and water they had much ado to keep me out of a fit. Had he not withdrawn; had he kept in my sight; I should certainly have fainted. But holding up my head, and seeing only the women, I revived: And began to pray, to beg, to offer rewards, if they would facilitate my escape; or procure my safety: But then came in again the hated man.

I beg of you, Miss Byron, said he, with an air of greater haughtiness than before, to make yourself easy, and hear what

what I have to say. It is in your own choice, in your own power, to be what you please, and to make *me* what you please. Do not therefore needlessly terrify yourself. You see I am a determined man. Ladies, you may withdraw —

Not and leave me here! — And as they went out, I pushed by the mother, and between the daughters, and followed the foremost into the parlour; and then sunk down on my knees, wrapping my arms about her: O save me! save me! said I.

The vile wretch entered. I left her, and kneeled to him, I knew not what I did. I remember, I said, wringing my hands, If you have mercy; If you have compassion; let me now, now, I beseech you, Sir, this moment, experience your mercy.

He gave them some motion, I suppose, the withdraw (for by that time the widow and the other daughter were in the parlour;) and they all three retired.

I have besought *you*, madam, and on my *knees* too, to shew *me* mercy; but none would you shew me, inexorable Miss Byron! Kneel, if you will; in your turn kneel, supplicate, pray; you cannot be more in earnest, than I was. Now are the tables turned.

Barbarous man! said I, rising from my knees. My spirit was raised: But it as instantly subsided. I beseech you, Sir Hargrave, in a quite frantic way, wringing my hands, and coming near him, and then running to the window, and then to the door (without meaning to go out at either, had they been open; for whither could I go?) and then again to him; Be not, I beseech you, Sir Hargrave, cruel to me. I never was cruel to any-body. You know I was civil to you; I was *very* civil —

Yes, yes, and *very* determined. You called me no names. I call you none, Miss Byron. You were very civil. Hitherto I have not been uncivil. But remember, madam — *I don't hit your fancy*, madam!

Can you be a malicious man, Sir Hargrave?

You don't like my morals, madam!

And is this the way, Sir Hargrave, are these the means you take, to convince me that I ought to like them?

Well, madam, you shall prove the mercy in me you would not shew. You shall see that I cannot be a malicious man; a revengeful man: And yet you have raised my pride. You shall find me a *moral* man.

Then, Sir Hargrave, will I bless you from the bottom of my heart!

But you know what will justify me in every eye for the steps I have taken. Be mine, madam. Be legally mine. I offer you my honest hand. Consent to be Lady Pollexfen — No punishment, I hope — Or, take the consequence.

What, Sir! justify by so poor, so *very* poor a compliance, steps that you have so basely taken! — Take my life, Sir: But my hand and my heart are my own: They never shall be separated.

I arose from my knees, trembling; and threw myself upon the window-seat, and wept bitterly.

He came to me. I looked on this side and on that, wishing to avoid him.

You cannot fly, madam. You are securely mine: And mine still more securely you shall be. Don't provoke me: Don't make me desperate. By all that's Good and Holy —

He cast his eyes at my feet; then at my face; then threw himself at my feet, and embraced my knees with his odious arms.

I was terrified. I screamed. In ran one of the daughters — Good Sir! Pray, Sir! — Did you not say you would be honourable?

Her mother followed her in — Sir, Sir! In my house —

Thank God, thought I, the people here are better than I had reason to apprehend they were. But, O my Lucy, they seemed to believe, that marriage would make amends for every outrage.

Here let me conclude this Letter. I have a great deal more to say.

Miss BYRON. In Continuation.

What a plague, said the wretch to the women, do you come in for? I thought you knew your own Sex better than to mind a woman's squalling. They are always ready, said the odious fellow, to put us in mind of the occasion we ought to give them for crying out. I have not offered the least rudeness —

I hope not, Sir. I hope my house — So sweet a creature —

Dear blessed, blessed woman (frantic with terror, and mingled joy, to find myself in better hands than I expected — Standing up, and then sitting down, I believe at every sentence)

Protect

Protect me! Save me! Be my advocate! Indeed I have not deserved this treacherous treatment. Sir Hargrave may have better and richer wives than I: Pray prevail upon him to spare me to my friends, for *their* sake. I will forgive him for all he has done.

Nay, dear Lady, if Sir Hargrave will make you his lawful and true wife, there can be no harm done, surely.

I will, I will, Mrs. Awbery, said he. I have promised, and I will perform. But if she stand in her own light — She expects nothing from my *morals* — If she stand in her own light; and looked fiercely —

God protect me! said I: God protect me!

The gentleman is without, Sir, said the woman. O how my heart at that moment seemed to be at my throat! What gentleman! thought I: Some one come to save me! — O no! —

And instantly entered the most horrible-looking clergyman that I ever beheld.

This, as near as I can recollect, is his description — A vast tall, big-boned, spay footed man. A shabby gown; as shabby a wig; an huge red pimply face; and a nose that hid half of it, when he looked on one side, and he seldom looked fore-right when I saw him. He had a dog's-eared common-prayer book in his hand, which once had been gilt; opened, horrid sight! at the page of matrimony!

Yet I was so intent upon making a friend, when a man, a clergyman, appeared, that I heeded not, at his entrance, his frightful visage, as I did afterwards. I pushed Sir Hargrave, turning him half round with my vehemence, and made Mrs. Awberry totter; and throwing myself at the clergyman's feet, Man of God, said I, my hands clasped, and held up; Gentleman! Worthy man! — A good clergyman must be all this! — If ever you had children! save a poor creature! — Save me from violence! Give not your aid to sanctify a base action.

The man snuffed his answer through his nose. He squinted upon me, and took my clasped hands, which were buried in his huge hand: Rise, madam! Kneel not to me! No harm is intended you. One question, only: Who is that gentleman before me, in the silver-laced cloaths? What is his name?

He is Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, Sir: A wicked, a very wicked man, for all he looks so!

The vile wretch stood smiling, and enjoying my distress.

O madam! A very hon-our-able man! bowing, like a sycophant, to Sir Hargrave.

And who pray, madam, are you? What is your name?

Harriet Byron, Sir: A poor innocent creature, (looking at my dress) though I make such a vile appearance — Good Sir, your pity! And I sunk down again at his feet.

Of Northamptonshire, madam? You are a single woman! Your uncle's name —

Is Selby, Sir. A very good man — I will reward you, Sir, as the most grateful heart —

All is fair: All is above-board: All is as it was represented. I am above bribes, madam. You will be the happiest of women before day-break — *Good people!* — The three women advanced.

Then I saw what an ugly wretch he was!

Sir Hargrave advanced. The two horrid creatures raised me between them. Sir Hargrave took my struggling hand: And then I saw another ill-looking man enter the room, who I suppose was to give me to the hated man.

Dearly beloved, began to read the snuffling monster —

O my Lucy! Does not your heart ache for your Harriet? Mine has seemed to turn over and over, round and round, I don't know how, at the recital. — It was ready to choke me at the time.

I must break off for a few minutes.

Miss BYRON. In Continuation.

I was again like one frantic. Read no more! said I; and in my phrensy, dashed the book out of the minister's hand, if a minister he was. I beg your pardon, Sir, said I; but you must read no further. I am basely betrayed hither. I cannot, I will not, be his.

Proceed, proceed, said Sir Hargrave, taking my hand by force; virago as she is, I will own her for my wife — Are you the gentle, the civil Miss Byron, madam? looking sneeringly in my face.

Alas! my Lucy, I was no virago: I was in a perfect phrensy: But it was not an unhappy phrensy; since in all probability it kept me from falling into fits; and fits, the villain had said, should not save me.

Dearly beloved, again snuffed the wretch. O my Lucy! I shall never love these words. How may odious circumstances

ces invert the force of the kindest words! Sir Hargrave still detained my struggling hand.

I stamped, and threw myself to the length of my arm, as he held my hand. *No dearly beloved's*, said I. I was just beside myself. What to say, what to do, I knew not.

The cruel wretch laughed at me; *No dearly beloved's!* repeated he: Very comical, faith! and laughed again: But proceed, proceed, doctor.

We are gathered together here in the sight of God, read he on.

This affected me still more. I adjure you, Sir, to the minister, by that God in whose sight, you read, we are gathered together, that you proceed no further. I adjure you, Sir Hargrave, in the same tremendous Name, that you stop further proceedings. My life take: With all my heart, take my life: But my hand never, never, will I join with yours.

Proceed, doctor: Doctor, pray proceed, said the vile Sir Hargrave.

The man who stood aloof (the sliest, sodden-faced creature I ever saw) came nearer — To the question, doctor, and to my part, if you please! — Am not I her father? — To the question, doctor, if you please! — The gentlewomen will prepare her for what is to follow.

O thou *man!* Of heart the most obdurate and vile! And will ye, looking at every person, one hand held up (for still the vile man griped the other quite benumbed hand in his iron paw) and adjuring each, Will ye see this violence done to a poor young creature? — A soul, gentlewomen, you may have to answer for. *I can* die. Never, never, will I be his.

Let us women talk to the Lady by ourselves, Sir Hargrave. Pray your honour, let us talk to her by ourselves.

Ay, ay, ay, said the parson, by all means: Let the Ladies talk to one another, Sir. She may be brought to consider.

He let go my hand. The widow took it. And was leading me out of the room — Not up stairs, I hope, madam, said I.

You shan't then, said she. Come, Sally; come, Deb; let us women go out together.

They led me into a little room adjoining to the parlour: And then, my spirits subsiding, I thought I should have fainted away. I had more hartshorn and water poured down my throat.

When

When they had brought me a little to myself, they pleaded with me Sir Hargrave's great estate. — What are riches to me? They cannot purchase peace of mind: I want no riches.

They pleaded his honourable Love — I my invincible Aversion.

He was a handsome man — The most odious in my eyes of the human species. Never, never, should my consent be had to sanctify such a baseness.

My danger! And that they should not be able to save me from worse treatment.

How! — *Not able!* — Ladies, madam, is not this your own house? Cannot you raise a neighbourhood? Have you no neighbours? A thousand pounds will I order to be paid into your hands for a present before the week is out; I pledge my honour for the payment; if you will but save me from a violence, that no worthy woman can see offered to a distressed young creature! — A thousand pounds! — Dear Ladies! Only to save me, and see me safe to my friends!

The wretches in the next room, no doubt, heard all that passed. In at that moment came Sir Hargrave: Mrs. Awberry, said he, with a visage swelled with malice, young Ladies, we keep you up; we disturb you. Pray retire to your own rest: Leave me to talk with this perverse woman. She is mine.

Pray, Sir Hargrave, said Mrs. Awberry —

Leave her to *me*, I say: — Miss Byron, you *shall* be mine. Your Grevilles, madam, your Fenwicks, your Ormes, when they know the pains and the expence I have been at, to secure you, shall confess me their superior — Shall confess —

In wickedness, in cruelty, Sir, you are every man's superior.

You talk of cruelty, Miss Byron! triumphing over scores of prostrate Lovers, madam! You remember your treatment of me, madam! kneeling, like an abject wretch, at your feet! Kneeling for pity! But no pity could touch your heart, madam! — Ungrateful, proud girl! — Yet am I not humbling you: Take notice of that: I am not humbling you: I am proposing to exalt you, madam.

Vile, vile, debasement! said I.

Madam, *pray*, madam, said the widow to me, consider what you are about, and whom you refuse. Can you have a handsomer man? Can you have a man of a greater fortune? Sir Hargrave means nothing but what is honourable. You are in his power —

In

In *his* power, madam! returned I: I am in *yours*. You are mistress of this house. I claim the protection of it. Have you not neighbours? *Your* protection I put myself under. Then clasping my arms about her, Lock me up from him till you can have help to secure to you the privilege of your own house; and deliver me safe to my friends, and I will share my fortune with your two daughters.

The wicked man took the mother and youngest daughter each by her hand, after he had disengaged the former from my clasping arms, and led them to the door. The elder followed them of her own accord. They none of them struggled against going. I begged, prayed, besought them not to go; and, when they did, would have thrust myself out with them. But the wretch, in shutting them out, squeezed me dreadfully, as I was half in, half out; and my nose gushed out with blood.

I screamed: He seemed frightened: But instantly recovering myself — So, so, you have done your worst! — You have killed me, I hope. I was out of breath, my stomach was very much pressed, and one of my arms was bruised. I have the marks still; for he clapt to the door with violence, not knowing, to do him justice, that I was so forward in the door-way.

I was in dreadful pain. I talked half wildly, I remember. I threw myself in a chair — So, so, you have killed me, I hope — Well, now I hope, now I hope, you are satisfied. Now may you mean over the poor creature you have destroyed: For he expressed great tenderness and consternation; and I, for my part, felt such pains in my bosom, that having never felt such before, I really thought I was bruised to death: Repeating my foolish So, so. — But I forgive you, said I — Only, Sir, call to the gentlewomen, Sir — Retire, Sir, Let me have my own Sex only about me. My head swam; my eyes failed me; and I fainted quite away.

Miss BYRON. In Continuation.

I understood afterwards that he was in the most dreadful consternation. He had fastened the door upon me and himself; and for a few moments was not enough present to himself to open it. Yet crying out upon his God to have mercy upon him, and running about the room, the women hastily rapped at the door. Then he ran to it, opened it, curied himself, and besought them to recover me, if possible.

They

They said I had death in my face: They lamented over me: My nose had done bleeding: But, careful of his own safety in the midst of his terror, he took my bloody handkerchief; if I did not recover, he said, *that* should not appear against him; and he hasten'd into the next room, and thrust it into the fire; by which were sitting, it seems, the minister and his helper, over some burnt brandy.

O gentlemen! cried the wretch, nothing can be done to-night. Take this; and gave them money. The Lady is in a fit. I wish you well home.

The younger daughter reported this to me afterwards, and what follows: They had desired the maid, it seems, to bring them more firing, and a jug of ale; and they would sit in the chimney-corner, they said, till peep of day: But the same young woman who was taken off from her errand, to assist me, finding me, as they all thought, not likely to recover, ran in to them, and declared, that the Lady was dead, certainly dead; and what, said she, will become of us all? This terrified the two men. They said, It was then time for them to be gone. Accordingly, taking each of them another dram, they snatched up their hats and sticks, and away they hurried; hoping, the doctor said, that, as they were innocent, and only meant to serve the gentleman, their names, whatever happened, would not be called in question.

When I came a little to myself, I found the three women only with me. I was in a cold sweat, all over shivering. There was no fire in that room: They led me into the parlour, which the two men had quitted; and sat me down in an elbow chair; for I could hardly stand, or support myself; and chafed my temples with Hungary-water.

The mother and elder sister left me soon after, and went to Sir Hargrave. I can only guess at the result of their deliberations by what followed.

The younger sister, with compassionate frankness, answered all my questions, and let me know all the above particulars. Yet she wonder'd that I could refuse so handsome and so rich a man as Sir Hargrave.

We were broken in upon, as I was intending to ask more questions when the elder sister called out the younger; And instantly came in Sir Hargrave.

He took a chair, and sat down by me, one leg thrown over the knee of the other; his elbow upon that knee, and his hand supporting his bow'd-down head; biting his lips; looking at me,

me, then from me, then at me again, five or six times, as in malice.

At last I broke silence. I thought I would be as mild as I could, and not provoke him to do me further mischief. Well have you done, Sir Hargrave, to commit such a violence upon a poor young creature that never did nor thought you evil!

I paused. He was silent.

What distraction have you given to my poor cousin Reeves's! How my heart bleeds for them!

I stopt. He was still silent.

I hope, Sir, you are sorry for the mischief you have done me; and for the pain you have given to my friends! — I hope; Sir —

Curfed! said he.

I stopt, thinking he would go on: But he said no more; only changing his posture; and then resuming it.

These people, Sir, seem to be honest people. I hope you designed only to terrify me. Your bringing me into no worse company is an assurance to me that you meant better, than —

Devils all! interrupted he —

I thought he was going on; but he grinned, shook his head, and then again reclined it upon his hand.

I forgive you, Sir, the pain you have given me. — But my friends — As soon as day breaks (and I hope that is not far off) I will get the women to let my cousin Reeves —

Then up he started — Miss Byron, said he, you are a *woman*; a *true* woman — And held up his hand, clenched. I knew not what to think of his intention.

Miss Byron, proceeded he, after a pause, you are the most consummate hypocrite that I ever knew in my life: And yet I thought that the best of you all could fall into fits and swoonings whenever you pleased.

I was now silent. I trembled.

Damned fool! ass! blockhead! *woman's* fool! — I could *curse* myself for sending away the parson. I thought I had known something of women's tricks — But yet your arts, your hypocrisy, shall not serve you, madam. What I failed in *here*, shall be done *elsewhere*.

I wept. I *could not* then speak.

Can't you go into fits again? Can't you? said the barbarian.

God deliver me, prayed I to myself, from the hands of this madman!

I arose,

I arose, and as the candle stood near the glass, I saw in it my vile figure, in this abominable habit, to which, till then, I had paid little attention. O how scorned I myself!

Pray, Sir Hargrave, said I, let me *beg* that you will not terrify me further. I will forgive you for all you have hitherto done, and place it to my own account, as a proper punishment for consenting to be thus marked for a vain and foolish creature. Your abuse, Sir, give me leave to say, is low and unmanly: But in the light of a punishment I will own it to be all deserved: And let here my punishment end, and I will thank you, and forgive you with my whole heart.

Your fate is *determined*, Miss Byron.

Just then came in a servant-maid with a capuchin, who whispered something to him: To which he answered, *That's well* —

He took the capuchin; the maid withdrew; and approached me with it. I started, trembled, and was ready to faint. I caught hold of the back of the elbow chair.

Your fate is determined, madam, repeated the savage — Here, put this on — Now fall into fits again — Put this on!

Pray, Sir Hargrave —

And pray, Miss Byron: What has not been completed here, shall be completed in a safer place; and that in my own way — Put this on, I tell you. Your compliance may yet befriend you.

Where are the gentlewomen? — Where are —

Gone to rest, madam — John, Frank, called he out.

In came two men-servants.

Pray, Sir Hargrave — Lord protect me — Pray, Sir Hargrave — Where are the gentlewomen? — Lord protect me!

Then running to the door, against which one of the men stood — Man, stand out of the way, said I. But he did not. He only bowed.

I called as loud as my fears would let me.

At last come in the elder sister — O madam! good young gentlewoman! I am glad you are come, said I.

And so am I, said the wicked man. — Pray, Miss Sally, put on this Lady's capuchin.

Lord bless me, for why? for what? I have no capuchin!

I would not permit her to put it on, as she would have done.

The savage then wrapt his arms about mine, and made me so very sensible by his force, of the pain I had had by the squeeze of the door, that I could not help crying out. The young

Now, Miss Byron, said he, make yourself easy; or command a fit, it is all one! My end will be better served by the latter. — Miss Sally, give orders.

The fellow had a read cloak on his arm. His barbarous master took it from him. To your posts, said he.

He threw the cloak about me.

I called out to her. I called out for her mother; for the other sister. I besought him to let me say but six words to the widow.

Men on horseback were about it. I thought *that* Wilton was one of them; and so it proved. Sir Hargrave said to that fellow, You know what tale to tell, if you meet with impertinents. And in he came himself.

Still I screamed for help; and he put his hand before my mouth, tho' vowing honour, and such sort of stuff; and, with his unmanly roughness, made me bite my lip. And away lashed the coachman with your poor Harriet.

As the charriot drove by houses, I cried out for help once or twice, at setting out. But under pretence of preventing my taking cold, he tied an handkerchief over my face, head, and mouth, having first muffled me up in the cloak; pressing

against my arm with his whole weight, so that I had not my hands at liberty. And when he had done, he seized them, and held them both in his left hand, while his right-arm thrown round me, kept me fast on the seat. And except that now-and-then my struggling head gave me a little opening, I was blinded.

But at one place on the road, just after I screamed, and made another effort to get my hands free, I heard voices, and immediately the chariot stopt. Then how my heart was filled with hope! But, alas! it was but momentary. I heard one of his men say (that Wilson I believe) The best of husbands, I assure you, Sir; and she is the worst of wives.

I screamed again. Ay, scream and be d—n'd, I heard said in a stranger's voice, if that be the case. Poor gentleman! I pity him with all my heart. And immediately the coachman drove on again.

The vile wretch laughed; That's *you*, my dear, and hugged me round. *You* are the d—n'd wife. And again he laughed: By my soul I am a charming contriver!

I was ready to faint several times. I begged for air: And when we were in an open road, and I suppose there was nobody in sight, he vouchsafed to pull down the blinding handkerchief, but kept it over my mouth; so that except now-and-then, that I struggled it aside with my head I could only make a murmuring kind of noise.

The curtain of the fore-glass was pulled down, and generally the canvas on both sides drawn up. But I was sure to be made acquainted when we came near houses, by his care again to blind and stifle me up.

A little before we were met by my deliverer, I had, by getting one hand free, unmuffled myself so far as to see (as I had guessed once or twice before by the stone pavements) that we were going thro' a town; and then I again vehemently screamed. But he had the cruelty to thrust an handkerchief into my mouth, so that I was almost strangled; and my mouth was hurt, and is still sore, with that and his former violence of the like nature.

Indeed, he now-and-then made apologies for the cruelty, to which, he said, he was compelled, by my invincible obstinacy, to have recourse. I was sorely hurt, he said, to be the wife of a man of his consideration!

At one place the chariot drove out of the road, over rough ways, and little hillocks, as I thought by its rocking; and then,

then, it stopping, he let go my hands, and endeavoured to soothe me. He begged I would be pacified, and offered, if I would forbear crying out for help, to leave my eyes unmuffled all the rest of the way. But I would not, I told him, give such a sanction to his barbarous violence.

On the chariot's stopping, one of his men came up, and put an handkerchief into his master's hands, in which were some cakes and sweet-meats; and gave him also a bottle of sack, with a glass. Sir Hargrave was very urgent with me to take some of the sweet-meats, and to drink a glass of the wine: But I had neither stomach nor will to touch either.

He eat himself very cordially. God forgive me, I wished in my heart, there were pins and needles in every bit he put in his mouth.

He drank two glasses of the wine. Again he urged me. I said, I hoped, I had eat and drank my last.

The chariot had not many minutes got into the great road again, over the like rough and sometimes plashy ground, when it stopt on a dispute between the coachman, and the coachman of another chariot-and-fix, as it proved.

Sir Hargrave had but just drawn my handkerchief closer to my eyes, when this happened. Hinder not my tears from flowing, said I; struggling to keep my eyes free, the cloak enough muffling me, and the handkerchief being over my mouth; so that my voice could be but just heard by him, as I imagine.

He looked out of his chariot, to see the occasion of this stop; and then I found means to disengage one hand.

I heard a gentleman's voice directing his own coachman to give way.

I then pushed up the handkerchief with my disengaged hand, from my mouth, and pulled it down from over my eyes, and cried out for help: Help, for God's sake.

A man's voice (it was my deliverer's, as it happily proved) bid Sir Hargrave's coachman proceed at his peril.

Sir Hargrave, with terrible oaths and curses, ordered him to proceed, and to drive thro' all opposition.

The gentleman called Sir Hargrave by his name; and charged him with being upon a bad design.

The vile wretch said, he had only secured a runaway wife, eloped to, and intending to elope from, a masquerade, to her adulterer: He put aside the cloak, and appealed to my dress.

I cried out, No, no, no, five or six times repeated; but could say no more at that instant, holding up then both my disengaged hands for protection.

The wicked man endeavoured to muffle me up again, and to force the handkerchief, which I had then got under my chin, over my mouth; and brutally cursed me.

The gentleman would not be satisfied with Sir Hargrave's story. He would speak to *me*. Sir Hargrave called him impertinent, and other names, and asked, Who the devil he was? with rage and contempt. — The gentleman, however, asked me, and with an air that promised deliverance, if I were Sir Hargrave's wife.

No, no, no, no, — I could only say.

But you may better conceive, than I can express, the terror I was in, when Sir Hargrave drew his sword, and pushed at the gentleman with such words as denoted (for I could not look that way) he had done him mischief. But when I found my oppressor, pulled out of the chariot, by the brave, the gallant man (which was done with such force, as made the chariot rock) and my protector safe; I was as near fainting with joy, as before I had been with terror. I had shaken off the cloak, and untied the handkerchief.

He carried me in his arms (I could not walk) to his own chariot.

I heard Sir Hargrave curse, swear, and threaten. I was glad, however, he was not dead.

Mind him not, madam, fear him not, said Sir Charles Grandison (You know his noble name, my Lucy!) Coachman, drive not over your master: Take care of your master; or some such words he said, as he lifted me into his own chariot. He came not in, but shut the chariot-door, as soon as he had seated me.

He just surveyed, as it were, the spot, and bid a servant let Sir Hargrave know who he was; and then came back to me.

Partly thro' terror, partly thro' weakness, I had sunk to the bottom of the chariot. He opened the door, entered, and, with all the tenderness of a brother, soothed me, and lifted me on the seat once more. He ordered his coachman to drive back to Colnebrooke. In accents of kindness, he told me, that he had there at present the most virtuous and prudent of sisters, to whose care he would commit me, and then proceed on his journey to town.

How irresistibly welcome to me was his supporting arm, thrown round me, as we *flew* back, compared to that of the vile Sir Hargrave.

Mr.

Mr. Reeves has given you an account, from the angelic sister — O my Lucy, they are a pair of angels!

I have written a long, long Letter, or rather five Letters in one, of my distresses, of my deliverance: And, when my heart is stronger, I will say more of the persons, as well as minds, of this excellent brother and his sister.

But what shall I do with my gratitude? O my dear, I am *overwhelmed* with my gratitude: I can only express it in silence before them. Every look, if it be honest to my heart, however, tells it: Reverence mingles with my gratitude — Yet there is so much ease, so much sweetness, in the behaviour of both — O my Lucy! Did I not find that my veneration of both is equal; did I not, on examination, find, that the amiable sister is as dear to me, from her experienced tenderness, as her brother from his remembered bravery in short, that I love the sister, and revere the brother; I should be afraid of my gratitude.

I have over-written myself. I am tired. O my grand-mamma, you have never yet, while I have been in London, sent me your ever-valued blessing under your own hand: Yet, I am sure I had it; and *your* blessings, my dear uncle and aunt Selby; and your prayers, my Lucy, my Nancy, and all my Loves; else my deliverance had not perhaps followed my presumptuous folly, in going dressed out, like the fantastic wretch I appeared to be, at a vile, a foolish masquerade — How often, throughout the several stages of my distress, and even in my deliverance, did I turn my eye *to* myself, and *from* myself, with the disgust that made a part, and that not a light one, of my punishment!

Pray let not any-body unnecessarily be acquainted with this shocking affair; particularly neither Mr. Greville, nor Mr. Fenwick. It is very probable, that they (especially Mr. Greville) would be for challenging Sir Hargrave, were it only on a supposition that it would give him an interest in me in the *eye of the world*. You know that Mr. Greville watches for all opportunities to give himself consequence with me.

Were any farther mischief to happen to any-body, I should be grieved beyond measure. Hitherto I have reason to think, that a transaction so shocking is not very unhappily concluded. May the vile man sit himself down satisfied, and I shall be willing to do so too; provided I never more behold his face.



Mr. Reeves will send you with the above packet, a Letter from Sir Charles Grandison, inclosing one from that vile Wilson. I can write no more just now, and they will sufficiently explain themselves.

Adieu, my dearest Lucy. I need not say how much I am, and will ever be,

Your faithful and affectionate

HARRIET BYRON.

Sir CHA. GRANDISON, to ARCHIB. REEVES, Esq.

Dear Sir,

Canterbury, Feb. 22.

The inclosed long Letter is just now brought to me. I pretend not to judge of the writer's penitence. Yet his confessions seem ingenuous; and he was not under any obligation to put them on paper.

As I presume that you will not think it adviseable to make the *ineffectual* attempt upon Miss Byron public by a prosecution, perhaps your condescending to let the man's sister know, that her brother, if in earnest, may securely pursue the honest purposes he mentions, may save the poor wretch from taking such courses as might be fatal, not only to himself, but to innocent persons, who otherwise may suffer by his being made desperate.

The man, as you will see by his Letter, if you had not a still *stronger* proof, has abilities to do mischief. He has been in bad hands, as he tells us, from his youth upwards, or he might have been an useful member of society. He is a young man; and if yet he could be made *so*, his reformation will take from the number of the profligate, and add to that of the hopeful; and who knows how wide the circle of his acquaintance is, and how many of them may be influenced by his example either way? If he marry the not-dishonest young woman, to whom he seems to be contracted, may not your lenity be a means of securing a whole future family on the side of moral honesty?

His crime, as the attempt was frustrated, is not capital: And, not to mention the service of such an evidence as this, should Sir Hargrave seek for a legal redress, as he sometimes weakly threatens, my hope makes me see a further good that may be brought about by this man's reformation: Wicked masters cannot execute their base views upon the persons of
the

the innocent, without the assistance of wicked servants. What a nest of vipers may be crushed at once, or, at least, rendered unhurtful, by depriving the three monsters he names of the aid of such an agent? Men who want to save appearances, and have estates to forfeit, will sometimes be honest of necessity, rather than put themselves into the power of *untried* villains.

You will be so good as to make my compliments to your Lady, and to *our* lovely ward. You see, Sir, that I join myself with you in the honour of that agreeable relation.

I hope the dear Lady has perfectly recovered her health and spirits. I am, good Mr. Reeves,

Your most faithful and obedient Servant,

CHARLES GRANDISON.

To the Honourable Sir, CHARLES GRANDISON, Bart.

Saturday, Feb. 18.

In what an odious light must that wretch appear before the worthiest of men, who cannot but abhor himself!

I am the unhappy man who was hired into the service of the best of young Ladies! Whom I was the means of betraying into the power of Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, from the Ball in the Hay-market on Thursday night last.

Your honour has made yourself an *interest* in Miss Byron's fate, as I may say, by your powerful protection. Pardon me if I give you some account of myself, and of transactions which perhaps will otherwise never be known: And this in justice to all round.

My parentage was honest: My education was above my parentage. I set out with good principles: But I fell into a bad service. I was young, and of a good natural disposition; but had not virtue enough to resist a temptation: I could not say No, to an unlawful thing, when my principals commanded my assent.

I was, at *first* setting out, by favour of friends, taken as clerk to a merchant. In process of time I transacted his business at the Custom-house. He taught me to make light of oaths of office; and this by degrees made me think light of all moral obligations, and laid the foundation of my ruin.

My master's name was Bagenhall. He died; and I was to seek. His brother succeeded to his fortune, which was very large: He was brought up to no business: He was a gentleman: His seat is near Reading.

H 4

He

He employed me in mean offices, til his pander died (he is a very profligate man, Sir!); and then he *promoted* me to a *still meaner*.

In this way, I grew a shameless contriver. He introduced me to Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, and to Mr. Merceda, a Portuguese Jew. In the service of these three masters, good heaven forgive me! what villainies was I not the means of perpetrating! Yet I never was so hardened, but I had temporary remorse. But these three gentlemen would never let me rest from wickedness; Yet they kept me poor and necessitous, as the only means to keep me what they called *honest*; for they had often reason to think, that had I had any other means of subsistence, I would have been *really* honest.

I was now Mr. Bagenhall's constant servant. Sir Hargrave and Mr. Merceda used to borrow me: But I must say Sir Hargrave is an innocent man to the other two. They caressed me, I speak it to my shame, as a man fit for their turn. I had contrivance; temper; I knew something of everybody. But my sister knows my frequent compunctions; and that I hated the vile course I was in. She used to lecture me enough. She is a good woman.

Will your honour have patience with me a little longer?

Sir Hargrave on the seventh of this month came to my master Bagenhall at Reading, with whom he had double business: One was to take a bond and judgment of him (Sir Hargrave is no better than an usurer :) Mr. Bagenhall has lived a most extravagant life: The other was to borrow me. Mr. Merceda had a scheme on foot at the same time, which he was earnest to engage me in; but it was too shocking; and Mr. Bagenhall came into Sir Hargrave's.

Sir Hargrave told them, he designed nothing *more* than a violation, if he could get my assistance, of the most beautiful woman in the world. And, Sir, to see the villainy of the other two; they both, unknown to each other, made proposals to me, to trick Sir Hargrave, and to get the Lady, each for himself.

But to *me*, Sir Hargrave swore, that he was fully resolved to leave this wicked course of life. Bagenhall and Merceda, he said, were devils; and he would marry, and have no more to say to them. All that was in his view was honest marriage. He said he had never been in the Lady's company but once, and that was the day before at Lady Betty William's. He said he went thither, knowing she was to be there;

there; for having for some time had it in his head to marry, this was the Lady he had pitched upon in his mind, from the character he had of her from every mouth at the Northampton races.

Now, said he, I shall have some difficulty to obtain her, notwithstanding my fortune is so great; for every one who sees her is in love with her; and he named several Gentlemen who laid close siege to her.

She brought a servant up with her, said he, who hoes after the country, and is actually gone, or soon will. Her cousin enquires of every one after a proper servant for her. You, Willson, said he, are handsome and genteel: He was pleased to say so. You have a modest humble look: You know all the duties of a servant: Get yourself entertained, and your fortune is made for life, if by your means I obtain the Lady. I have already tendered myself, said he. Perhaps she will have me in a few days. I don't expect to be denied, if she be disengaged, as it is said she is. If you can get into her service, you will find out every-thing. This is all that is to be done: But you must never mention my name, nor ever know any-thing of me, as I go and come.

Sir Hargrave declared, that his heart was *burnt up* with the Love of the Lady: And if he succeeded you will, said he, as my Lady's servant, be mine of course; you shall never wear a livery; and you shall be my gentleman, till I can get a place for you in the Customs. This, may it please your honour, he knew I had long aimed at, and it had been often promised by himself, and my other two masters; and was their first promise when they wanted to engage me in any of their schemes; tho' they never thought more of it when the service was over. If I got but myself engaged, I was, on the day I entered into my Lady's service, to have as an earnest ten guineas.

Encouraged by such promises (and the project being an honefter one than ever Sir Hargrave, or either of the other two, had sought to engage me in) I offered my service to my Lady; and, on Mr. Bagenhall's writing a good character of me, was accepted.

I could have been happy in the service of this Lady, all the days of my life. She is all goodness: All the servants, every-body, gentle and simple, adored her: But she, unexpectedly, refusing to have Sir Hargrave, and he being afraid that one of her three or four Lovers would *cut him out*, he

resolved to take more violent measures than he had at first intended.

If any man was ever mad in Love, it was Sir Hargrave. But then he was as mad with anger to be refused. Sir Hargrave was ever thought to be one of the proudest men in England: And he complained that my Lady used him worse than she did any-body else. But it was not *her* way to use any-body ill; I saw that.

Nevertheless he was resolved to strike a *bold stroke for a wife*, as were his words from the title of a play: and between us we settled the matter in one night! For I had found means to get out unknown to the family.

It will be trespassing too much upon your honour's patience, to be very particular in our contrivances. - I will be as brief as possible.

My Lady was to go to a Masquerade. I got into the knowledge of every thing, how and about it. The maids were as full of the matter as their master and mistresses.

It was agreed to make the chairmen fuddled. Two of *Mr. Merceda's footmen* were to undertake the task. Brandy was put into their liquor to hasten them.

They were soon overcome. The weather was cold: They drank briskly, and were laid up safe. I then hired two chance chairmen, and gave them orders as had been contrived.

I had twenty guineas given me in hand for my encouragement; in which were included the promised ten.

I had, when I was my first master Bagenhall's clerk, made acquaintance with several clerks of the Customhouse, particularly with one Awberry, a sober modest man; who has two sisters; to one of whom I am contracted, and always for two years past, intended to make my wife, as soon as I should be in any way to maintain her. The mother is a widow. All of them are very honest people.

Mr. Awberry the brother being assured by me (and I was well assured of it myself, and had no doubt about it) that marriage was intended; and knowing Sir Hargrave's great estate (and having indeed seen Sir Hargrave on the occasion, and received his protestations of honour) engaged his mother and sisters in it; and the result, as to them and me, was, that I was to receive, as soon as the knot was tied, an hundred guineas besides the twenty; and moreover an absolute promise of a place; and twenty pounds a year till I got it; and then my marriage with young Mrs. Awberry was to follow.

The

The widow has an annuity of thirty pounds, which, with her son's salary, keeps them above want.

She lives at Paddington. There is a back-door and garden, as it happens, convenient to bring any-body in, or carry any-body out, secretly; and hither it was resolved, if possible, that the Lady should be brought, and a Fleet parson and his clerk ready stationed, to perform ceremony.

Sir Hargrave doubted not (tho' he was fruitful in contrivances, and put many others in practice) but he should be detected if he carried the Lady to his own house. And as he was afraid that the chairmen (notwithstanding several other artful contrivances) would be able to find out the place they carried her to, he had ordered his chariot-and-six to be at the widow Awberry's by six in the morning, with three servants on horseback, armed, and a horse and pistols besides. After marriage he was resolved to go to his house on the forest, but not to stay there; but to go to Mr. Merceda's house near Newberry, where he doubted not but he should be secret till he thought fit to produce the Lady, as Lady Pollexfen: And often, very often, did he triumph on the victory he should obtain over her other Lovers, and over her own proud heart, as he would have it to be.

The person, Sir, came: The clerk was there: But what with fits, prayers, tears, and one thing or other (at one time the Lady being thought irrecoverable; having received some unintended hurt in her struggling to get out of a door, as I heard it was) Sir Hargrave in terror dismissed the parson; and resolved to carry the Lady (who by that time was recovered) in the chariot to his seat at Windsor; and then, staying there only to marry, go to Newberry; and from thence break out by degrees, as the matter should be taken.

My Lady screamed, resisted, and did all that woman could do, to get free: And more than once, people who heard her cry out for help were put a wrong scent: And had we not met with your honour (who would see with your own eyes, and hear with your own ears) the affair had been all over in the way Sir Hargrave wished, and was at so much pains and expence to effect. For, Sir, the chariot generally drove so fast, that before passengers could have *resolved* whether to interfere or not, we should have been out of sight or reach.

Sir Hargrave is in the greatest rage with us all, because we stood not better by him. He refuses any favour to me, and
threa-

threatens to pistol me the moment he sees me. That's to be my reward.

A coach-and-four was ordered to carry the widow and her two daughters to Reading, to the New Inn there, where they were to reside for a week or so, till all was blown over, and that they might be out of the way of answering questions: And my *brother* Awberry, as I call him, and hope to make him (for he is a very honest man) was to go to them there.

And there, in all probability, had Sir Hargrave succeeded, and been as good as his word, should I have been the husband of as tender-hearted a young woman as any in the parish she lives in.

Here is a very long Letter, may it please you, Sir. I have shortened it however as much as I could: But in hatred to myself, and the vile ways I have, by excess of good-nature, and by meeting with wicked masters, been drawn into — For the clearing of my sister's character, who lives in credit among her neighbours, and of every other person who might otherwise have been suspected — In justice to Mrs. Awberry's, and her two daughters, and her son's characters — And in justice *so far* to Sir Hargrave's, as that he intended marriage — In justice, I say, to all these persons, I thought proper thus to give you, Sir, all that I knew relating to this wicked transaction. And if, may it please your honour, I were to be taken up, I could say no more before a magistrate; except this, which I had like to have forgot; which is, that had it not been for me, some mischief might have been done, between Sir Hargrave's servants and yours, if not to your honour's person.

All that I most humbly beg, is, the pardon of so sweet a Lady. I have chosen, ever-to-be-honoured Sir, to write to you, whose goodness is so generally talked of, and who have so nobly redeemed and protected her. Mr. Reeves, I know, has suffered too much in his mind to forgive me. He is a worthy gentleman. I am sorry for the disturbance I have given him. I have hopes given me, that I shall get employment on the Keys, or as a tide-waiter extraordinary.

Please the Lord, I will never, never more, be the tool of wicked masters. All I wish for is, to be able to do justice to the love of an honest young woman; and I am resolved, whether so enabled or not, to starve, rather than to go any more, no, not for a single hour, into the service of the iniquitous gentlemen I have so often named in this long Letter.

If

If I might be assured, that I may pursue unmolested, any honest calling, so as that I may not be tempted or driven into unhappy courses, my heart would be at rest.

There might have been murder in this affair: That shocks me to think of. O Sir, good, excellent, brave, and the most worthy of gentlemen, you have given to *me* as great a deliverance, as you have to the *Lady*: Yea, greater; for mine may be a deliverance, if I make a proper use of it, of soul as well as body. Which God grant, as also your honour's health and prosperity, to the prayers of

Your Honour's ever-devoted

Humble Servant,

WILLIAM WILSON.

I thought I had something else to say! Something it is of *high* importance: Your life is threatened, Sir: God preserve your precious life.

ACCOUNT OF A TRAGICAL INCIDENT IN FRANCE. 1765. *)

A land-holder of Castres, by name Sirven, had three daughters: as this family is of the protestant religion, the youngest of his daughters was taken by force out of his Wifes arms, put into a Convent, and whipped, by way of teaching her her catechism. The Girl run mad, and threw herself into a well, at about a league's distance from her father's house. On this, the zealots of religion made not the least doubt of its being the father, mother, and sisters of the child, that had drowned her. It had passed currently among the Roman Catholics of the Province, that one of the capital points of the protestant Religion was, that fathers and mothers are bound to hang, drown, or cut the throats of any of their Children they may suspect of having any inclination towards the Romish religion. This was precisely at the very time that the Calas's were in irons, and that the skaffold was preparing for their execution.

The news of the Girl's being drowned, came directly then to Toulouse. "Ay (said they) here's a fresh instance of a father's and mother's murdering their Child., The outcry was general;

*) Voltaire's Letter to M. D'Am --- 1765. 12.

126 ACCOUNT OF A TRAGICAL &c.

general; the fury of the public was augmented upon it; Calas was broke upon the wheel; Sirven, his wife, and his daughters, ordered to be apprehended. Sirven, frightened, had only the time to fly with all his sick family. Destitute of all aid, they were forced to walk on foot over steep hills, at that time covered with snow. One of his daughters was delivered, amidst the ice, of a child, which, dying as it was, she carried in her arms herself hardly alive. At length, they got into the road that leads to Switzerland.

The same chance that brought to me the children of Calas, directed also to me Sirven. Figure to yourself, my friend, four sheep accused by butchers of having devoured a lamb: This is what I saw; but it is impossible for any description to do justice to so much innocence, and so much distress. What ought I to do? Or what would you have done in my place? is it enough to groan only over such abuses of human nature? I took the liberty of writing to the President of Languedoc, but he was not at Toulouse. I got one of your friends to present a petition to the Vice-chancellor. In the mean while, near Castres, the father, the mother, and the two daughters, were executed in effigy; their estate confiscated, their goods despoiled, the ruin was complete. Behold here a virtuous, decent, innocent family delivered up to shame and beggary among strangers. It is true, they found pity, but how cruel it is to be objects of pity as long as they live! The answer, however, sent me to my application, was, that they might possibly obtain their pardon.

DESCRIPTION OF A DWARF WHICH WAS KEPT IN THE PALACE OF THE LATE KING OF POLAND. *)

The parents of this dwarf were healthy, strong peasants; who affirmed, that at the time of his birth, he scarcely weighed a pound and a quarter. It is not known what were then his dimensions, but one may judge they were very small, as he was presented on a plate to be baptized, and for a long time had a wooden-shoe for his bed.

His mouth, though well proportioned to the rest of his body, was not large enough to receive the nipple of his mother; he

(* Buffon and d'Aubenton's Natural History T. XV.

DESCRIPTION OF A DWARF &c. 127

he was suckled therefore by a goat, and she performed the part of nurse admirably well. When six months old he had the smallpox, and recovered without any other assistance than the care of his mother and the milk of the Goat. At the age of eighteen months he could articulate some words. At two years, he could support himself upon his legs, and walk almost without assistance; a pair of shoes were then made for him, which were no more than an inch and half in length.

He was attacked by several diseases; but there were no marks of any other diseases upon the skin besides the smallpox. — He was now six years of age: hitherto his food had been garden-stuff, bacon and potatoes; his height was about fifteen inches, and he did not weigh more than thirteen pounds; his person was agreeable and well proportioned, he was in perfect health, but there was little appearance of intellect. — At this time the King of Poland ordered him to Luneville, gave him the name of *Bébé*, and kept him in his palace. *Bébé* thus exchanged the condition of a peasant for the luxuries of a court; but he experienced no change either in his body or his mind.

He had no sense of religion; was incapable of reasoning; could learn neither music nor dancing; was susceptible however of passions, particularly anger, jealousy, and voluptuousness. — When sixteen years old, he was only twenty-nine inches in height; he was still healthy and well proportioned; but at this time his strength began to decrease, the spine became crooked, the head fell forwards, the legs were enfeebled, one shoulderblade projected, the nose was greatly enlarged; *Bébé* lost his gaiety, and became a valetudinarian; and yet his stature was increased four inches in the four succeeding years. —

Mr. le Comte de Tressan, foretold that this dwarf would die of old age before he was thirty; and in effect so it was, for at twenty-one he was shrunk and decrepit; and at twenty-two, it was with difficulty that he could make an hundred steps successively. — In his twenty third year, he was attacked with a fever, and fell into a kind of a lethargy; he had some intervals, but spoke with great difficulty: for the five last days, his ideas seemed to be more clear than when he was in health. This disease soon proved fatal. — At the time of his death, he was measured thirty-three inches.

REMARKS

REMARKS ON THE PRESENT STATE OF THE TRADE OF MAS- SACHUSETTS-BAY, &c. *)

The other governments of New England, **) sixty or seventy years ago, imported no English goods, or next to none, directly from England; they were supplied by the Massachusetts trader. Now although our trade with great Britain, upon the whole, is supposed to cause no addition to our wealth, yet, at least so far as we are the channel for conveying supplies of goods to the other colonies for their consumption, a benefit undoubtedly accrues. New-Hampshire, by their convenient situation, were induced to become their own importers in a great measure some years before the alteration of our currency.

They made their return by shipping lumber, &c. easier than we did. At present they probably import English goods equal to their consumption. Connecticut, until we abolished our bills of credit and theirs with them, continued their trade with us for English goods, but soon after turned great part of their trade to New-York, and some persons became importers from England. They soon discovered their error. The produce of New-York is so much the same with that of Connecticut that the Massachusetts market will always be the best. The importer finds it more difficult, to make his returns to England from Connecticut, than from the Massachusetts. Connecticut trade therefore soon returned to the state it had formerly been in.

Rhode-Island, in part, became their own importers also, which they still continue.

For the other colonies on the continent, between South-Carolina and the Massachusetts, there never has been any considerable trade. The chief benefit from that colony has been the affording freights for our ships in the European trade.

North-Carolina, Virginia, Maryland, the Jerseys and Pennsylvania, untill within twenty or thirty years, used to furnish us with provisions for which we paid them in West-India and sometimes English goods and with our own produce and manu-

*) Governor Hutchinson's History of the Colony of Massachusetts-Bay. Vol. 2. Lond. 1767. 8.

**) Viz: Connecticut, Rhode-Island and New-Hampshire.

REMARKS ON THE PRESENT &c. 129

manufactures. Philadelphia of late is become the mart for the grain of great part of Maryland, which they manufacture into flour and supply the Massachusetts, Rhode-Island and New-Hampshire, and take little or no pay in return but Money and bills of Exchange. It seems agreed that the southern colonies as far as Virginia are designed by nature for grain countries. It behoves us therefore, either like the Dutch for the other nations in Europe, to become carriers for them with our shipping, or to contrive some articles of produce or manufacture for barter or exchange with them, rather than in vain to attempt raising to more advantage than they do, what nature has peculiarly formed them for.

Our trade with the West-India Islands was much more profitable to us, from the beginning of King William's to the end of Queen Anne's war with France, than at any time since. Ever since the peace of Utrecht it has been continually growing worse. Barbadoes required then, more northern produce than it does now. The other Islands, except Jamaica, have very little increased their demand. From the growth of the northern colonies and the new methods of living, the produce of the Islands is more than double the price it used to be. Perhaps tea and coffee, alone, cause as great consumption of sugar as all other uses, to which it was applied, did formerly.

The produce of the northern colonies is as low in the Islands as ever it was. Formerly their demand for northern produce not only afforded us in return, rum, sugar and molasses sufficient, for our own consumption, but left a surplus which, in war time especially, every year gave freight to ships from Boston to England, and paid our debts there or procured a supply of goods from thence, whereas, at this day, the whole supply of northern produce to the British Islands will not pay for one half the West-India goods consumed or used in the northern colonies.

The trade to the Dutch colonies, it is true, is since increased, and our goods from time to time find their way into the French Islands, sometimes through the Dutch, at other times, when French necessity calls for them, by permission or other contrivances, and by this means we are able to procure the West-India goods we want for our consumption over and above what we can obtain in pay for our produce from our own Islands. Britain herself suffers, with her northern colonies, and pays dearly by the advanced price of sugar, rum, &c.

The West-Indians, notwithstanding, are continually endeavouring to restrain our trade with the foreign Islands and colonies. If they could take of our produce as much as we have occasion for of theirs it would appear less unreasonable, or if, by our trade with the foreign colonies, the price of the produce of our own Islands had fallen below the former rates they might have colour for complaint; but when the vent for northern produce by means of the great increase of the northern colonies, bears no proportion, from any one of them, to what it did formerly, and yet the produce of the Islands is double the price it was formerly, and their estates raised to more than five times the value, it must be unreasonable to burden not only the inhabitants of the northern colonies but of Great Britain also with a still farther advanced price of West-India goods, and all to aggrandize the West-India planters. Such a burden would infallibly be the effect of a rigid execution of the laws restraining or incumbering our trade with the French and Dutch colonies. But this is not all. If our trade with the foreign colonies be suppressed and our supplies of West-India goods are confined to our own Islands, the balance above what they require of our produce, must be paid them in Silver and Gold or exchange upon England, either of which must lessen our returns to England, and will probably lessen our consumption of their manufactures.

Charlevoix says the French of Canada live well if they can get fine cloaths; if not, they retrench from the table to adorn the person. I think the English colonists would rather abate from their dress than from their punch, tea, coffee, &c.

If the question be, which is most for the interest of the British dominions in general, to restrain the French American trade or to give it all possible encouragement, it must be given in favour of encouragement. The speedy settlement of this vast continent is generally supposed to be advantageous to Great Britain. Every new house, new farm and new subject adds to the consumption of British manufactures. Nothing more contributes to this speedy settlement than a vent for the lumber, a great help in clearing the lands near the sea and upon navigable rivers, and for provisions, the produce of settlements when made. But, on the other hand, admit that raising the price of West-India produce tends to increase the number of plantations in the Islands, yet those plantations, although more valuable, will never bear any proportion in number to the plantations and settlements upon the continent,
and

and the increase of white subjects will be still less in proportion. Blacks eat and drink nothing and wear next to nothing of British manufacture.

There has been a great alteration in our trade with Great Britain. At the beginning of this period, and till within 30 or 40 years past, merchants and manufacturers in England shipped goods upon their own accounts, which were sold here upon commission, and although there was appearance of profit from the sales, yet, by the loss upon returns, most adventurers in a course of years were great losers. Discerning persons in London, when they saw a man going deep into trade to the colonies, would pronounce him short lived.

The trade is now upon a more certain footing for the people of England. Few goods are sent to be sold upon commission. The manufacturer depends upon the Merchant in England for his pay. The merchant receives his commission and generally agrees with his correspondent, for whom he is in advance, in the colonies, that after six or nine months credit, if payment be not made, interest shall be allowed.

Bad debts must be expected more or less upon all extensive trade. Perhaps they are not more frequent in the colonies than among the like number of traders in England.

The cod and whale fishery are in a more flourishing state than formerly. The vessels employed in cod fishing have been more numerous, but they were small shallops, and one of the schooners now employed in that fishery takes as much fish in a season as two shallops used to do.

The French are supposed to maintain a Fisherman at less expence than the English. Be it so, the English catch and make their fish at less expence than the French notwithstanding. Five or six well-fed Marble-head or Cape-Ann men catch as much fish as ten or twelve meagre Frenchmen in the same time. The French find their account in taking what they call their muid or mud-fish when the English cannot. This is owing to the vent which the French markets afford for that sort of fish. In what they call a *sendentaire* and we a short fishery we shall always outdo them, unless the ports of the other nations in Europe as well as those of the French should be shut against us. If every family in Britain should make one dinner in a week upon New-England codfish it would cause an amazing increase of the consumption of British manufactures.

132 REMARKS ON THE PRESENT

It is certain that before the war of 1744 the French fishery declined. They used to go from Louisbourg to Canis and buy the English fish for the French European markets, because it came cheaper to them, than they could catch and make it.

The increase of the consumption of oil by lamps as well as by divers manufactures in Europe has been no small encouragement to our whale fishery. The flourishing state of the Island of Nantucket must be attributed to it. The cod and whale fishery, being the principal source of our returns to Great-Britain, are therefore worthy not only of provincial but national attention.

Formerly the trade to Newfoundland was valuable. The increase of the northern colonies has carried from us great part of the supplies we used to make. Our late-began commerce with Nova-Scotia is valuable, but will not compensate for this loss.

The manufacture of pot-ash promises great benefit to the colonies. It is to be wished, they may meet with no discouragement. Frauds in package and adulteration cannot be of any long continuance. The least that can be done by every government, where it is manufactured, is a law to compel every person to set his name and the name of the town where he lives upon the cask in which he packs his pot-ash. This will go a great way towards preventing fraud. Should the Russia traders combine to undersell those who import from America, yet it will be considered that the Russia trade is drawing every year from the nation a large balance in bullion, whereas the increase of imports from the colonies only tends to an increase of national exports, and the body of the nation will combine against the Russia traders.

I remember one advantage from paper money. Upon the depreciation, from time to time, the wages of seamen and the rate at which coasting vessels and others were hired did not immediately rise in proportion to the rise of silver and exchange with London and other parts of the world. We were thus led to employ our vessels as carriers to and from many parts of the continent, the West-Indies and Europe, because we let them upon cheaper freight and hire, than any other colony would do. The war in 1744 gave a twin to this part of business, but we may learn from what happened then, without any premeditated plan or design, what we are capable of, viz. navigating our vessels, especially if further improve-

improvements be made in the construction of them, with so little expence as, like the Dutch in Europe, to become carriers for America. The advantage, in this particular instance of the reduction of the price of labour shews us what improvements might be made in other branches of trade and manufacture, if ever it should be reduced in proportion to the price in Europe, compared with the price of the necessaries of life. It was hard parting with a free open trade to all parts of the world which the Massachusetts carried on before the present charter. The principal acts of parliament were made many years before, but there was no customhouse established in the colony, nor any authority anxious for carrying those acts into execution. It was several years after the new charter, before it was generally observed. If we are under no other obligations, we certainly enjoy and cannot subsist without the protection of our mother country, over our trade at sea, our personal estate ashore, the territory itself, our liberties and lives. It is owing, in a great measure, to the taxes, duties and excises, the consequences of an enormous load of debt, that the manufactures in England come dearer to us, than those of other countries. Great part of this debt was incurred by our immediate protection. Shall we think much of sharing in the burden when we have been so great sharers in the benefit? There is no way in which we can more effectually contribute to the national relief than by submitting to regulations and restraints upon our trade, and yet no way in which we should be so little sensible of it.

It has been the general voice that our trade to Great-Britain should be contracted, and that our inhabitants should be employed in the same kind of manufactures we import from thence, the materials for most of which we have or may have within ourselves.

The great creator of the universe in infinite wisdom has so formed the earth that different parts of it, from the soil, climate, &c. are adapted to different produce, and he so orders and disposes the genius, temper, numbers and other circumstances relative to the inhabitants as to render some employments peculiarly proper for one country, and others for another, and by this provision a mutual intercourse is kept up between the different parts of the Globe. It would be folly in a Virginian to attempt a plantation of rice for the sake of having all he consumes from the produce of his own labour, when South-Carolina, by nature, is peculiarly designed for rice, and capable

134 AN ACCOUNT OF ALGIERS.

of supplying one half of the world. Old countries, stocked with people, are ordinarily best adapted to manufactures. Would it be the interest of New-England, whilst thin of people, to turn their attention from the whale, cod, mackerel and herring fishery, their lumber trade and ship building, which require but few hands compared with many other sorts of business, to such manufactures as are now imported from Great-Britain, or to take their sons from clearing the land and turning an uncultivated wilderness into pleasant and profitable fields, and set them to spinning, weaving and the like employments? I do not mean to discourage any persons who cannot improve their time to greater advantage, from employing themselves and families, in any branch of manufacture whatsoever. Idleness is the certain parent of vice. Industry, introduced, will ordinarily tend to produce a change of manners. A general philanthropy will induce us to delight in and contribute to the happiness of every part of the human race, by which we ourselves are no sufferers; the state from whence we sprang and upon which we still depend for protection, may justly expect to be distinguished by us, and that we should delight in and contribute to its prosperity, beyond all other parts of the globe.

AN ACCOUNT OF ALGIERS. *)

This place, which for several ages hath braved the greatest powers of *Christendom*, is not above a mile and a half in circuit, tho' computed to contain about 2000 *Christian* slaves, 15000 *Jews*, and 100000 *Mahometans*, of which only thirty (at most) are *Renegadoes*. It is situated upon the declivity of a hill, that faces the north and north-east; whereby the houses rise so gradually above each other, that there is scarce one in the whole city, but what, in one or other of those directions, hath a full view of the sea. The walls are weak and of little defence, unless where they are further secured by some additional fortification. The ditch, which formerly surrounded the city, is almost entirely filled up.

Towards the sea, it is better fortified, and capable to make a more strenuous defence. For the embrasures, in this direction, have all brass guns and in good order. The battery of

*) D. Shaw's Travels or observations relating to several parts of Barbary and the Levant. Ed. 2. Lond. 1757. gr. 4.

of the *Mole Gate*, upon the east angle of the city, is mounted with long pieces of ordinance, one of which hath seven cylinders, each of them three inches in diameter. Half a furlong to the W. S. W. of the harbour, is the battery of *Fisher's Gate*, or *the Gate of the Sea*, which consisting of a double row of cannon, commands the entrance into the port, and the road before it.

The port is of an oblong figure, a hundred and thirty fathom long, and eighty broad. The eastern mound of it, which was formerly *the Island*, is well secured by several strong fortifications. The *Round Castle*, (built by the *Spaniards* whilst they were masters of *the Island*) and the two remote batteries, (erected within this century) are said to be *bomb-proof*; and have each of them their lower embrasures mounted with thirty six pounders. But the middle battery, which appears to be the oldest, is of the least defence. As none of the fortifications are assisted with either mines or advanced works; and as the soldiers, who are to guard and defend them, cannot be kept up to any regular courses of duty and attendance, a few resolute battalions, protected by a small squadron of ships, would have no great difficulty to make themselves quickly masters of the very strongest.

The hills and valleys round about *Algiers* are every where beautified with gardens and country seats, whither the inhabitants of better fashion retire, during the summer season. The country seats are little white houses, shaded by a variety of fruit trees and evergreens; whereby they afford a gay and delightful prospect towards the sea. The gardens are well stocked with melons, fruits and pot herbs of all kinds; and what is chiefly regarded in these hot climates, each of them enjoys as well as the city a great command of excellent water, from many rivulets and fountains.

The government of *Algerines*, which differs little from that of *Tunis*, consists of the *Dey*, and a common council, composed of the thirty *Yiah Bashees*, tho' the *Mufti*, the *Cady*, and the whole soldiery sometimes, are called upon to assist. All affairs of moments ought to be agreed upon by this assembly, before they pass into laws. But for some years there has been little account made of this body; and they have been convened only to consent to measures before concerted in the cabinet council. As the *Dey* is chosen out of the army, each order, even the most inferiour, having an equal right and title to that dignity, every bold and aspiring soldier, tho' taken yesterday

from the plough, may be considered as heir apparent to the throne, and lyes under no necessity to wait till sickness or old age remove the present incumbent: It is enough that he is able to protect himself with the same cymiter, which he has had the hardiness to sheath in the bowels of his predecessor; rarely one in ten having the fortune to die without a musket ball or a cymiter. However this factious and discontented humour seems, at present, to be somewhat purged and allayed, by the many seasonable executions, that have been lately made of these aspiring members.

The whole force of *Algiers*, in *Turks* and *Cologlies*, is computed, at present, to be about six thousand five hundred; two thousand whereof are supposed to be old, and excused from duty; and of the four thousand five hundred that remain, one thousand are constantly employed in relieving annually their garrisons, whilst the rest are either to arm out their cruisers, or else form the three flying camps, which are sent out every summer under the command of the provincial *Viceroy*. To the *Turkish* troops we may join about two thousand *Zingwah*, as the *Moorish* horse and footmen are called, which are kept in constant pay, and being all of them hereditary enemies to the *Turks*, are little considered in the real safeguard of the government. The method observed in keeping this large and populous Kingdom in obedience, is not so much by force of arms, as by diligently observing the old political maxim, *divide and command*. For the provincial *Viceroy*s are very watchful over the motions of the *Arabian* tribes, who are under their several districts and jurisdictions; and as these are in continual jealousies and disputes with one another, the *Beys* have nothing to do but keep up the ferment. There are a number of *Arabian* and *African* tribes, who, if their neighbours should observe a neutrality, would be too hard for the whole army of *Algiers*, notwithstanding each *Turk* values himself as a match for twenty *Arabs*.

To make up deficiencies in the army, their cruising vessels are sent out, every five or six years, to the *Levant* for recruits, which generally consist of shepherds, outlaws, and persons of the meanest condition. Yet, after they have been a little instructed by their fellow soldiers, and have got caps to their heads, shoes to their feet, and a pair of knives to their girdle, they quickly begin to affect grandeur and majesty, expect to be saluted with the title of (*Effendi*) *your Grace*, and look upon the most considerable citizens as their slaves, and the
consuls

consuls of the allied nations as their footmen. *Mahomet Bashaw*, who was *Dey* when I arrived at *Algiers*, was not ashamed to own his extraction, in a notable dispute he had once with the deputy consul of a neighbouring nation; *My mother*, says he, *sold sheep's feet, and my father neat's tongues, but they would have been ashamed to have exposed to sale so worthless a tongue as yours.*

But, besides these *Levant-Turks*, the *Dey* may, at his pleasure, and especially upon any emergency, enroll the *Cologlies*, as the call the sons of such soldiers, who have been permitted to marry at *Algiers*; tho' since they made an unsuccessful attempt upon the government, they have been excluded from the honour of being *Dey*, *Aga* of the *Janizaries*, and other considerable employments.

The officers that command this small army, (and it would be the same if it amounted to its former complement of twelve thousand) are the *Aga* or general, thirty *Yiah Bashees* or colonels, eight hundred *Bulluck Bashees* or captains, and about half that number of *Oda Bashees* or lieutenants. The method of arriving at these posts, is not by money and interest, but by age and seniority, the oldest soldier being advanced upon the death of his captain, &c. &c. tho' by the permission of the *Dey*, a younger soldier may purchase the rank of an elder, the latter degrading himself in return.

The yearly taxes of this great and fertile kingdom bring not more into the treasury than 300000 dollars: But it is computed, that the eighth part of prizes, the effects of persons dying without children, the contributions from the independent *Kaides*, and the frequent *Aver-eas*, and oppressions, may bring in as much more. To compensate this, the pay is but small, the youngest soldier receiving only 406 *Aspers*, every two months, and the eldest, or those in full pay, no more than 5800; whereof 696 make a dollar. Besides the pay, such *Yiah* and *Bulluck Bashees* as are unmarried, have each of them eight loaves of bread a day, and the *Oda Bashees* and private soldiers, who are in the same condition, have four; each loaf being about five ounces in weight, and three *Aspers* in value.

In the ordinary distribution of justice, there is in this, as in all other *Turkish* governments, an officer whom they call the *Cady*, who is obliged to attend at the court of justice once or twice a day, where he hears and determines the several suits and complaints that are brought before him. But as

bribery is too often charged upon the *Cady*, all affairs of moment are laid before the *Dey*, or master of the horse. At all these tribunals, the cause is quickly decided, nothing more being required than the proof of what is alleged; so that a matter of debt, trespass, or of the highest crimes will be finally decided, and the sentence executed *in less than an hour*.

In cases of debt, the debtor is usually detained in prison, till the (*Choufes*) bayliffs have seized upon his effects and sold them. If the sale amounts to more than the debt, then the *overplus* is returned; if it comes short, he is notwithstanding released, and no future demands are made upon him. Less offences are punished with the *Bastinado*: The offender is to receive so many strokes (sometimes two or three hundred) on his buttocks or the soles of his feet, with sticks of the thickness of ones little finger. For clipping or debasing the publick coin, the old *Egyptian* punishment is inflicted, which is to cut off the hands of the transgressor. Whatsoever *Jew* or *Christian* subject is guilty of murder or any other capital crime, he is to be carried without the gates of the city, and burnt alive: But the *Moors* and *Arabs* are either impaled for the same crime, or hung up by the neck, over the battlements of the city, or else thrown upon the hooks that are fixed in the walls below, where sometimes they hang, in the most exquisite agonies and torments, thirty or forty hours, before they expire. The *Turks* are not punished in publick, like other offenders; but are, out of respect to their characters, sent to the house of the *Aga*, where according to the quality of the misdemeanour, they are bastinadoed or strangled. Out of modesty likewise to the sex, when the women offend, they are not exposed to the populace, but sent to some private house of correction; or, if the crime is capital, they are then tyed up in a sack, carried out into the sea, and drowned. The western *Moors* still use the barbarous punishment of sawing asunder the transgressor. For which purpose they prepare two boards, of the same length and breadth with the unfortunate person, and having tyed him betwixt them, they proceed to the execution, by beginning at the head.

The naval force of this *Regency*, for two centuries, has been, at one time or other, a terror to all the trading nations of *Christendom*. With relation therefore to *Christian* Princes, this government has alliance with us, the *French*, the *Dutch*, and the *Swedes*. Great application has been often made,
by

by the *Port*, in behalf of the *Emperor's* subjects; though all their intercessions have hitherto proved ineffectual, notwithstanding the *Algerines* acknowledge themselves to be the vassals of the *Grand Seigneur*, and, as such, should comply. The *Suedes* purchased their peace at the rate of 70,000 dollars: and, as these cruisers rarely meet with vessels of that nation, it has been hitherto discoursed of as a great mystery. The success which the *Dutch* met with, during a war of twelve years, to destroy a few of their vessels; the magnificent present of naval stores that was promised, upon ratifying the peace; together with the natural timorousness of the Dey, lest, by further losses, he should be reckon'd unfortunate (a dangerous character in this country for a commander) were the chief and concurring reasons for extending their friendship to that nation. It is certain that the greatest part of the soldiers, and the sea officers in general, very strenuously opposed it; urging, that it would be in vain to arm out their vessels, when they had peace with the three trading nations; that their loss was inconsiderable, when compared with the riches obtained by the war; concluding with a very expressive *Arabian* proverb, that such persons *ought never to sow, who are afraid of the sparrows*: As the younger soldiers cannot well subsist without the money that arises from their shares in prizes, there has been no small murmuring at the little success they have lately met with. And it is very probable (as a little time perhaps will discover) that the very moment any considerable addition is made to their fleet, nay, perhaps, without any further augmentation, the present Dey will be obliged to lessen the number of his alliances, from those very principles which, a few years ago, engaged his predecessor to increase them.

The *Algerines* have certainly a great esteem and friendship for our nation; and, provided there could be any security in a government, that is guided by chance and humour, more than by counsel and mature deliberation, it is very probable that, which of the trading nations soever they may think fit to quarrel with, we have little to apprehend. The *Dutch* are very industrious in cultivating a good understanding with them, by making an annual present; a method hitherto very prevalent and successful: whilst, on the other hand, the *French* may influence them as much, by putting them in mind of the execution which their bombs did formerly to this city, and of a later instance of their resentment at *Tripoli*. But as there is rarely any great prudence in using high words and mena-

menaces at *Algiers*, it is certain, provided the *Algerines* are to be sway'd with fear, that we have as much interest in Sir *Edward Spragg's* expedition at *Bou jeiah*, as the *French* can have in that of the Marquis *d'Estrees* at *Algiers*. Notwithstanding likewise all the arguments that may be urged in behalf of *Marseilles* and *Toulon*, these people are not to be persuaded but that *Minorca* and *Gibraltar* are in a more convenient situation to give them disturbance. But reason and argument will not always be good politics at this court, where the first minister is the cook, and where an insolent soldiery have too often the command. In critical junctures, therefore, the ground is to be maintained by the nice management and address of the consul; by knowing how to make proper application to the particular passions of those who have the Dey's ear; by flattering one, placing a confidence in another, and especially by making a proper use of those invincible arguments, *money*, *kaf-tans* and *gold matches*. For according to an old and infallible observation, *Give a Turk money with one hand, and he will permit his eyes to be plucked out by the other.*

Such was the political state and condition of this Regency, when I left it, *A. D. 1732*. How long it may continue so will be hard to determine; because, what little there is here of justice, honesty, or public faith, proceeds rather from fear and compulsion, than from choice and free election. For the acknowledgment is very just, which *Ali Bafhaw*, a late Dey, made to Consul *Cole*, upon complaining of the injuries that our vessels met with from his cruisers: The *Algerines*, says he, *are a company of rogues, and I am their captain.*

AN ACCOUNT OF THE DEATH OF JOHN REINHOLD PATKUL. *)

JOHAN REINHOLD PATKUL was born of a noble family in *Livonia*, a northern province belonging to the crown of *Sweden*. The *Livonians* having been stript of their privileges, and great part of their estates by *Charles XI*, *Patkul* was deputed to make their complaint, which he did with such eloquence and

*) Anecdotes of J. R. Patkul, now first printed from a Manuscript Account written by the Lutheran Clergyman who attended him in his preparation for his Death &c. Lond. 1761. 8.

OF THE DEATH OF PATKUL. 141

and courage, that the king, laying his hand upon his shoulder, said, *You have spoken for your country as a brave man should, and I esteem you for it.*

Charles, however, who added the baseness of hypocrisy to the ferocity of a tyrant, was determined to punish the zeal and honesty which he thought fit to commend, and a few days afterwards caused *Patkul* to be declared guilty of high treason, and condemned to die. *Patkul*, however, found means to escape into *Poland*, where he continued till *Charles* was dead. He hoped that his sentence would have been then reserved, as it had been declared unjust, even by the tyrant that procured it; but being disappointed in this expectation, he applied to *Augustus*, king of *Poland*, and solicited him to attempt the conquest of *Livonia* from the *Swedes*, which, he said, might be easily effected, as the people were ready to shake off their yoke, and the king of *Sweden* was a child incapable of compelling their subjection.

Augustus possessed himself of *Livonia*, in consequence of this proposal, and afterwards, when *Charles XII.* entered the province to recover it, *Patkul* commanded in the *Saxon* army against him. *Charles* was victorious, and *Patkul*, some time afterwards, being disgusted at the haughty behaviour of Gen. *Flemming*, *Augustus's* favourite, entered into the service of the Czar, with whom *Augustus* was in strict alliance, and a little before *Charles* compelled *Augustus* to abdicate the throne of *Poland*, and his subjects to elect *Stanislaus* in his stead. The Czar sent *Patkul*, with the title of his ambassador in *Saxony*, to prevail with *Augustus* to meet him at *Grodno*, that they might confer on the state of their affairs.

This conference took place, and immediately afterwards the Czar went from *Grodno*, to quell a rebellion in *Astracan*. As soon as the Czar was gone, *Augustus*, to the surprize of all *Europe*, ordered *Patkul*, who was then at *Dresden*, to be seized as a state criminal.

By this injurious and unprecedented action *Augustus* at once violated the law of nations, and weakened his own interest; for *Patkul* was not only an ambassador, but an ambassador from the only power that could afford him protection. The cause, however, was this: *Patkul* had discovered that *Augustus's* ministers were to propose a peace to *Charles* upon any terms, and had therefore formed a design to be before hand with him, and procure a separate peace between *Charles* and his new master the Czar. The design of *Patkul* was discovered, and

and to prevent its success *Augustus* ventured to seize his person, assuring the Czar that he was a traitor, and had betrayed them both.

Augustus was soon after reduced to beg a peace of *Charles* at any rate, and *Charles* granted it upon certain conditions, one of which was that he should deliver up *Patkul*. This condition reduced *Augustus* to a very distressful dilemma; the Czar, at this very time, reclaimed *Patkul* as his ambassador, and *Charles* demanded, with threats, that he should be put into his hands. *Augustus*, therefore, contrived an expedient by which he hoped to satisfy both; he sent some guards to deliver *Patkul*, who was prisoner in the castle of *Koenigstein*, to the *Swedish* troops; but by secret orders, privately dispatched, he commanded the governor to let him escape. The governor, tho' he received this order in time, yet disappointed its intention by his villainy and his avarice; he knew *Patkul* to be very rich, and, having it now in his power to suffer him to escape with impunity, he demanded of *Patkul* a large sum for the favour; *Patkul* refused to buy that liberty, which he made no doubt would be gratuitously restored, in consequence of the Czar's requisition and remonstrance, and, in the mean time, the *Swedish* guards arrived with the order for his being delivered up to them.

By this party he was first carried to *Charles's* head quarters at *Altranstadt*, where he continued three months bound to a stake with a heavy chain of iron; he was then conducted to *Casimir*, where *Charles* ordered him to be tryed, and he was by his judges found Guilty. His sentence depended upon the king, and after having been kept a prisoner some months, under a guard of *Mayerfeldt's* regiment, uncertain of his fate, he was on the 28th of *September 1707*, towards the evening, delivered into the custody of a regiment of dragoons, commanded by Col. *Nicholas Hielm*. On the next day, the 29th, the colonel took the chaplain of his regiment aside, and telling him that *Patkul* was to die the next day, ordered him to acquaint him with his fate, and prepare him for it. About this very time he was to have been married to a *Saxon* lady of great quality, virtue, and beauty, a circumstance which renders his case still more affecting. What followed, in consequence of the Colonel's order to the minister will be related in his own words:

Immediately after evening-service I went to his prison, where I found him lying on his bed. The first compliments
over,

over, I entered upon the melancholy duty of my profession, and turning to the officer who had him in charge, told him the colonel's orders were, that I should be alone with his prisoner.

The officer having withdrawn, *Patkul* grasping both my hands in his, cry'd out, with most affecting anxiety and distress, My dear pastor! What are you to declare? what am I to hear?

I bring you, replied I, the same tidings that the prophet brought to king *Hezekiah*, *Set thine house in order for thou must die*. To-morrow, by this time, thou shalt be no longer in the number of the living! At this terrible warning, he bowed himself upon his bed, and burst into tears.

I attempted to comfort him, by saying, that he must, without all doubt, have often meditated on this subject: *Yes, cried he, I know, alas! too well, that we must all die; but the death prepared for me will be cruel, and insupportable*.

I assured him, that the manner of his death was to me totally unknown; but, believing that he would be prepared for it, I was sure his soul should be received into the number of happy spirits. Here he rose up, and folding his hands together, *Merciful God! let me then die the death of the righteous!* A little after, with his face inclined to the wall, where stood his bed, he broke out into this soliloquy: *Augustus! O Augustus, what must be thy lot one day? Must thou not answer for all the crimes thou hast committed?*

He then observed that he was driven out from his country, by a sentence against his life pronounced for doing what the king himself encouraged him to do, saying to him one day, in terms of much kindness, *Patkul*, maintain the rights of your country like a man of honour, and with all the spirit you are capable of. That flying into an enemy's country was also unavoidable, as the country of an ally would not have afforded him protection; but that he was in *Saxony* a wretched exile, not a counsellor, or adviser; that, before his arrival, every thing was already planned; the alliance with *Muscovy* signed; and the measures with *Denmark* agreed upon.

My inclinations, said he, after a pause, were always to serve *Sweden*, tho' the contrary opinion has prevailed. The elector of *Brandenburg* owed his title of king of *Prussia* to the services I did him, and when, in recompense, he would have given me a considerable sum of money, I thanked him,
and

and rejected the offer; adding, that the reward I most wished for, was to regain the king of *Sweden's* favour by his intercession. This he promised, and tried every possible method to succeed, but without success. After this I laboured so much for the interest of the late emperor in his *Spanish* affairs, that I brought about what scarce any other man could have affected: The Emperor, as an acknowledgment gave me an assignment for 50,000 crowns, which I humbly laid at his feet, and only implored his imperial majesty's recommendation of me to my king's favour: This request he immediately granted, and gave his orders accordingly, but in vain. Yet, not to lose any opportunity, I went to *Moscow* while the *Swedish* ambassadors were at that court, but even the mediation of the Czar had no effect. After that I distributed among the *Swedish* prisoners at *Moscow*, at least 100,000 crowns, to show the ardent desire I had, by all ways, to regain the favour of their sovereign. Would to heaven I had been equally in earnest to obtain the grace of God. — At these words another shower of tears fell from his eyes, and he remained for some moments silent, and overwhelmed with grief.

I used my best endeavours to comfort him; with the assurance that this grace would not be denied him, provided he spent the few hours still left, in earnestly imploring it; for the door of heaven's mercy was never shut, tho' that of men might be cruelly so. *This*, replied he, *this is my consolation; for thou art God and not man to be angry for ever.*

He then inveighed bitterly against *Augustus*, and reproached himself for having any connection with a wretch who was wholly destitute of all faith and honour, an atheist, without piety, and without virtue.

While he was at *Warsaw*, said he, and heard the king was advancing to attack him, he found himself extremely distressed. He was absolutely without money, and therefore obliged to dismiss some of his troops. He had recourse to my assistance, and intreated me, for the love of God, to borrow whatever sum I could. I procured him 400,000 crowns; 50,000 of which, the very next day, he squandered on trinkets, and jewels, which he gave in presents to some of his women. I told him plainly my thoughts of the matter; and by my importunity prevailed, that the *Jews* should take back their toys, and return the money they had been paid for them. The ladies were enraged; and he swore that I should, one time or other, suffer for what I had done; there indeed he kept

kept his word. Would to God he had always done so with those he employed!

I now left him for a short time, and at seven in the evening I returned; and the officer being retired, he accosted me, with a smiling air, and an appearance of much tranquillity: — Welcome, dear Sir, the weight that lay heavy on my heart is removed, and I already feel a sensible change wrought in my mind. I am ready to die; death is more eligible than the solitude of a long imprisonment. Would to heaven only, that the kind of it were less cruel. Can you, my dear sir, inform me in what manner I am to suffer? I answered, that it had not been communicated to me; but that I imagined it would pass over without noise, as only the colonel and myself had notice of it.

That, reply'd he, I esteem as a favour, but have you seen the sentence? Or must I die, without being either heard or condemned? My apprehensions are of being put to intolerable tortures. I comforted him in the kindest manner I could; but he was his own best comforter from the word of God, with which he was particularly acquainted; quoting, among many other passages, the following, in Greek, *We must enter into the kingdom of heaven thro' many tribulations.*

He then called for pen and ink, and intreated me to write down what he should dictate. I did so, as follows:

Testamentum, or, my last Will, as to the disposition of my effects after my death.

I. His majesty, king Augustus, having first examined his conscience thoroughly, will be so just as to pay back to my relations the sum he owes me; which, being liquidated, will amount to 50,000 crowns; and as my relations are here in service of Sweden, that monarch will probably obtain it for them.

At this he said, Let us stop here a little; I will quickly return to finish this will; but now let us address ourselves to God by prayer. Prayers being ended, "Now, cry'd he, I find myself yet better, yet in a quieter frame of mind. Oh! were my death less dreadful, with what pleasure would I ex-piate my guilt by embracing it! —"

Yes, cry'd he, after a pause, I have friends in different places, who will weep over my deplorable fate. What will the mother of the king of Prussia say? What will be the grief of the Countess Lerolde, who attends on her? But what thoughts must arise in the bosom of HER, to whom my faith

is plighted? Unhappy woman! the news of my death will be fatal to her peace of mind. My dear pastor, may I venture to beg one favour of you?,, I assured him he might command every service in my power: "Have the goodness then, said he, pressing my hand, the moment I am no more, to write — Alas! how will you set about it? a letter to Madam *Einsiedlern*, the lady I am promised to — Let her know that I die her's; inform her fully of my unhappy fate! Send her my last and eternal farewell! My death is in truth disgraceful; but my manner of meeting it will, I hope, by heaven's and your assistance, render it holy and blessed. This news will be her only consolation. Add farther, dear Sir, that I thanked her with my latest breath, for the sincere affection she bore me: May she live long and happy: This is my dying wish.,, — I gave him my hand in promise that I would faithfully perform all he desired.

Afterwards he took up a book: "This, said he, is of my own writing. Keep it in remembrance of me, and as a proof of my true regard for religion. I could wish it might have the good fortune to be presented to the king, that he may be convinced, with what little foundation I have been accused of Atheism.,, Taking it from his hand I assured him, that my colonel would not fail to present it, as soon as opportunity offered.

The rest of his time was employed in prayer, which he went thro' with a very fervent devotion.

On the 30th of *Sept.* I was again with him at four in the morning. The moment he heard me, he arose, and rendering thanks to God, assured me he had not slept so soundly for a long time. We went to prayers, and in truth his piety, and devout frame of mind, were worthy of admiration.

About six he said he would begin his confession, before the din and clamour of the people without could rise to disturb his thoughts. He then kneeled down, and went thro' his confession in a manner truly edifying.

The sun beginning to appear above the horizon, he looked out of the window, saying, *Salve festa dies!* This is my wedding-day. I looked, alas! for another; but this is the happier; for to day shall my soul be introduced into the assembly of the blessed!

He then asked me, whether I yet knew in what way he was to die? I answered, that I did not. He conjured me, not to forsake him; for that he should find in my company some consolation even in the midst of tortures.

Casting

Casting his eye on the paper that lay on the table, *This will, said he,, can never be finished.* I asked him, whether he would put his name to what was already written? *No,* replied he, with a deep sigh, *I will write that hated name no more. My relations will find their account in another place; salute them from me.*

He then addressed himself again to God in prayer, and continued his devotions till the lieutenant entered to conduct him to the coach. He wrapped himself up in his cloak, and went forward a great pace, guarded by 100 horsemen. Being arrived at the place of execution, we found it surrounded by 300 foot soldiers; but at the sight of the *stakes and wheels,* his horror is not to be described. Claspings me in his arms, *Beg of God,* he exclaimed, *that my soul may not be thrown into despair, amidst these tortures!* I comforted, I adjured him to fix his thoughts on the death of *Jesus Christ,* who, for our sins, was nailed to a cross.

Being now on the spot where he was to suffer, he bid the executioner to do his duty well, and put into his hands some money, which he got ready for that purpose. He then stretched himself out upon the wheel; and while they were stripping him naked, he begged me to pray that God would have mercy on him, and bear up his soul in agony. I did so; and turning to all the spectators, said to them: "Brethren, join with me in prayer for this unhappy man. *Yes,* cry'd he, *assist me all of you with your supplications to heaven.*

Here the executioner gave him the first stroke. His cries were terrible. *O Jesus! Jesus, have mercy upon me.* This cruel scene was much lengthened out, and of the utmost horror; for as the headsman had no skill in his business, the unhappy victim received upwards of 15 different blows, with each of which were intermixed the most piteous groans, and invocations of the name of God. At length, after two strokes given on the breast, his strength and voice failed him. In a faltering dying tone, he was just heard to say, *Cut off my head!* and the executioner still lingering, he himself placed his head on the scaffold. After four strokes with an hatchet, the head was separated from the body, and the body quartered. Such was the end of the renowned *Patkul;* and may God have mercy on his soul!

LORENS HAGAR,
Chaplain of a Regiment.

THE STORY OF LE FEVER. *)

It was some time in the summer of that year, in which *Dermond* was taken by the allies, — which was about seven years before my father came into the country, — and about as many, after the time, that my uncle *Toby* and *Trim* had privately decamped from my father's house in town, in order to lay some of the finest sieges to some of the finest fortified places in *Europe* — when my uncle *Toby* was one evening getting his supper, with *Trim* sitting behind him at a small sideboard, that the landlord of a little inn in the village came into the parlour with an empty phial in his hand, to beg a glass or two of sack: 'Tis for a poor gentleman. — I think of the army, said the landlord, who has been taken ill at my house four days ago, and has never held up his head since, or had a desire to taste any thing, till just now, that he has a fancy for a glass of sack and a thin toast, — *I think*, says he, taking his hand from his forehead, *it would comfort me.* — —

— If I could neither beg, borrow, or buy such a thing, — added the landlord — I would almost steal it for the poor gentleman, he is so ill. — I hope in God he will still mend, continued he, — we are all of us concerned for him.

Thou art a good-natured soul, I will answer for thee, cried my uncle *Toby*; and thou shalt drink the poor gentleman's health in a glass of sack thyself. — and take a couple of bottles, with my service, and tell him he is heartily welcome to them, and to a dozen more, if they will do him good.

Though I am persuaded, said my uncle *Toby*, as the landlord shut the door, he is a very compassionate fellow — *Trim*, — yet I cannot help entertaining a high opinion of his guest too; there must be something more than common in him, that in so short a time should win so much upon the affections of his host: — And of his whole family, added the corporal, for they are all concerned for him. — Step after him, said my uncle *Toby*, — do *Trim*, — and ask if he knows his name.

— I have quite forgot it, truly, said the landlord, coming back into the parlour with the corporal, — but I can ask his son again: — — Has he a son with him then? said my uncle *Toby*. — A boy, replied the landlord, of about eleven, or

*) The Life and Opinions of Tristram Shandy (by Mr. Sterne) Lond. 1763-66. 9 Vol. 8. Altenburg 1772. 6 Vol. 8.

or twelve years of age; — but the poor creature has tasted almost as little as his father; he does nothing but mourn and lament for him night and day: — He has not stirred from the bed-side these two days.

My uncle *Toby* laid down his knife and fork, and thrust his plate from before him, as the landlord gave him the account; and *Trim*, without being ordered, took away without saying one word.

Trim! said my uncle *Toby*, I have a project in my head, as it is a bad night, of wrapping myself up warm in my roquelaure, and paying a visit to this poor gentleman. — Your honour's roquelaure, replied the corporal, has not once been had on, since the night before your honour received your wound, when we mounted guard in the trenches before the gate of St. *Nicholas*; — and, besides, it is so cold and rainy a night, that what with the roquelaure, and what with the weather, 'twill be enough to give your honour your death, and bring on your honour's torment in your groin. I fear so; replied my uncle *Toby*, but I am not at rest in my mind, *Trim*, since the account the landlord has given me. — I wish I had not known so much of this affair, — added my uncle *Toby*, — or that I had known more of it: — How shall we manage it? Leave it, an't please your honour, to me, quoth the corporal; I'll take my hat and stick and go to the house and reconnoitre, and act accordingly; and I will bring your honour a full account in an hour. — Thou shalt go, *Trim*, said my uncle *Toby*, and here's a shilling for thee to drink with his servant. — I shall get it all out of him, said the corporal, shutting the door.

It was not till my uncle *Toby* had knocked the ashes out of his third pipe, that corporal *Trim* returned from the inn, and gave him the following account:

I despaired at first, said the corporal, of being able to bring back any intelligence to your honour, about the lieutenant and his son; for when I asked where his servant was, from whom I made myself sure of knowing every thing which was proper to be asked, — I was answered, that he had no servant with him; — that he had come to the inn with hired horses, which, upon finding himself unable to proceed, to join, I suppose, the regiment he had dismissed the morning after he came. — If I get better, my dear, said he, as he gave his purse to his son to pay the man, — we can hire horses from hence. — But alas! the poor gentleman will never

get from hence, said the landlady to me, — for I heard the death-watch all night long; and when he dies, the youth, his son, will certainly die with him; for he is broken-hearted already.

I was hearing this account, continued the corporal, when the youth came into the kitchen, to order the thin toast the landlord spoke of; — but I will do it for my father myself, said the youth. — Pray let me save you the trouble, young gentleman, said I, taking up a fork for the purpose, and offering him my chair to sit down upon by the fire, whilst I did it. — I believe, Sir, said he, very modestly, I can please him best myself. — I am sure, said I, his honour will not like the toast the worse for being toasted by an old soldier. — The youth took hold of my hand, and instantly burst into tears. — Poor youth! said my uncle *Toby*, — he has been bred up from an infant in the army; and the name of a soldier, *Trim*, sounded in his ears like the name of a friend; — I wish I had him here.

— I never, in the longest march, said the corporal, had so great a mind to my dinner, as I had to cry with him for company: — What could be the matter with me, an't please your honour? Nothing in the world, *Trim*, said my uncle *Toby*, blowing his nose, — but that thou art a good-natured fellow.

When I gave him the toast, continued the corporal, I thought it was proper to tell him I was Captain *Shandy's* servant, and that your honour, (though a stranger) was extremely concerned for his father; — and that if there was any thing in your house, or cellar — (And thou might'st have added my purse too, said my uncle *Toby*) — he was heartily welcome to it: — He made a very low bow, (which was meant to your honour) but no answer, — for his heart was full — so he went up stairs with the toast; — I warrant you, my dear, said I, as I opened the kitchen-door, your father will be well again. — Mr. *Yorick's* curate was smoking a pipe by the kitchen-fire, — but said not a word good or bad to comfort the youth. — I thought it wrong, added the corporal. — I think so too, said my uncle *Toby*.

When the lieutenant had taken his glass of sack and toast, he felt himself a little revived, and sent down into the kitchen, to let me know, that in about ten minutes he should be glad if I would step up stairs, — I believe, said the landlord, he is going to say his prayers, — for there was a
book

book laid upon the chair by his bed side, and as I shut the door, I saw his son take up a cushion. —

I thought, said the curate, that you gentlemen of the army, Mr. *Trim*, never said your prayers at all. — I heard the poor gentleman say his prayers last night, said the landlady, very devoutly, and with my own ears, or I could not have believed it. — Are you sure of it? replied the curate. — A soldier, an't please your reverence, said I, prays as often (of his own accord) as a parson; — and when he is fighting for his king, and for his own life, and for his honour too, he has the most reason to pray to God, of any one in the whole world. 'Twas well said of thee, *Trim*, said my uncle *Toby*. — But when a soldier, said I, an't please your reverence, has been standing for twelve hours together in the trenches, up to his knees in cold water, — or engaged, said I, for months together in long and dangerous marches; — harrassed, perhaps, in his rear to-day: — harrassing others to-morrow; — detached here; — countermanded there; — resting this night out upon his arms; beat up in his shirt the next; — benumbed in his joints; — perhaps without straw in his tent to kneel on; — says his prayers *how* and *when* he can. I believe, said I, — for I was piqued, quoth the corporal, for the reputation of the army, — I believe an't please your reverence, said I, that when a soldier gets time to pray — he prays as heartily as a parson, — tho' not with all his fuss and hypocrisy. — Thou should'st not have said that, *Trim*, said my uncle *Toby*, — for God only knows who is a hypocrite, and who is not. —

When I went up, continued the corporal, into the lieutenant's room, which I did not do till the expiration of the ten minutes, — he was lying in his bed with his head raised upon his hand, with his elbow upon the pillow, and a clean white cambrick handkerchief beside it: — The youth was just stooping down to take up the cushion, upon which I supposed he had been kneeling, — the book was laid upon the bed, — and as he rose, in taking up the cushion with one hand, he reached out his other to take it away at the same time. — Let it remain, there, my dear, said the lieutenant.

He did not offer to speak to me, till I had walked up close to his bed-side: — If you are Capt. *Shandy's* servant, said he, you must present my thanks to your master, with my little boy's thanks along with them, for his courtesy to me;

152 THE STORY OF LE FEVER.

— if he was of *Levens's* — said the lieutenant. I told him your honour was — then, said he, I served three campaigns with him in *Flanders*, and remember him, — but 'tis most likely, as I had not the honour of any acquaintance with him, that he knows nothing of me. — You will tell him, however, that the person his good nature has laid under obligations to him, is one *Le Fever*, a lieutenant in *Angus's* — but he knows me not, — said he, a second time, musing; — possibly he may my story — added he — pray tell the captain, I was the ensign at *Breda*, whose wife was unfortunately killed with a musket shot, as she lay in my arms in my tent. — I remember the story, an't please your honour, said I, very well. — Do you so? said he, wiping his eyes with his handkerchief, — then well may I. — In saying this, he drew a little ring out of his bosom, which seemed tied with a black ribband about his neck, and kiss'd it twice — here, *Billy*, said he, — the boy flew across the room to the bed-side, — and falling down upon his knee, took the ring in his hand, and kissed it too, — then kissed his father, and sat down upon the bed and wept.

I wish, said my uncle *Toby*, with a deep sigh, — I wish, *Trim*, I was asleep.

Your honour, replied the corporal, is too much concerned; — shall I pour your honour out a glass of sack to your pipe? — Do, *Trim*, said my uncle *Toby*.

I remember, said my uncle *Toby*, sighing again, the story of the ensign and his wife, with a circumstance his modesty omitted; — and particularly well that he, as well as she, upon some account or other, (I forgot what) was universally pitied by the whole regiment; — but finish the story thou art upon: — 'Tis finished already, said the corporal, — for I could stay no longer, — so wished his honour a good night; young *Le Fever* rose from off the bed, and saw me to the bottom of the stairs, and as we went down together, told me, they came from *Ireland*, and were on their route to join the regiment in *Flanders*. — But alas! said the corporal, — the lieutenants last day's march is over. — Then what is to become of his poor boy? cried my uncle *Toby*. But *Trim*, when thou madest an offer of my services to *Le Fever*, as sickness and travelling are expensive, and thou knowest he was but a poor lieutenant, with a son to subsist as well as himself, out of his pay, — why didst thou not make an offer to him of my purse; — and when thou offeredst him

him whatever was in my house, — why didst thou not offer him my house too: — A sick brother officer should have the best quarters, *Trim*, and if we had him with us, in a fortnight or three weeks he might march. — He will never march, an't please your honour, in this world, said the corporal: — He will march; said my uncle *Toby* rising up from the side of the bed, with one shoe off: — An't please your honour, in this world, said the corporal, he will never march, but to his grave: — He shall march, cried my uncle *Toby*, marching the foot which had a shoe on, though without advancing an inch, — he shall march to his regiment. — He cannot stand it, said the corporal; — he shall be supported, said my uncle *Toby*; — he'll drop at last, said the corporal, and what will become of his boy? — He shall not drop, said my uncle *Toby*, firmly. — A-well-o'day, — do what we can for him, said *Trim*, maintaining his point, — the poor soul will die: — He shall not die, by G—, cried my uncle *Toby*.

— The *accusing spirit* which flew up to heaven's chancery with the oath, blushed as he gave it in; — and the *recording angel* as he wrote it down, dropp'd a tear upon the word, and blotted it out for ever.

— My uncle *Toby* went to his bureau, — put his purse into his breeches pocket, and having ordered the corporal to go early in the morning for a physician, — he went to bed, and fell asleep. —

My uncle *Toby*, rose up an hour before his wonted time, and entering the lieutenant's room, without preface or apology, sat himself down upon the chair by the bed-side, and independently of all modes and customs, opened the curtain in the manner an old friend and brother officer would have done it, and asked him how he did, — how he had rested in the night, — what was his complaint, — where was his pain, — and what he could do to help him: — and without giving him time to answer any of the enquiries, went on and told him of a little plan which he had been concerning with the corporal the night before for him.

— You shall go home directly, *Le Fever*, said my uncle *Toby*, to my house, — and we'll send for a doctor to see what's the matter, and we'll have an apothecary, — and the corporal shall be your nurse; — and I'll be your servant, *Le Fever*.

— The blood and spirits of *Le Fever*, which were waxing cold and slow within him, and were retreating to their last citadel, the heart, — rallied back, — the film forsook his eyes for a moment, — he looked up wishfully in my uncle *Toby's* face, — then cast a look upon his body, — and that *ligament*, fine as it was, — was never broken. —

Nature instantly ebb'd again, — the film returned to its place, — the pulse flutter'd—stopp'd—went on—throb'd—stopp'd again—moved—stopp'd—shall I go on? — No.

— All that is necessary to be added is as follows: —

That my uncle *Toby*, with young *le Fever* in his hand, attended the poor lieutenant, as chief mourners, to his grave. —

When my uncle *Toby* had turned every thing into money, and settled all accounts betwixt the agent of the regiment and *Le Fever*, and betwixt *Le Fever* and all mankind, — there remained nothing more in my uncle *Toby's* hands, than an old regimental coat and a sword; so that my uncle *Toby* found little or no opposition, from the world in taking administration. The coat my uncle *Toby* gave the corporal; — wear it, *Trim*, said my uncle *Toby*, as long as it will hold together, for the sake of the poor lieutenant — and this, — said my uncle *Toby*, taking up the sword in his hand, and drawing it out of the scabbard as he spoke — and this, *Le Fever*, I'll save for thee, 'tis all the fortune, continued my uncle *Toby*, hanging it upon a crook, and pointing to it, — 'tis all the fortune, my dear *Le Fever*, which God has left thee; but if he has given thee a heart to fight thy way with it in the world, — and thou doest it like a man of honour, — 'tis enough for us.

As soon as my uncle *Toby* had laid a foundation, and taught him to inscribe a regular polygon in a circle, he sent him to a public school, where, excepting *Whitsuntide* and *Christmas*, at which times the corporal was punctually dispatched for him, — he remained to the spring of the year, seventeen; when the story of the Emperor's sending his army into *Hungary* against the *Turks*, kindling a spark of fire in his bosom, he left his *Greek* and *Latin* without leave, and throwing himself upon his knees before my uncle *Toby*, begged his father's sword, and my uncle *Toby's* leave along with it, to go and try his fortune under *Eugene*. — Twice did my uncle *Toby* forget his wound, and cry out, *Le Fever!* I will go with thee, and thou shalt fight beside me — and twice he laid his hand upon his groin, and hung down his head in sorrow and disconsolation.

My

My uncle *Toby* took down the sword from the crook, where it had hung untouched ever since the lieutenant's death, and delivered it to the corporal to brighten up; — and having detained *Le Fever* a single fortnight to equip him, and contract for his passage to *Leghorn*, — he put the sword in his hand, — if thou art brave, *Le Fever*, said my uncle *Toby*, this will not fail thee, — but fortune, said he, musing a little, — fortune may — and if she does, — added my uncle *Toby*, come back again to me, *Le Fever*, and we will shape thee another course.

The greatest injury could not have oppressed the heart of *Le Fever* more than my uncle *Toby's* paternal kindness; — he parted from my uncle *Toby*, as the best of sons from the best of fathers — both dropped tears — and as my uncle *Toby* gave him his last kiss, he slipped sixty guineas, tied up in an old purse of his father's, in which was his mother's ring, into his hand, — and bid God bless him.

Le Fever got up to the imperial army just time enough to try what metal his sword was made of, at the defeat of the *Turks* before *Belgrade*; but a series of unmerited mischances had pursued him from that moment, and trod close upon his heels for four years together after: he had withstood these buffetings to the last, till sickness overtook him at *Marseilles*, from whence he wrote my uncle *Toby* word, he had lost his time, his services, his health, and, in short, every thing but his sword; — and was waiting for the first ship to return back to him.

ACCOUNT OF THE CARDINAL XIMENES. *)

The singular character of this man, and the extraordinary qualities which marked him out for that office, at such a juncture, merit a particular description. He was descended of an honourable, not of a wealthy family; and the circumstances of his parents, as well as his own inclinations, having determined him to enter into the church, he early obtained benefices of great value, and which placed him in the way of the

*) Wm. Robertson's History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles V. London 1769. 4.

the highest preferment. All these, however, he renounced at once; and after undergoing a very severe noviciate, assumed the habit of St. Francis in a monastery of observantine friars, one of the most rigid orders in the Romish church. There he soon became eminent for his uncommon austerity of manners, and for those excesses of superstitious devotion, which are the proper characteristics of the monastic life. But notwithstanding these extravagancies, to which weak and enthusiastic minds alone are usually prone, his understanding, naturally penetrating and decisive, retained its full vigour, and acquired him such great authority among his own order, as raised him to be their provincial. His reputation for sanctity soon procured him the office of father confessor to the queen Isabella, which he accepted with the utmost reluctance. He preserved in a court the same austerity of manners, which had distinguished him in the cloister. He continued to make all his journies on foot; he subsisted only upon alms; his acts of mortification were as severe as ever; and his penances as rigorous. Isabella, pleased with her choice, conferred on him, not long after, the archbishoprick of Toledo, which, next to the papacy, is the richest dignity in church of Rome.

This honour he declined with a firmness, which nothing but the authoritative injunction of the pope was able to overcome. Nor did this height of promotion change his manners. Though obliged to display in public that magnificence which became his station, he himself retained his monastic severity. Under his pontifical robes he constantly wore the coarse frock of St. Francis, the rents in which he used to patch with his own hands. He at no time used linen; but was commonly clad in hair-cloth. He slept always in his habit, most frequently on the ground, or on boards, rarely in a bed. He did not taste any of the delicatesses which appeared at his table. But satisfied himself with that simple diet which the rule of his order prescribed. Notwithstanding these peculiarities, so contrary to the manners of the world, he possessed a thorough knowledge of its affairs; and no sooner was he called by his station, and by the high opinion which Ferdinand and Isabella entertained of him, to take a principal share in the administration, than he displayed talents for business, which rendered the same of his wisdom equal to that of his sanctity. Bold and original in all his plans, his political conduct flowed from his real character, and partook both of its virtues and its defects. His extensive genius suggested to him schemes,
vast

vast and magnificent. Conscious of the integrity of his intentions, he pursued these with unremitting and undaunted firmness. Accustomed from his early youth to mortify his own passions, he shewed little indulgence towards those of other men. Taught by his system of religion to check even his most innocent desires, he was the enemy of every thing which he could affix the name of elegance and pleasure; and, though free from any suspicion of cruelty, he discovered in all his commerce with the world a severe inflexibility of mind, and austerity of character, peculiar to the monastic profession, and which can scarce be conceived in a country where that is unknown.

Account of the famous battle of Pavia
in 1525, where King FRANCIS I.
was taken prisoner. *)

The imperial generals found the French so strongly entrenched, that notwithstanding the powerful motives which urged them on, they hesitated long before they ventured to attack them; but at last the necessities of the besieged, and the murmurs of their own soldiers obliged them to put every thing to hazard. Never did armies engage with greater ardour, or with an higher opinion of the importance of the battle they were going to fight; never were troops more strongly animated with emulation, national antipathy, mutual resentment, and all the passions which inspire obstinate bravery. On the one hand, a gallant young monarch, seconded by a generous nobility, and followed by subjects to whose natural impetuosity, indignation at the opposition they had encountered, added new force, contended for victory and honour. On the other side, troops more completely disciplined, and conducted by generals of greater abilities, fought from necessity, with courage heightened by despair. The Imperialists however, were unable to resist the first efforts of the French valour, and their firmest battalions began to give way. But the fortune of the day was quickly changed. The Swiss in the service of France, unmindful of the reputation of their country for fidelity and martial glory, abandoned their

*) Robertson's History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles V.

158 ACCOUNT OF KING FRANCIS I.

their post in a cowardly manner. *Leyva*, with his garrison, sallied out and attacked the rear of the French, during the heat of the action, with such fury as threw it into confusion; and *Pescara* falling on their cavalry, with the Imperial horse, among whom he had prudently intermingled a considerable number of Spanish foot, armed with the heavy muskets then in use, broke this formidable body by an unusual method of attack against which they were wholly unprovided. The rout became universal; and resistance ceased in almost every part, but where the king was in person, who fought now, not for fame or victory, but for safety. Though wounded in several places, and thrown from his horse which was killed under him, *Francis* defended himself on foot with an heroic courage. Many of his bravest officers gathering round him, endeavouring to save his life at the expence of their own, fell at his feet. Among these was *Bonnivet*, the author of this great calamity, who alone died unlamented. The king exhausted with fatigue, and scarce capable of farther resistance, was left almost alone, exposed to the fury of some Spanish soldiers, strangers to his rank, and enraged at his obstinacy. At that moment came up *Pomperant*, a French gentleman, who had entered together with *Bourbon* into the Emperor's service, and placing himself by the side of the monarch against whom he had rebelled, assisted in protecting him from the violence of the soldiers; at the same time beseeching him to surrender to *Bourbon*, who was not far distant. Imminent as the danger was which now surrounded *Francis*, he rejected with indignation the thoughts of an action which would have afforded such matter of triumph to his traiterous subject; and calling for *Lannoy*, who happened likewise to be near at hand, gave up his sword to him; which he, kneeling to kiss the king's hand, received with profound respect; and taking his own sword from his side, presented it to him, saying, that it did not become so great a monarch to remain disarmed in the presence of one of the Emperor's subjects.

Ten thousand men fell on this day, one of the most fatal France had ever seen. Among these were many noblemen of the highest distinction, who chose rather to perish than to turn their backs with dishonour. Not a few were taken prisoners, of whom the most illustrious was *Henry D'Albret*, the unfortunate king of Navarre.

A small body of the rear-guard made its escape under the command of the duke *Alençon*; the feeble garrison of Milan

on

ACCOUNT OF KING FRANCIS I. 159

on the first news of the defeat, retired without being pursued, by another road; and in two weeks after the battle, not a Frenchman remained in Italy.

Lannoy, though he treated *Francis* with all the outward marks of honour due to his rank and character, guarded him with the utmost attention. He was solicitous, not only to prevent any possibility of his escaping, but afraid that his own troops might seize his person, and detain it as the best security for the payment of their arrears. In order to provide against both these dangers, he conducted *Francis*, the day after the battle, to the strong castle of Pizzichitone near Cremona, committing him to the custody of Don *Ferdinand Alarcon*, general of the Spanish infantry, an officer of great bravery, and of strict honour, but remarkable for that severe and scrupulous vigilance which such a trust required.

Meanwhile *Francis*, who formed a judgment of the Emperor's dispositions by his own, was extremely desirous that *Charles* should be informed of his situation, fondly hoping that from his generosity or sympathy, he would obtain speedy relief. The Imperial generals were no less impatient to give their sovereign an early account of the decisive victory which they had gained, and to receive his instructions with regard to their future conduct. As the most certain and expeditious method of conveying intelligence to Spain, at that season of the year, was by land, *Francis* gave the Commendador *Pennalosa*, who was charged with *Lannoy's* dispatches, a passport to travel through France.

Charles received the account of this signal and unexpected success that had crowned his arms, with a moderation, which if it had been real, would have done him more honour than the greatest victory. Without uttering one word expressive of exultation, or of intemperate joy, he retired immediately into his chapel, and having spent an hour in offering up his thanksgivings to heaven, returned to the presence-chamber, which by that time was filled with grandees and foreign Ambassadors, assembled in order to congratulate him: he accepted of their compliments with a modest deportment; he lamented the misfortune of the captive king, as a striking example of the sad reverse of fortune, to which the most powerful monarchs are subject; he forbade any public rejoicings, as indecent in a war carried on among Christians, reserving them until he should obtain a victory equally illustrious over the Infidels; and seemed to take pleasure in the advantage he had gained,

160 ACCOUNT OF KING FRANCIS I.

gained, only as it would prove the occasion of restoring peace to Christendom.

Charles, however, had already begun to form schemes in his own mind, which little suited such external appearances. Ambition, not generosity, was the ruling passion in his mind; and the victory at *Pavia* opened such new and unbounded prospects of gratifying it, as assured him with irresistible force: but it being no easy matter to execute the vast designs which he meditated, he thought it necessary, while proper measures were taking for that purpose, to affect the greatest moderation, hoping under that veil to conceal his real intentions from the other princes of Europe.

Meanwhile France was filled with consternation. The King himself had early transmitted an account of the rout at *Pavia* in a letter to his mother delivered by *Pennalosa*, which contained only these words, "Madam, all is lost, except our honour.," Those who survived, when they arrived from Italy, brought such a melancholy detail of particulars as made all ranks of men sensibly feel the greatness and extent of the calamity?

After the most unfeeling and unprincely treatment of his royal captive, *Charles* at length set him at liberty, having first made him sign a rigorous treaty.

By this treaty, *Charles* flattered himself that he had not only effectually humbled his rival, but that he had taken such precautions as would for ever prevent his re-attaining any formidable degree of power. The opinion, which the wisest politicians formed concerning it, was very different; they could not persuade themselves that *Francis*, after obtaining his liberty, would execute these articles against which he had struggled so long, and to which even amidst the horrors of captivity he had consented with such reluctance. Ambition and resentment, they knew, would conspire in prompting him to violate the hard conditions, to which he had been constrained to submit; nor would arguments and casuistry be wanting to represent that which was so manifestly advantageous, to be necessary and just. If one part of *Francis's* conduct had been known, at that time, this opinion might have been founded, not in conjecture, but in certainty. A few hours before he signed the treaty, he assembled such of his counsellors as were then in Madrid, and having exacted from them a solemn oath of secrecy, he made a long enumeration in their presence of all the dishonourable arts, as well as unprincely

ACCOUNT OF KING FRANCIS. 161

cely rigour, which the Emperor had employed in order to ensnare and intimidate him. For that reason, he took a formal protest in the hands of notaries, that his consent to the treaty should be considered as an involuntary deed, and be deemed null and void. By this disingenuous artifice, for which even the treatment he had met with was no apology, *Francis* endeavoured to satisfy his honour and conscience in signing the treaty, and to provide at the same time a pretext on which to break it.

CHARACTER OF THE EMPEROR CHARLES V. *)

As *Charles* was the first prince of the age in rank and dignity, the part which he acted, whether we consider the greatness, the variety, or the success of his undertakings, was the most conspicuous. It is from an attentive observation of his conduct, not from the exaggerated praises of the Spanish historians, or the undistinguishing censure of the French, that a just idea of *Charles's* genius and abilities is to be collected. He possessed qualities so peculiar, as strongly mark his character, and not only distinguish him from the princes who were his contemporaries, but account for that superiority over them which he so long maintained. In forming his schemes, he was, by nature, as well as by habit, cautious and considerate.

Born with talents, which unfolded themselves slowly, and were late in attaining maturity, he was accustomed to ponder every subject that demanded his consideration with a careful and deliberate attention. He bent the whole force of his mind towards it, and dwelling upon it with a serious application, undiverted by pleasure, and hardly relaxed by any amusement, he revolved it, in silence, in his own breast.

He then communicated the matter to his ministers, and after hearing their opinions, took his resolution with a decisive firmness, which seldom follows such slow consultations. In consequence of this, *Charles's* measures, instead of resembling the desultory and irregular sallies of *Henry VIII.* or *Francis I.* had the appearance of a consistent system, in which all the

*) Robertson's History &c.

parts

parts were arranged, the effects were foreseen, and the accidents were provided for. His promptitude in execution was no less remarkable than his patience in deliberation. He consulted with phlegm, but he acted with vigour; and did not discover greater sagacity in his choice of the measures which it was proper to pursue, than fertility of genius in finding out the means for rendering his pursuit of them successful. Though he had naturally so little of the martial turn, that during the most ardent and bustling period of life, he remained in the cabinet inactive, yet when he chose at length to appear at the head of his army, his mind was so formed for vigorous exertions in every direction, that he acquired such knowledge in the art of war, and such talents for command, as rendered him equal in reputation and success to the most able generals of the age. But Charles possessed, in the most eminent degree, the science which is of the greatest importance to a monarch, that of knowing men, and of adapting their talents to the various departments which he allotted to them. From the death of *Chievres* to the end of his reign, he employed no general in the field, no minister in the cabinet, no ambassador to a foreign court, no governor of a province, whose abilities were inadequate to the trust reposed in them. Though destitute of that bewitching affability of manners, which gained *Francis* the hearts of all who approached his person, he was no stranger to the virtues which secure fidelity and attachment. He placed unbounded confidence in his generals; he rewarded their services with munificence; he neither envied their fame, nor discovered any jealousy of their power. Almost all the generals who conducted his armies may be placed on a level with those illustrious personages, who have attained the highest eminence of military glory; and his advantages over his rivals are to be ascribed so manifestly to the superior abilities of the commanders whom he set in opposition to them, that this might seem to detract, in some degree, from his own merit, if the talent of discovering and employing such instruments were not the most undoubted proof of a capacity for government.

There were, nevertheless, defects in his political character which must considerably abate the admiration due to his extraordinary talents. *Charles's* ambition was insatiable, and though there seems to be no foundation for an opinion prevalent in his own age, that he had formed the chimerical project of establishing an universal monarchy in Europe, it is certain

OF THE EMPEROR CHARLES V. 163

certain that his desire of being distinguished as a conqueror involved him in continual wars, which exhausted and oppressed his subjects, and left him little leisure for giving attention to the interior police and improvement of his kingdoms, the great objects of every prince who makes the happiness of his people the end of his government. *Charles*, at a very early period of life, having added the Imperial crown to the kingdoms of Spain, and to the hereditary dominions of the houses of Austria and Burgundy, this opened to him such a vast field of enterprize, and engaged him in schemes so complicated as well as arduous, that feeling his power to be unequal to the execution of these, he had often recourse to low artifices unbecoming his superior talents, and sometimes ventured on such deviations from integrity as were dishonourable in a great prince. His insidious and fraudulent policy appeared more conspicuous, and was rendered more odious, by a comparison with the open and undesigning character of his contemporaries *Francis I.* and *Henry VIII.* This difference, though occasioned chiefly by the diversity of their tempers, must be ascribed, in some degree to such an opposition in the principles of their political conduct as affords some excuse for this defect in *Charles's* behaviour, though it cannot serve as a justification of it. *Francis* and *Henry* seldom acted but from the impulse of their passions, and rushed headlong towards the object in view. *Charles's* measures being the result of cool reflection, were disposed into a regular system, and carried on upon a concerted plan. Persons who act in the former manner naturally pursue the end in view without assuming any disguise, or displaying much address. Such as hold the latter course, are apt, in forming as well as in executing their designs, to employ such refinements, as always lead to artifice in conduct, and often degenerate into deceit.

A SATIRICAL DESCRIPTION
OF
LONDON AND BATH. *)

In London, I am pent up in frowzy lodgings; where there
is not room enough to swing a cat; and I breathe the

L 2

steams

*) The Expedition of Humphry Clinker by the Author of Roderic Random, (*Dr. Smollet*) Lond. 1771. 3 Vol. 12.

steams of endless putrefaction; and these would, undoubtedly, produce a pestilence, if they were not qualified by the gross acid of sea-coal, which is itself a pernicious nuisance to lungs of any delicacy of texture: but even this boasted corrector cannot prevent those languid, fallow looks, that distinguish the inhabitants of London from those ruddy swains that lead a country-life — I go to bed after midnight, jaded and restless from the dissipations of the day — I start every hour from my sleep, at the horrid noise of the watchman bawling the hour through every street, and thundering at every door; a set of useless fellows, who serve no other purpose but that of disturbing the repose of the inhabitants; and by five o'clock I start out of bed, in consequence of the still more dreadful alarm made by the country carts, and noisy rustics bellowing green pease under my window. If I would drink water, I must quaff the mawkish contents of an open aqueduct, exposed to all manner of defilement; or swallow that which comes from the river Thames, impregnated with all the filth of London and Westminster — Mud and mire are the least offensive parts of the concrete, which is composed of all the drugs, minerals, and poisons, used in mechanics and manufactures, enriched with the putrefying carcases of beasts and men; and mixed with the scourings of all the wash-tubs, kennels, and common sewers, within the bills of Mortality.

This is the agreeable potation, extolled by the Londoners, as the finest water in the universe. — As tho the intoxicating potion, sold for wine, it is a vile, unpalatable, and pernicious sophistication, balderdash with cyder, corn-spirit, and the juice of sloes. In an action at law, laid against a carman for having staved a cask of port, it appeared from the evidence of the cooper, that there were not above five gallons of real wine in the whole pipe, which held above a hundred; and even that had been brewed and adulterated by the merchant at Oporto. The bread I eat in London, is a deleterious paste, mixed up with chalk, allum, and bone ashes; insipid to the taste, and destructive to the constitution. The good people are not ignorant of this adulteration; but they prefer it to wholesome bread, because whiter than the meal of corn: it is thus they sacrifice their taste and their health, and the lives of their tender infants, to a most absurd gratification of a mis-judging eye; and the miller, or the baker, is obliged to poison them and their families, in order to live by his profession. The same monstrous depravity appears

appears in their veal, which is bleached by repeated bleedings, and other villainous arts, till there is not a drop of juice left in the body, and the poor animal is paralytic before it dies; so void of all taste, nourishment, and savour, that a man might dine as comfortably on a white fricasee of kidskin gloves, or chip hats from Leghorn.

As they have discharged the natural colour from their bread, their butchersmeat, and poultry, their cutlets, ragouts, fricasees, and sauces of all kinds; so they insist upon having the complexion of their pot-herbs mended, even at the hazard of their lives. Perhaps, you will hardly believe they can be so mad as to boil their greens with brass half-pence, in order to improve their colour; and yet nothing is more true — Indeed, without this improvement in the colour, they have no personal merit. They are produced in an artificial soil, and taste of nothing but the dunghills, from whence they spring. My cabbage, cauliflowers, and asparagus in the country, are as much superior in flavour to those that are sold in Covent-garden, as my heath mutton is to that of St. James's market; which, in fact, is neither lamb nor mutton, but something betwixt the two, gorged in the rank fens of Lincoln and Essex, pale, coarse, and frowzy — As for the pork, it is the flesh of an abominable carnivorous animal, fed with horse-flesh and distillers grains; and the poultry is all rotten, in consequence of a fever, occasioned by the infamous practice of sewing up the gut, that they may be the sooner fattened in coops, in consequence of this cruel retention.

On the fish, I need say nothing in this hot weather, but that it comes sixty, seventy, fourscore, and a hundred miles by land carriage: a circumstance sufficient, without any comment, to turn a Dutchman's stomach, even if his nose was not saluted in every alley with the sweet flavour of *fresh* mackarel, selling by retail. — This is not the season for oysters; nevertheless, it may not be amiss to mention, that the right Colchester are kept in slimepits, occasionally overflowed by the sea; and that the green colour, so much admired by the voluptuaries of this metropolis, is occasioned by the vitriolic scum, which rises on the surface of the stagnant and stinking water — Our rabbits are bred and fed in the poulterer's cellar, where they have neither air nor exercise, consequently they must be firm in flesh, and delicious in flavour; and there is no game to be had for love or money.

166 A SATIRICAL DESCRIPTION

It must be owned, that Covent-garden affords some good fruit; which, however, is always engrossed by a few individuals of over-grown fortune, at an exorbitant price; so that little else than the refuse of the market falls to the share of the community; and that is distributed by such filthy hands, as I cannot look at without loathing. It was but yesterday that I saw a dirty barrow-bunter in the street, cleaning her fruit with her own spittle; and, who knows but some fine lady of St. James's parish might admit into her delicate mouth those very cherries, which had been rolled and moistened between the chops of a St. Giles's huckster — I need not dwell upon the pallid, contaminated mass, which they call strawberries; soiled and tossed by greasy paws through twenty baskets crusted with dirt; and then presented with the worst milk, thickened with the worst flour into a bad likeness of cream: but the milk itself should not pass unanalysed, the produce of faded cabbage-leaves and sour draff, lowered with hot water, frothed with bruised snails, carried thro' the street; in open pails, exposed to foul rinsings, discharged from doors and windows, over-flowings from mudcarts, splatterings from coach-wheels, dirt and trash chucked into it by roguish boys for the joke's sake, &c.

I shall conclude this catalogue of London dainties, with the table-beer, guiltless of hops and malt, vapid and nauseous: much fitter to facilitate the operation of a vomit, than to quench thirst and promote digestion; the tallowy rancid mass, called butter, manufactured with candle grease and kitchen-stuff; and their fresh eggs imported from France and Scotland — Now, all these enormities might be remedied with a very little attention of the police, or civil regulation; but the wise patriots of London have taken it into their heads, that all regulation is inconsistent with liberty; and that every man ought to live in his own way, without restraint — Nay, as there is not sense enough left among them to be discomposed by the nuisances I have mentioned, they may, for aught I care, wallow in the mire of their own pollution.

Bath is so much altered, that I can scarce believe it is the same place that I frequented about thirty years ago. Methinks I hear you say, "Altered it is, without doubt; but then it is altered for the better; a truth which, perhaps, you would own without hesitation, if you yourself was not altered for the worse.," The reflexion may, for aught I know, be just. The inconveniencies which I overlooked in the high-day of health,

health, will naturally strike with exaggerated impression on the irritable nerves of an invalid, surprised by premature old age, and shattered with long suffering — But, I believe, you will not deny, that this place, which nature and providence seemed to have intended as a resource from distemper and disquiet, is become the very center of racket and dissipation. Instead of that peace, tranquility and ease, so necessary to those who labour under bad health, weak nerves, and irregular spirits; here we have nothing but noise, tumult, and hurry; with the fatigue and slavery of maintaining a ceremonial; more stiff, formal, and oppressive, than the etiquette of a German elector. A national hospital it may be; but one would imagine, that none but lunatics are admitted; and, truly, I will give you leave to call me so, if I stay much longer at Bath. — But I shall take another opportunity to explain my sentiments at greater length on this subject — I was impatient to see the boasted improvements in architecture, for which the upper parts of the town have been so much celebrated, and to other day I made a circuit of all the new buildings. The square, though irregular, is, on the whole, pretty well laid out, spacious, open, and airy; and, in my opinion, by far the most wholesome and agreeable situation in Bath, especially the upper side of it; but the avenues to it are mean, dirty, dangerous, and indirect. Its communication with the baths, is through the yard of an inn, where the poor trembling valetudinarian is carried in a chair, betwixt the heels of a double row of horses, wincing under the currycombs of grooms and postilions, over and above the hazard of being obstructed, or overturned by the carriages which are continually making their exit or their entrance — I suppose after some chairmen shall have been maimed, and a few lives lost by those accidents, the corporation will think, in earnest, about providing a more safe and commodious passage. The Circus is a pretty bauble, contrived for shew, and looks like Vespasian's amphitheatre turned outside in. If we consider it in point of magnificence, the great number of small doors belonging to the separate houses, the inconsiderable height of the different orders, the affected ornaments of the architrave, which are both childish and misplaced, and the areas projecting into the street, surrounded with iron rails, destroy a good part of its effect upon the eye; and, perhaps, we shall find it still more defective, if we view it in the light of convenience. The figure of each separate dwelling-house, being the seg-

ment of a circle, must spoil the symmetry of the rooms, by contracting them towards the street windows, and leaving a larger sweep in the space behind. If, instead of the areas and iron rails, which seem to be of very little use, there had been a corridore with arcades all round, as in Covent-Garden, the appearance of the whole would have been more magnificent and striking; those arcades would have afforded an agreeable covered walk, and sheltered the poor chairmen and their carriages from the rain, which is here almost perpetual. At present, the chairs stand soaking in the open street, from morning to night, till they become so many boxes of wet leather, for the benefit of the gouty and rheumatic, who are transported in them from place to place. Indeed, this is a shocking inconvenience that extends over the whole city; and, I am persuaded, it produces infinite mischief to the delicate and infirm; even the close chairs, contrived for the sick, by standing in the open air, have their frize linings impregnated, like so many sponges, with the moisture of the atmosphere, and those cases of cold vapour must give a charming check to the perspiration of a patient, piping hot from the Bath, with all his pores wide open.

But, to return to the Circus; it is inconvenient from its situation, at so great a distance from all the markets, baths, and places of public entertainment. The only entrance to it, through Gay-street, is so difficult, steep, and slippery, that, in wet weather, it must be exceedingly dangerous, both for those that ride in carriages, and those that walk a-foot; and when the street is covered with snow, as it was for fifteen days successively this very winter, I don't see how any individual could go either up or down, without the most imminent hazard of broken bones. In blowing weather, I am told, most of the houses in this hill are smothered with smoke, forced down the chimneys, by the gusts of wind reverberated from the hill behind, which (I apprehend likewise) must render the atmosphere here more humid and unwholesome than it is in the square below; for the clouds, formed by the constant evaporation from the baths and river in the bottom, will, in their ascent this way, be first attracted and detained by the hill that rises close behind the Circus, and load the air with a perpetual succession of vapours: this point, however, may be easily ascertained by means of an hygrometer, or a paper of salt of tartar exposed to the action of the atmosphere.

mosphere. The same artist, who planned the Circus, has likewise projected a Crescent, when that is finished, we shall probably have a star; and those who are living thirty years hence, may, perhaps, see all the signs of the Zodiac exhibited in architecture at Bath. These, however fantastical, are still designs that denote some ingenuity and knowledge in the architect; but the rage of building has laid hold on such a number of adventurers, that one sees new houses starting up in every out-let and every corner of Bath; contrived without judgment, executed without solidity, and stuck together, with so little regard to plan and propriety, that the different lines of the new rows and buildings interfere with, and intersect one another in every different angle of conjunction. They look like the wreck of streets and squares disjointed by an earthquake, which hath broken the ground into a variety of holes and hillocks; or, as if some Gothic devil had stuffed them altogether in a bag, and left them to stand higgledy piggledy, just as chance directed. What sort of a monster Bath will become in a few years, with those growing excrescences, may be easily conceived: but the want of beauty and proportion is not the worst effect of these new mansions; they are built so slight, with the soft crumbling stone found in this neighbourhood, that I should never sleep quietly in one of them, when it blowed (as the sailors say) a capfull of wind; and, I am persuaded, that my hind, Roger Williams, or any man of equal strenght, would be able to push his foot through the strongest part of their walls, without any great exertion of his muscles. All these absurdities arise from the general tide of luxury, which hath overspread the nation, and swept away all, even the very dregs of the people. Every upstart of fortune, harnessed in the trappings of the mode, presents himself at Bath, as in the very focus of observations—Clerks and factors from the East Indies, loaded with the spoil of plundered provinces; planters, negrodriers, and hucksters, from our American plantations, enriched they know not how; agents, commissaries, and contractors, who have fattened, in two successive wars, on the blood of the nation; usurers, brokers, and jobbers of every kind; men of low birth, and no breeding, have found themselves suddenly translated into a state of affluence, unknown to former ages; and no wonder that their brains should be intoxicated with pride, vanity, and presumption. Knowing no other criterion of greatness, but the ostentation of wealth,

L 5

they

they discharge their affluence without taste or conduct, through every channel of the most absurd extravagance; and all of them hurry to Bath, because here, without any further qualification, they can mingle with the princes and nobles of the land. Even the wives and daughters of low tradesmen, who, like shovel-nosed sharks, prey upon the blubber of those uncouth whales of fortune, are infected with the same rage of displaying their importance; and the slightest indisposition serves them for a pretext to insist upon being conveyed to Bath, where they may hobble country dances and cotillons, with 'squires, counsellors, and clergy. These delicate creatures from Bedfordbury, Crutched-Friars, and Botolph lane, cannot breathe in the gross air of the Lower Town, or conform to the vulgar rules of a common lodging-house; the husband, therefore, must provide an entire house, or elegant apartments in the new buildings. Such is the composition of what is called the fashionable company at Bath; where a very inconsiderable proportion of genteel people are lost in a mob of impudent plebeians, who have neither understanding nor judgment, nor the least idea of propriety and decorum; and seem to enjoy nothing so much as an opportunity of insulting their betters.

Thus the number of people, and the number of houses continue to increase; and this will ever be the case, till the streams that swell this irresistible torrent of folly and extravagance, shall either be exhausted, or turned into other channels, by incidents and events which I do not pretend to foresee. This, I own, is a subject on which I cannot write with any degree of patience; for the mob is a monster I never could abide, either in his head, tail, midriff, or members: I detest the whole of it, as a mass of ignorance, presumption, malice, and brutality; and, in this term of reprobation, I include, without respect of rank, station, or quality, all those of both sexes, who affect its manners, and court its society.,,

A CONCISE VIEW OF THE CLIMATE TRADE AND SOIL OF BARBADOS. *)

Nature hath been bountiful to fortify the coast of Barbados and rendering the great East part of that Island inaccessible to ships of fifty tons and upwards. An extensive reef of rocks runs from the south point easterly to the northward. The other part of the coast the inhabitants have at a very great expence fortified by erecting forts and batteries within gunshot of each other: the repairs and maintenance of which amount to a great charge: an expence so heavy to the country, that it is to be hoped the Government of Great Britain will some time or other by their assistance alleviate.

The Plantations of Barbados oppressed by taxes, impoverished by mismanagement and loaded by the great and necessary expences of their management, yield not now the profit they formerly afforded, notwithstanding the high estimation Europeans may set upon West-India estates, yet it is an indisputable fact, that the landed interest of Barbados (that is throughout the whole Island) does not clear communibus annis four per cent; estimating the principal at what land usually sells for: the destruction of the woods of that Island, though it renders the country more healthful, hath decreased the quantity of rain and hath been thereby detrimental to the planters. The soil of Barbados is in general fruitful, but very different in several parts of the Island; and frequently in the same estate some spots afford a heavy clay soil, other a light sand; some a dark heavy, others a light red earth: some parts wet and swampy, others dry and gravelly: but the land, almost every where for the production of sugar, requires rich manure; the preparation of which shews the skill of the planter, as some parts of the Island require a light, others a heavy manure; and sometimes both in the same estate. The manufacture of sugar is ingenious as well as useful. It is attended with great labour and expence, and requires skill and industry to perfect it. It was very early introduced into this colony.

The trade of Barbados is yet flourishing and considerable, notwithstanding the discouragements given to it by taxes, by duties, by the accession of the large Island of Jamaica, by the

*) A short History of Barbados. Lond. 1768. 8.

the conquest of Grenada, by the acquisition of the late neutral Islands, by granting a free port to Dominique, by the distillation of spirits upon the continent of America, by the want of a proper standard or regulation of the value of gold throughout the West-India Islands; and lastly, by the clandestine trade, which the Dutch of St. Eustatia have formerly been famed for.

The annual internal expence of Barbados amounts to sixteen thousand pounds, besides the considerable duties paid to the mother country. Bridgetown the metropolis of that Island before the two destructive fires in 1766 consisted of about fifteen hundred dwelling-houses and stores, chiefly built of brick and stone and which were in general spacious, and elegantly decent: the rents of the houses amounted to about forty thousand pounds per annum. There are in that Island three other towns of smaller note, called Ostin's, St. James's and Speight's.

THE BROTHERS: A COMEDY.

Act. IV. Scene III-VII. *)

Belfield junior. Sophia.

Belfield junior.

Madam, madam, will you not vouchsafe to give me a hearing?

Sophia. Unless you cou'd recall an act, no earthly power can cancel, all attempt at explanation is vain.

Belfield junior. Yet before we part for ever, obstinate, inexorable Sophia, tell me what is my offence.

Sophia. Answer yourself that question, Mr. Belfield; consult your own heart, consult your Violetta.

Belfield junior. Now, on my life, she's meanly jealous of Violetta: that grateful woman has been warm in her commendations of me, and her distemper'd fancy turns that candour into criminality.

Sophia. Hah! he seems confounded! guilty beyond all doubt.

Belfield junior. By Heaven I'll no longer be the dupe to these bad humours: Lucy Waters, Violetta, every woman she sees or hears, alarms her jealousy, overthrows my hopes, and

*) London 1771. 8.

and rouses every passion into fury. Well, Madam, at length I see what you allude to; I shall follow your advice, and consult my Violetta; nay, more, consult my happiness; for with her, at least, I shall find repose; with you, I plainly see, there can be none.

Sophia. 'Tis very well, Sir; the only favour you can now grant me, is never to let me see you again; for after what has pass'd between us, every time you intrude into my company, you will commit an insult upon good breeding and humanity.

Belfield junior. Madam, I'll take care to give you no further offence. (Exit.

Sophia. Oh! my poor heart will break!

Sophia. *Sir Benjamin Dove.*

Sir Benjamin Dove. Hey-day, Sophia, what's the matter? What ails my child? Who has offended you? Do not I see the younger Belfield part from you just now?

Sophia. O, Sir! if you have any love for me, don't name that base treacherous wretch to me any more. (Exit.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Upon my word, I am young Mr. Belfield's most obsequious servant: a very notable confusion truly has he been pleas'd to make in my family. Lady Dove raves; Sophia cries; my wife calls him a saucy impudent fellow, my daughter says he's a base treacherous wretch; from all which I am to conclude, that he has spoke too plain truths to the one, and told too many lies to the other; one lady is irritated because he has refus'd favours; the other, perhaps, is afflicted because he has obtain'd 'm. Lady Dove has peremptorily insisted upon my giving him a challenge; but, to say the truth, I had no great stomach to the business, till this fresh provocation: I perceive now, I am growing into a most unaccountable rage; 'tis something so different from what I ever felt before, that, for what I know, it may be courage and I mistake it for anger; I never did quarrel with any man, and hitherto no man ever quarrel'd with me: egad, if once I break the ice, it shan't stop here: if young Belfield doesn't prove me a coward, Lady Dove shall see that I am a man of spirit. — Sure I see my gentleman coming hither again.

(Steps aside.

Enter

174 THE BROTHERS: A COMEDY.

Enter Belfield junior.

Belfield junior. What meanness, what infatuation possesses me, that I should resolve to throw myself once more in her way! but she's gone, and yet I may escape with credit.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Ay, there he is, sure enough: by the mass I don't like him: I'll listen a while, and discover what sort of a humour he is in.

Belfield junior. I am ashamed of this weakness: I am determined to assume a proper spirit, and act as becomes a man upon this occasion.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Upon my soul I'm very sorry for it.

Belfield junior. Now am I so distracted between love, rage, and disappointment, that I could find in my heart to sacrifice her, myself, and all mankind.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Lord ha' mercy upon us, I'd better steal off and leave him to himself.

Belfield junior. And yet, perhaps, all this may proceed from an excess of fondness in my Sophia.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Upon my word you are blest with a most happy assurance.

Belfield junior. Something may have dropp'd from Violetta to alarm her jealousy; and, working upon the exquisite sensibility of her innocent mind, may have brought my sincerity into question.

Sir Benjamin Dove. I don't understand a word of all this.

Belfield junior. Now cou'd I fall at her feet for pardon, tho' I know not in what I have offended; I have not the heart to move. Fie upon it! What an errant coward has love made me!

Sir Benjamin Dove. A coward, does he say? I am heartily rejoic'd to hear it: if I must needs come to action, pray Heaven it be with a coward! I'll even take him while he is in the humour, for fear he shou'd recover his courage, and I lose mine. — So, Sir, your humble servant, Mr. Belfield! I'm glad I have found you; Sir.

Belfield junior. Sir Benjamin, your most obedient. Pray what are your commands now you have found me?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Hold! hold! don't come any nearer: don't you see I am in a most prodigious passion? Fire and fury, what's the reason you have made all this disorder in my house? my daughter in tears; my wife in fits; every thing in an uproar; and all your doing. Do you think I'll
put

put up with this treatment? If you suppose you have a coward to deal with, you'll find yourself mistaken; greatly mistaken, let me tell you, Sir! Mercy upon me, what a passion I am in! In short, Mr. Belfield, the honour of my house is concern'd, and I must, and will, have satisfaction. — I think this is pretty well to set in with; I'm horribly out of breath; I sweat at every pore. What great fatigues do men of courage undergo!

Belfield junior. Look'e, Sir Benjamin, I don't rightly comprehend what you wou'd be at; but, if you think I have injur'd you, few words are best; disputes between men of honour are soon adjusted; I'm at your service, in any way you think fit.

Sir Benjamin Dove. How you fly out now! Is that giving me the satisfaction I require? I am the person injur'd in this matter, and, as such, have a right to be in a passion; but I see neither right nor reason why you, who have done the wrong, shou'd be as angry as I, who have receiv'd it.

Belfield junior. I suspect I have totally mistaken this honest gentleman; he only wants to build some reputation with his wife upon this rencounter, and 'twould be inhuman not to gratify him.

Sir Benjamin Dove. What shall I do now? Egad I seem to have pos'd him: this plaguy sword sticks so hard in the scabbard — Well, come forth rapier, 'tis but one thrust; and what shou'd a man fear that has Lady Dove for his wife?

Belfield junior. Hey-day! Is the man mad? Put up your sword, Sir Benjamin; put it up, and don't expose yourself in this manner.

Sir Benjamin Dove. You shall excuse me, Sir; I have had some difficulty in drawing it, and am determin'd now to try what metal it's made of. So come on, Sir.

Belfield junior. Really this is too ridiculous; I tell you, Sir Benjamin, I am in no humour for these follies. I've done no wrong to you or yours: on the contrary, great wrong has been done to me; but I have no quarrel with you, so, pray, put up your sword.

Sir Benjamin Dove. And I tell you, Mr. Belfield, 'tis in vain to excuse yourself. — The less readiness you shew, so much the more resolution I feel.

Belfield junior. Well, Sir Knight, if such is your humour, I won't spoil your longing. So have at you.

Enter

176 THE BROTHERS: A COMEDY.

Enter Lady Dove.

Lady Dove. Ah! (*Shrieks*).

Belfield junior. Hold, hold, Sir Benjamin, I never fight in ladies company. Why, I protest you are a perfect Amadis de Gaul; a Don Quixote in heroism; and the presence of this your Dulcinea renders you invincible.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Oh! my Lady, is it you? don't be alarm'd, my dear; 'tis all over: a small fracas between this gentleman and myself; that's all; don't be under any surprise; I believe the gentleman has had enough; I believe he is perfectly satisfied with my behaviour, and I persuade myself you will have no cause for the future to complain of his. Mr. Belfield, this is Lady Dove.

Belfield junior. Madam, to a generous enemy, 'tis mean to deny justice, or withhold applause. You are happy in the most valiant of defenders; gentle as you may find him in the tender passions, to a man, Madam, he acquits himself like a man. Sir Benjamin Dove, in justice to your merit, I am ready to make any submission to this lady you shall please to impose. — If you suffer her to bully you after this, you deserve to be henpeck'd all the days of your life.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Say no more, my dear Bob; I shall love you for this the longest hour I have to live.

Belfield junior. If I have done you any service, promise me only one hour's conversation with your lovely daughter, and make what use of me you please.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Here's my hand, you shall have it; leave us. (*Exit Belfield junior.*)

Lady Dove. What am I to think of all this? It can't well be a contrivance; and yet 'tis strange that you little animal should have the assurance to face a man, and be so bashful at a rencounter with a woman.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Well, Lady Dove, what are you musing upon? you see you are obey'd, the honour of your family is vindicated: slow to enter into these affairs; being once engag'd, I pertinaciously conduct them to an issue.

Lady Dove. Sir Benjamin, — I — I —

Sir Benjamin Dove. Here, Jonathan, do you hear, set my things ready in the library; make haste.

Lady Dove. I say, Sir Benjamin, I think —

Sir Benjamin Dove. Well, let's hear what it is you think.

Lady

THE BROTHERS: A COMEDY. 177

Lady Dove. Bless us all, why you snap one up so — I say, I think, my dear, you have acquitted yourself tolerably well, and I am perfectly satisfied.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Humph! you think I have done tolerably well, I think so too; do you apprehend me? Tolerably! for this business that you think tolerably well done, is but half concluded, let me tell you: nay, what some wou'd call the toughest part of the undertaking remains unfinish'd; but, I dare say, with your concurrence, I shall find it easy enough.

Lady Dove. What is it you mean to do with my concurrence; what mighty project does your wife brain teem with?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Nay, now I reflect on't again, I don't think there'll be any need of your concurrence; for, nolens or volens, I'm determin'd it shall be done. In short, this it is, I am unalterably resolv'd from this time forward, Lady Dove, to be sole and absolute in this house, master of my own servants, father to my own child, and sovereign lord and governor, Madam, over my own wife.

Lady Dove. You are?

Sir Benjamin Dove. I am. Gods! what a pitiful contemptible figure does a man make under petticoat-government. Perish he that's mean enough to stoop to such indignities! I am determin'd to be free. — (*Paterfon enters and whispers Lady Dove.*) — Hah! how's this, Mr. Paterfon? What liberties are these you take with my wife, and before my face? No more of these freedoms, I beseech you, Sir, as you expect to answer it to a husband, who will have no secrets whisper'd to his wife, to which he is not privy; nor any appointments made, in which he is not a party.

Paterfon. Hey-day! what a change of government is here! Egad, I'm very glad on't — I've no notion of a female administration. (*Exit.*)

Lady Dove. What insolence is this, Sir Benjamin; what ribaldry do you shock my ears which? Let me pass, Sir, I'll stay no longer in the same room with you.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Not in the same room, nor under the same roof, shall you long abide, unless you reform your manners; however, for the present, you must be content to stay where you are.

Lady Dove. What, Sir, will you imprison me in my own house? I'm sick: I'm ill; I'm suffocated; I want air; I must and will walk into the garden.

M

Sir

Sir Benjamin Dove. Then, Madam, you must find some better weapon than your fan to parry my sword with: this pass I defend: what, do'st think, after having encounter'd a man, I shall turn my back upon a woman! No, Madam, I have ventured my life to defend your honour; 'twou'd be hard if I wanted spirit to protect my own.

Lady Dove. You monster, wou'd you draw your sword upon a woman?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Unless it has been your pleasure to make me a monster, Madam, I am none.

Lady Dove. Would you murder me, you inhuman brute? Would you murder your poor fond defenceless wife?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Nor tears, nor threats, neither scolding, nor soothing, shall shake me from my purpose: your yoke, Lady Dove, has laid too heavy upon my shoulders; I can support it no longer: to-morrow, Madam, you leave this house.

Lady Dove. Will you break my heart, you tyrant? Will you turn me out of doors to starve, you barbarous man?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Oh! never fear; you will fare to the full as well as you did in your first husband's time; in your poor, dear, dead Mr. Searcher's time. You told me once you priz'd the paltry grey-hound that hung at his button-hole, more than all the jewels my folly had lavish'd upon you. I take you at your word; you shall have your bawble, and I will take back all mine; they'll be of no use to you hereafter.

Lady Dove. O! Sir Benjamin, Sir Benjamin, for mercy's sake, turn me not out of your doors! I will be obedient, gentle, and complying, for the future; don't shame me; on my knees, I beseech you don't.

Enter Belfield senior.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Mr. Belfield, I am heartily glad to see you; don't go back, Sir; you catch us indeed a little unawares; but these situations are not uncommon in well-ordered families; rewards and punishments are the life of government, and the authority of a husband must be upheld.

Belfield senior. I confess, Sir Benjamin, I was greatly surpriz'd at finding Lady Dove in that attitude: but I never pry into family secrets; I had much rather suppose your Lady was on her knees to intercede with you in my behalf, than be told
the

THE BROTHERS: A COMEDY. 179

she was reduc'd to that humble posture for any reason that affects herself.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Sir, you are free to suppose what you please for Lady Dove; I'm willing to spare you that trouble on my account; and therefore, I tell you plainly, if you will sign and seal your articles this night, to-morrow morning Sophia shall be yours: I'm resolv'd that the self-same day, which consecrates the redemption of my liberty, shall confirm the surrender of yours.

Lady Dove. O! Mr. Belfield, I beseech you, intercede with this dear cruel man in my behalf; wou'd you believe that he harbours a design of expelling me out of his house, on the very day too when he purposes celebrating the nuptials of his daughter?

Belfield senior. Come, Sir Benjamin, I must speak to you now as a friend in the nearest connection; I beg you will not damp our happiness with so melancholy an event: I will venture to pledge myself for her ladyship.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Well for your sake perhaps I may prolong her departure for one day; but I'm determin'd, if she does stay to-morrow, she shall set the first dish upon the table; if 'tis only to shew the company what a refractory wife in the hands of a man of spirit may be brought to submit to. Our wives, Mr. Belfield, may tease us and vex us, and still escape with impunity; but if once they thoroughly provoke us, the charm breaks, and they are lost for ever. (*Exeunt.*)

Scheme for a new Memorandum-Book for the use of the Ladies, with a specimen. *)

Among the many Pocket-Companions, New Memorandum-Books, Gentleman and Tradesman's Daily Assistants, and other productions of the like nature, calculated for the use of those who mix in the bustle of the world, I cannot but applaud those polite and elegant inventions, The *Ladies Memorandum-Books*, as these seem chiefly adapted to the more important businesses of pleasure and amusement. I shall not take upon me to determine which is the most preferable: each of them being, if you believe the solemn asseverations of their proprietors, "the best and most complete of its kind that has hitherto been published.,,

M 2

The

*) The Adventurer (by Mr. Hawksworth) Lond. 1766. 4 Vol. 2.

180 SCHEME FOR A NEW MEM. BOOK

The utility of these little books, with respect to the fair sex, is on the first view apparent; as they are divided for each day of the week into distinct columns, allotted to the several branches of *Engagements*, *Expences*, and *Occasional Memorandums*. These, indeed, comprehend every thing that can either attract their regard, or take up their time: I shall therefore point out some particular advantages that will arise from a right use and regulation of them.

With regard to *Engagements*, it is very well known, what embarrassments, jealousies, and quarrels, have arisen from an erroneous management in that most essential part of female transactions, the paying and receiving of visits. It has hitherto been usual to trust entirely in this point to the care of an illiterate footman, or heedless porter, who is to take account of all the raps at the door, and to enter the names of the several visitants in a regular journal. Hence it frequently happens, that the bond of amity is dissolved, and perpetual variance created between families, by the mistake or forgetfulness of a servant. Lady *Formal* and Mrs. *Prim* were once the most intimate females living: they courted to one another regularly at church and the playhouse, talked together wherever they met, and left their names once a month alternately at each other's house for several years, till it happened that Lady *Formal's* Swiss forgot to set down Mrs. *Prim's* last visit to her ladyship; which occasions them now to stare at one another like perfect strangers, while each considers the other as guilty of that most atrocious crime, the owing a visit. A card was sent two months beforehand to invite Mrs. *Gadabout* to a rout; but by the negligence of the maid it unfortunately miscarried, before the date of it was posted in the day-book, and consequently she was prevented from going. The affront was unpardonable; her absence rendered one whist-table useless; the neglect was told every where; and the innocent Mrs. *Gadabout* wonders at the reason why she is so seldom invited as a party in card-assemblies. These lamentable mistakes are, therefore, effectually guarded against by the use of the *Memorandum-Book*, which puts it in every lady's power to keep a more exact register of all her *Engagements*, and to state the balance of visits fairly between debtor and creditor.

And as there is certainly no virtue more amiable, or of greater emolument, than female œconomy, to which nothing contributes more than a just knowledge of expences, the *Memorandum-Book*, has also wisely provided for this; in which,
under

FOR THE USE OF THE LADIES &c. 181

under the article of *Expences*, the lady may set down the particular sums laid out in masquerade tickets, subscription concerts, wax-lights for routs, drums or hurricanes, birthday suits, chair-hire, and the like: she may also know the true balance between her winnings and losings, and make a due registry of her debts of honour. For want of this method many widows of distinction have imperceptibly run out the whole income of their jointures in a few months, and been forced to retire the rest of the year into country lodgings; and many married ladies have been constrained to petition the brutes their husbands for the advance of a quarter's pin-money, to satisfy the importunate dunnings of a needy honourable gamester.

The blank allotted for *Occasional Memorandums* may be filled up from time to time with the lye of the day, topics of scandal, names and abodes of milliners, descriptions of new fashions, and a hundred other circumstances of equal importance. This will greatly relieve the memory, and furnish an inexhaustible store of matter for polite conversation.

There is another very pleasing advantage arising from the use of these books, as we are informed by one of the compilers, who acquaints us, that "if preserved, they will enable any lady to tell what business she has transacted, and what company she has been in, every day: during any period of her life.," How enchanting, how rapturous, must such a review prove to those who make a figure in the polite world! to live over their days again! to recall the transporting idea of masquerades, plays, concerts, cards, and dress! to revive lost enjoyments, and in imagination to tread over again the delightful round of past pleasures!

I was led to the consideration of this subject by a visit I the other day made a polite lady, whom I found earnestly employed in writing. I would have withdrawn immediately; but she told me she was only entering some particulars in her memorandum-book, which would soon be finished, and desired me to take a chair. I expressed some curiosity to know her method; upon which she very frankly put the book into my hand, bidding me peruse it; "for," says she, "I do nothing that I need be ashamed of.," As she was soon after called out of the room, I took the opportunity of transcribing her first week's account, which I shall faithfully present to my fair readers, as a farther illustration of the use of these books, and if they please, as a pattern for their practice.

182 SCHEME FOR A NEW MEM. BOOK

Engagements.

January.

1. *Monday.* To call at Deard's in the morning. To dine with my husband's uncle, the city merchant.

2. *Tuesday.* In the morning with the Miss Flareits, to drive to the silk-merciers, &c. At night to go to the Genii.

3 *Wednesday.* Expect Mademoiselle la Toure to try on my French head. In the Evening to pay fortythree visits.

4. *Thursday.* My own day at home. To have a drum major and seventeen card-tables.

5. *Friday.* To go to the auction with Lady Nicknack. To dine at home with a parcel of my husband's city relations.

6. *Saturday.* Monsieur Le Frise all the morning to dress my head. At night (being Twelfth-night) at court. To dance, if I can, with the handsome Bob Brilliant.

7. *Sunday.* If I rise soon enough, Saint James's Church. In

Occasional Memorandums.

City politeness intolerable! Crammed with mince-pies, and fatigued with compliments of the season! Play at Pope Joan for pence; O the creatures!

A beautiful new French brocade at Silvertongue's on Ludgatehill. Mem. To teize my husband to buy me a suit of it. Engaged the stage-box for Woodward's night.

Mademoiselle the milliner tells me Lady Z's in the straw, — Told it as a great secret at Lady F's, the countess of L's, Mrs. R's, &c. &c. &c.

Miss Sharp is a greater cheat than her mamma. Company went before five. Stupid creature Mrs. Downright! never to have read Hoyle!

Lady Nicknack finely taken in. The whole day a blank. Head-ach. Could not dress. Went to bed horrid soon; — before one. Husband drunk. Lay alone, my maid sat by me.

My left temple singed with the curling iron. Several fine French dresses at court; but lady Homebred's, poultry English! Sir John Dapperwit whispered me, that Miss Bloom was almost as charming as myself. She must paint I am certain.

Not up till two. Finished my letter at six, and sent John express

FOR THE USE OF THE LADIES, &c. 183

In the afternoon to write a defence of Hoyle to Miss Petulant at Bath, who has controverted some of his principles. Lady Brag's in the evening. express with it. Bad luck at night. Never could win on Sundays. Miss Serious, who hates cards, says it is a judgment.

Among the articles under *Expences* I found the following.

January.	l.	s.	d.
1. Bought at Deard's, a bauble for new year's gift to my little god-child - -	5	5	0
3. To Mrs. La Toure in part of her bill -	31	10	0
To ditto for extraordinary trouble -	3	12	0
5. Bought at the auction, a china lap dog -	4	9	0
6. Monsieur le Frise, for dressing my head, &c. -	0	10	6
7. Lost at cards, at Lady Brag's - -	47	5	0

I intend in a future paper to take notice of some other advantages to be drawn from such a use of those *Memorandum-Books*, as above stated; and shall at present conclude with desiring my female readers to supply themselves immediately, and to send me an account of the use they make of them.

THE CHARACTER OF A GAMESTER DEFENDED. *)

If gaming does an aged fire entice,
Then my young master swiftly learns the vice,
And shakes, in hanging sleeves, the little box and dice.

Dryden.

To the *Adventurer*.

Sir,

It is a remark of some Philosophers, that there is a malignity in human nature, which urges every man to depress him who is already sinking. The *Gamester* is a character, at which the artillery of the Legislature has been long levelled: the practice of his profession has been rendered extremely difficult, and the instruments of it have been destroyed wherever they could be found; he has been persecuted by

M 4

Justi-

*) The *Adventurer*. &c.

Justices, Constables, and Watchmen; he has languished in Newgate, and toiled in Bridewell. Under this accumulated distress, he is not the object of pity but contempt; every mouth is open against him; he is cursed by the mechanic and the trader, derided by wits, and hooted by the mob. In defence of this injured character, which I have long born, and of which I am not yet ashamed, permit me to appear in your paper.

In the first place, Sir, the *Gamester* is a Gentleman: and though he has been insulted by beggars and cits, the polite world is still in his interest; and he has still friends at Westminster, from the grey-headed General to the beardless Senator. With the character of a Gentleman, there is but one vice which is now believed to be wholly incompatible; and such is the malice of our enemies, that we have been degraded by the imputation of it, and our ruling passion is said to be *Avarice*.

But, can he be avaricious, who trusts his whole property to Chance? who immediately circulates what he wins, with a liberality that has been censured by others as profusion? Can Avarice be his motive to play, who, with twenty thousand pounds in the funds, sits down with a man whose whole estate he knows to be in his pocket, and to amount to no more than ten pieces? As the love of money appears incontestibly not to govern one of these persons, it cannot be proved to govern the other: The charge of Avarice is, indeed, so ridiculous and absurd, that I am ashamed of an attempt to confute it.

This charge might with great justice be retorted upon Trade, which, when put in competition with gaming, must appear to great disadvantage. Trade has besides introduced all the superfluities that have enervated and corrupted mankind; Trade has even produced opposite evils; it has pampered luxury, and wearied labour; but Gaming has done neither.

Trade, indeed, circulates property; but property might with greater advantage be circulated by Gaming. If it be asked, how the persons employed in this delightful circulation of property, are to be furnished with the necessaries of life, when Trade is at an end; I answer, that the necessaries of life, in the estimation of *Virtue* and the *Gamester*, are few; a sheepskin, a hovel, and a dice-box, would furnish the Gamester with sufficient apparel, shelter, and entertainment; and with these he would be as happy as he is now; for he
has

has no power of acquiring happiness that is not exerted in play, and of other happiness he has indeed no conception.

If play was then universally pursued, as at once comprehending all business and all pleasure, one man might not only grow rich, and another poor, but the same person might alternately pass thro' all the vicissitudes of fortune, while he sat upon the ground in the sun, without toiling in the manufactory, or sweating at the forge, without the perplexity of accompts, or the perils of a voyage.

If it be again asked, when life is reduced to this state of primitive simplicity, what would be the advantage of wealth? I answer, the same as it is at present to those who possess more than they spend, a consciousness that they are wealthy; and those who are capable of more exalted felicity, would enjoy in the acquisition the transport of winning, without considering money to have any power, quality or use, but as a stake.

These, indeed, are Utopian scenes; and I return, with a sigh, to vindicate my profession from other imputations, which are equally false and injurious.

It has been said, that we are strangers to reciprocal felicity; and that the happiness of one Gamester is produced by the misery of another, the pain of him who loses being always proportioned to the pleasure of the winner. But this is only the cavil of popular prejudice: If I am happy, what is it to me who else is miserable? Every man, whatever he may pretend, is concerned only for himself; and might, consistent with right reason, cut any other man's throat if he could escape punishment, and secure to himself any advantage by the fact. If any of your readers have still scruples, and desire to see this doctrine farther illustrated, I refer them to the great Dr. *Mandeville's* Fable of the Bees.

Among other enemies, that have been encouraged to fall upon the *Gamester* in his distress, is Bigotry or Religion; for I consider both these terms as expressions of the same idea. Bigotry then accuses us with exercising our employment on a Sunday; but this accusation is the effect of such complicated folly ignorance and malice, that it could have had no other author. Not to insist that a Gentleman is under no moral obligation to regard one day more than another, is he to be insulted for doing that, which has a direct tendency to destroy luxury root and branch, on a Sunday? Shall Virtue, in this enlightened age, be given up to Ceremony; and Patriotism

186 THE CHAR. OF A GAMESTER &c.

be stigmatized as Impiety? I have, on every other article, been able to keep my temper; but I can never bear the cant of Bigotry with patience.

There is, however, another charge, which I shall not obviate as an imputation of prophaneness, but of folly. It is said that we utter the most horrid oaths and imprecations; that we invoke beings whom we do not believe to exist, and denounce curses that can never be fulfilled. This has, indeed, been practised in our assemblies; but by those only who are novices in the profession: for among other advantages that arise from Gaming, is such a silent acquiescence in the will of Fortune, as would do honour to a Stoic; or, at least, a calm philosophical immutability of countenance, by which all that passes in the bosom is concealed.

This acquisition, it must be confessed, requires some parts and long practice; but there have been many illustrious examples of it among us. A Gentleman, my particular friend, who had the honour to be many years an eminent Gamester, being without money, committed a robbery upon the highway, to procure another stake, that he might return to his profession: It happened unfortunately that he was taken; and though he had great interest with some persons that shall be nameless, yet he was convicted and hanged. This Gentleman's ill-luck continued all the while he was in gaol; so that he was compelled to dispose of his body to the Surgeons, and lost the money to a friend who visited him in the cells, the night before execution. He appeared, however, next morning with great composure; no reflection on the past, no anticipation of the future, caused him once to change countenance during his passage to the gallows; and though he was about to receive death from a greasy scoundrel, whom he knew once to have been a butcher, yet he swore but two oaths in the cart; and was so indifferent as to what should afterwards befall him, that he bravely refused to say Amen to the Prayers.

If by your communication of these hints, the clamours of slander shall be silenced, and the true character of a *Gamester* shall be more generally known, — I have secrets, which may be communicated *entre nous*, — and the next dead set — you understand me — I am a man of honour, and you may command,

Sir, Yours, &c.

DE-

DESCRIPTION OF THE DUTCH COLONIES OF BERBICE, DEMERARY AND ESSEQUEBO. *)

Rio Demerary, Nov. 15, 1766.

Dear Brother,

From my preceding Letters you will be able to form an idea of the state of *Guiana* before the *European* Nations visited, and settled themselves on this Coast. It now remains for me briefly to inform you of the subsequent changes which have been induced by *European* Policy, Industry, and Luxury, Religion I omit, because that seems to have had no influence in these alterations. It is my intention, however, to confine my information, relative to these particulars, solely to that part of *Guiana*, which is inhabited by the subjects of the United Provinces; my knowledge of the other *European* Colonies being too imperfect to merit a communication.

The most ancient and considerable of all the *Dutch* Colonies in *Guiana*, is *Surinam*; but as that River, with its Settlements, which were made first by the Subjects of *England*, are already sufficiently known in *Europe*, I shall omit a description of them.

Next in the order of situation is the Colony of *Berbice*, situated on the shores of the River of that name, about twenty-five leagues N. W. by W. $\frac{1}{2}$ N. distant from *Surinam*, running from North to South, and discharging itself into the *Atlantic* Ocean. The Coast on each side of the River forms a Bay at its entrance, which is near a mile in width, having a small Island in the middle, known by the name of *Crab Island*. Opposite this Island, on the eastern shore, is a small Post, with several pieces of cannon and some soldiers; but the channel on the other side, which is navigable for vessels of any burthen, is undefended, and covered by the Island from the guns on the opposite shore. Without the entrance of this River is a Bar, which, at high tide, has seldom more than sixteen feet of water; but within, the water is of sufficient depth, and the river is navigable for ships of burthen, two hundred miles from its mouth.

The Plantations are situated on each side of the River, and extend near three hundred miles from its entrance; Fort *Nassau*, which

*) (Bancroft's) Natural history of *Guiana*. Lond. 1769. 8.

which is the Seat of Government, and contiguous to which are the Public Offices, Churches, and Houses of the Civil and Military Offices, being situated at one hundred miles from the mouth of the River; the *Dutch* having here, as in all their Colonies, neglected the lower and more fertile land, near the sea-coast, for that which is more elevated, in the interior part of the country. At present, however, they are endeavouring to repair their error, and the Seat of Government is soon to be removed to a point of land on the eastern shore of *Berbice*, about a mile from its entrance, which is formed between *Berbice* and the River *Conya*, which there discharges itself into the former.

Conya is a narrow, but deep river, running from south to north, but diverging somewhat easterly from *Berbice*. There are several Plantations on the sides of this river, which makes a part of the Colony of *Berbice*, which is at present under the government of his Excellency *John Heyliger*, Esquire, who is styled Governor General.

This, like all the *Dutch* Colonies in the *West-Indies*, is under the Jurisdiction of the *Dutch West-India* Company, and the lands are granted *gratis*, by the Governor and Court of Policy, to petitioners, upon conditional terms of settlement; and if these are not complied with, the land again reverts to the donors, and is granted to other petitioners. The inhabitants of this Colony, however, as well as those of *Surinam*, are restricted from transmitting the produce of their Plantations (which is chiefly Sugar, Coffee, Cotton, and Cocoa,) to any Port which is not within the Province of *Holland*; as those of *Demerary* and *Essequibo* are obliged to export theirs to the Province of *Zealand*. These are commercial regulations, which have been thought to be for the mutual interest of the Company and Inhabitants.

In the year 1763 an insurrection happened among the Slaves of this Colony, who rebelled to the amount of several thousands, and massacred a considerable number of the White Inhabitants, while the rest fled to Fort *Nassau*, where, fearing their communication with the sea-coast might be obstructed, the then Governor, by the advice of his Council, precipitately blew up the Fort, and retired, with the White Inhabitants, on board several merchant ships in the River, and sailed to its entrance, there to wait for assistance from abroad. This retreat left the Rebels the undisturbed possession of the whole Colony, and threw the inhabitants of the neighbouring Colonies,

Colonies, particularly of *Demerary* and *Essequibo*, into the utmost consternation, as they were the most contiguous to *Berbice*, and apprehended a visit from the Rebels, which must have been attended with the most unhappy consequences, as their own slaves were at least five times more numerous than the White Inhabitants, and betrayed so eager a disposition for revolting, that it was feared they would not have patience to wait for assistance from their brethren in *Berbice*.

In this critical situation, however, they experienced the advantage of their connection with the subjects of *Great Britain*, as at this time a ship of war, belonging to *Gedney Clarke*, Esq; Collector of his Majesty's Customs at *Barbadoes*, which had been put into commission by Admiral *Douglas*, and was commanded by a Lieutenant of the *British* Navy, arrived with a Company of Marines, and another of Soldiers, raised at the expence of Mr. *Clarke*, who was proprietor of several plantations in *Demerary*, as were several other Gentlemen in *Barbadoes*. This armament effectually frustrated the rebellious designs of the Slaves in *Demerary*, and the civil dissensions among the Rebels of *Berbice* diverted them from their intended visit. In the interim, however, the Governor of *Berbice* received a body of Soldiers from *Surinam*, and several armed vessels from the Islands of *Curacao* and *St Eustatia*, with which he sailed up the River, and took possession of the *Danger-head*, a large Plantation belonging to the *West-India* Company, where he maintained himself till the arrival of an armament from *Holland*, when the Rebels were soon driven from the woods, from whence hunger, and the arrows of the *Indians*, obliged them to return, and seek an asylum in their former slavery. Several hundred of the chief promoters of this insurrection were however burnt; before this, several hundreds of the *Carribbee Indians* were, by the Governor of *Essequibo* and *Demerary*, engaged to take up arms against the Rebels, whom they not a little harassed, by concealing themselves in the woods by day, and setting fire to their houses in the night, by shooting arrows fired at the point among the *Troolies*, with which they were thatched, and then killing the Negroes as they fled out in confusion.

About fifteen leagues North-West from *Berbice* is the River *Demerary*, near three quarters of a mile in width at its entrance, which is in 6. deg. 46 m. Nord Latitude. On the east side is a sandy shoal, extending a little distance from the shore; to avoid this, nothing is required but to enter the
River

River near its middle, with its course in full view, when the water will be found deeper, and its entrance easier, than that of *Berbice* or *Essequibo*. A little within the mouth of the River, on the east shore, is a small Post, with several *pa-tereroes*, which are very insufficient for defending the mouth of the River against a vessel of any force, though this is the only fortification in this part of the Colony. About eight leagues from thence are three Islands, at no great distance from each other. On that which is in the middle is the residence of the Commandant, and there the Courts of Judicature are held, and the Company's Troops are stationed. This River is navigable for vessels of great burthen one hundred miles from its mouth, and is settled near one hundred miles farther. Two hundred miles from the entrance of this River are several Cataracts, from which the water falls by a long, but easy descent. Some distance above these the River divides into two branches, which diverge from each other about eight points, the one running S. W. and the other S. E. But their source has never been discovered by any *European*.

One league West from *Demerary* is the Great River *Essequibo*, which, at its entrance, is nine miles from shore to shore. In its mouth are three Islands called the *Lagueon Islands*, two of which extend some distance without the main land. Within these are the *Fortune Islands*, and within them a succession of other Islands, which is continued the distance of twelve or fourteen leagues from the River's mouth, which, on the eastern shore is defended by a Post similar to that in *Demerary*, though the Western channel is intirely defenceless. Fort *Zealand* is situated on an island known by the name of the *Fort Island*, lying about ten leagues above the entrance of the River. This Fort mounts about forty pieces of cannon, and on this Island is the usual residence of the Governor, and other Officers of Government, as well as of some of the Planters, &c. On this, and all the other Islands, as well as on each side of the River, for a great distance, are Plantations, producing Sugar, Coffee, and Cotton chiefly.

The River *Essequibo* receives a great number of creeks and rivers on each side; but the principal stream has its source more than three hundred miles from the sea-coast, diverging westerly from *Demerary*, whose course from the entrance is nearly South to the place where it divides into two branches. Besides these, there are the Rivers *Pomaroon*, *Currantine*, *Merrivina*, and a great number of small rivers and creeks dischar-

discharging themselves into the North-Sea; but as they are all unsettled, I shall not descend to a description of them. All these, as well as several of those Rivers which are settled, are unknown to *English* Geographers, and not to be discovered in any Charts of that country that I have ever seen.

Essequibo and *Demerary*, on account of their proximity, are comprized in one Colony, which bears the name of both Rivers, and is under the government of his Excellency *Laurence Storm Van Gravesande*. *Essequibo* is the most ancient, having been settled near sixty years; though no great advances were made in agriculture till lately. *Demerary*, which has been settled but little more than twenty years, at present promises fair to become a most flourishing Colony, with proper encouragement; though the *Dutch* do not bestow all the attention on these colonies which they deserve, and in some measure neglect the *West-* for the *East-Indies*.

The Plantations of these Colonies are situated in single tiers on each side of the River, extending seven hundred and fifty rods in depth from the River, but are of different extent in front, according to the productions to which they are appropriated; those for Sugar extending usually either a thousand or fifteen hundred rods in front of the River; those for Coffee or Cotton seldom exceed five hundred. Between each plantation the Company has reserved twenty-four feet of ground, on which roads are to be made, if ever a second row of plantations should be formed behind the first. Sugar plantations are deemed the most profitable, and are the objects to which all aspire. Those, however, whose fortunes are unequal to so expensive an undertaking, content themselves with Coffee or Cotton Plantations, till they have thereby sufficiently improved their stock for undertaking a greater object.

The Sugar-mills of these Colonies are either turned by mules, obtained chiefly from the *Spaniards* of *Oronoque*, by illicit traffic; or by wind, or water. The dwelling-houses are usually surrounded by piazzas, which in this climate are particularly convenient. The plantations near the sea-coast are at present esteemed much the most valuable. They indeed require to be not only surrounded with dykes, for excluding the water which overflows the adjacent woods, and to defend them from the inundation of the tides, which rise to a great height, especially near the Vernal and Autumnal Equinoxes; but also to be inclosed and intersected by trenches with gates emptying

emptying into the River, which at low tide are opened for discharging the water which may have fallen on the plantation by rain; all which requires no small labour: But it is amply repaid by other attendant advantages. The trenches serve for canals, by which the canes are, with great facility, transported to the mills; the fertility of the soil is inexhaustible; and the land, being covered with but little else than Troolies and Manicoles, is much easier cleared than in the more elevated parts of the River, where indeed dykes and trenches are unnecessary; but the fertility of the soil is much less durable, and the lands are covered with large timber, which, in hardness, solidity, and weight, is but little inferior to iron: This, however, though it augments the labour in clearing lands, is far from being the least advantageous production of this country.

Many of the largest and most flourishing Plantations, both in *Essequibo* and *Demerary*, but especially in the latter, are the property of *British* subjects, who have been induced to form settlements in this Country, by the peculiar advantages with which it is endowed; and though the *Dutch* in *Surinam*, and all their other Colonies, are ignorant of the art of converting Melasses to Rum, with advantage, yet in this Colony they have been, by the *English* inhabitants, perfectly instructed in the arts of Distillation, and produce Rum, which is not inferior, in any respect, even to that of *Jamaica*. The White inhabitants of this Colony are *Dutch*, *English*, *Swiss*, and *Germans*, but chiefly the two former. Many of these are unfortunate persons, whom the unavoidable accidents of life, or frowns of fortune, have induced to seek an asylum in distant countries, where their industry is often so amply rewarded, that they are enabled to return with opulence and credit, and bless those accidents which reduced them to the necessity of abandoning their homes, and which they once esteemed the greatest misfortune.

Agriculture, and all other labour, in these Colonies, is almost wholly performed by Negroes as the White Inhabitants undertake no laborious employment; and even the mechanics do but little more than oversee and direct the Slaves, which are at least five times more numerous than the Whites, and are therefore kept at a submissive and humble distance by severity of discipline, which not only contributes to the safety of the White Inhabitants, but even to the happiness of the Slaves; the impossibility of attaining, is ever found

found to destroy the desire of enjoyment, and rigid treatment, by annihilating every hope of liberty, renders them content with the enjoyment of slavery. That late insurrection of the Slaves in *Berbice*, who of all others were the most favoured, affords a recent example of the danger of too much indulgence to Slaves, by which they are excited to attempt the perfect recovery of liberty. In this state there is no medium; either the minds of slaves must be depressed by abject slavery, or the lives of their masters are in imminent danger. For this reason they have been oppressed by many humiliating penalties and distinctions. Their evidence, relative to a White Person, is of no validity; an attempt to strike a White Inhabitant is punished with death; and their masters or overseers, have not only the power of inflicting corporal punishment, but are in some measure allowed to exercise a right over their lives, since the putting a Negro to death, is attended only with a pecuniary punishment. In this situation they are subjected to many complicated species of misery, exposed to the tyranny of the imperious, and to an incessant toil, which will have no period but with their lives. This treatment has the appearance of cruelty, and cannot be reconciled to the principles of justice and equity; many things, however, which are repugnant to humanity, may be excused, on account of their necessity, for self-preservation.

The expence of maintaining the Slaves, in this climate, is very trifling. The first year that a slave is purchased, he is supplied with food by his master, and is assigned a piece of ground, which on Sundays he clears from the wood, and plants with yams, plantains, edda's, cassava, ocro's, &c. but especially the former, which produce ten thousand-pounds per acre. When the year is expired he recurs to his planting-ground for his future provision, which he is ever after to keep supplied with a sufficient stock for his sustenance, for which he is allowed every Sunday only; receiving, however, from his master a weekly allowance of dried fish, to the amount of a pound and an half, which is all that his master contributes towards his food. The females receive the same treatment; and the drink of both is nothing but water; yet from this water, and these farinaceous and esculent vegetables, with a morsel of dried fish, these people derive sufficient nutriment to sustain the hardest labour in the most enervating climate.

The cloathing of the Negroes (the household slaves excepted) is scarce sufficient to answer the demands of modesty. Several modern Compilers of the History of our *West-India* settlements have enumerated stockings and shoes among the articles of cloathing for the Negroes, though nothing could more certainly betray their ignorance of this subject, since a slave in stockings and shoes, in these countries, would be as uncommon a spectacle, as a Negro instructed in the principles of Christianity; and if any of them have either shirts, breeches, or petticoats, they are the produce of their own private industry, as their masters furnish only a piece of coarse blue, or brown linen, which is applied to the middle in both sexes, and a blanket, with which the slave covers himself at night, sleeping on boards only.

In these, as in all other *West-India* Colonies, the slaves diminish in number, unless recruited by successive supplies from *Africa*. This decrease has been attributed to various causes, but most commonly to hard labour and oppression, though with very little appearance of reason, since they are much more robust, healthy, and vigorous than their masters. They are, indeed, spurred to industry by the whip of correction, which is ever at their heels, and not sparingly exercised; but coarse food, with hard labour, are ever accompanied with the blessings of increased health and vigour, which the pampered effeminate sons of luxury may justly envy, but can never attain; and the true cause of their want of increase results from the voluptuous intercourse of the Whites with the young wenches. That this is the true cause of their decrease, is farther evident, from observing the situation of *Virginia* and *Maryland*, where the Slaves increase, without any addition by importation, because this pernicious copulation is there detested.

The Inhabitants derive no small assistance from the *Indians*, particularly the *Arrowauks*, some of whom reside on almost every plantation, and are employed in various services, but especially in hunting and fishing, which, being their natural employment, they are able to exercise it with uncommon art and success, and may be hired with a few baubles for several months. These *Indians*, however, are debauched by luxury and intemperance, and their manners but ill agree with those of the *Indians* who have preserved their natural innocence and simplicity; and they are encouraged in their propensity to intemperance by the Whites, who freely supply them with

with Rum, thereby to attach them more firmly to their service; a practice, which considerably impairs their health, and diminishes their numbers. Effects similar to these have happened in every part of *America*, where the *Aborigines* have maintained an intimate intercourse with the *Europeans*, from the unnatural union of our vices with the manners of the *Indians*; and it is a piece of refined and useful policy in the *Jesuit* Missionaries of *Paraguay*, to exclude their New Converts from all intercourse with Foreigners, not only to answer the purposes of that politic Society, but also to preserve them in a happy ignorance of our vices, which alone could secure them from being corrupted by their example. The cause of these effects is obvious; we contaminate them with our Vices, but withhold the Antidotes of Religion, Morality, and Literature.

The *Dutch*, in these Colonies, encourage intermarriages with the *Indian* women; and several of the most considerable families, in rank and fortune, in *Essequibo*, derive their origin from these alliances; by which the *Dutch* have acquired an ascendancy and influence over the *Indians*, which is of the utmost use and importance; and the Governor not only reserves to himself the decision of their differences, but by his order prohibits the several contiguous Tribes from committing hostilities on each other: And though he has no other means for enforcing these orders, except a few despicable soldiers, in the service of the Company, they yet receive an humble and implicit obedience.

As there are no public roads in this, or the neighbouring Colonies, for any considerable distance, the only method of travelling is by water, in Yatches, with convenient tents, elegantly ornamented, and six, eight, or ten oars, rowed by *Negroes*, or *Indians*, and that always with the current of the tide, which ebbs and flows with irresistible rapidity, in all these rivers, near two hundred miles from their entrance, by which you may conceive how level and even the country must be. When the current of the tide turns, the traveller stops, not at an inn, or tavern, for none are to be found, but at whatever plantation he chuses, where, though an intire stranger, he is made welcome to every thing it can afford; the hospitality of this Colony not permitting money to be any where received for victuals or drink; and a stranger, on his arrival here, is every where welcome to board and lodging for months or years.

The Lands of this Colony, like those of *Berbice*, are granted *gratis*, upon conditional terms of settlement; and the Governor is appointed by the Company, with the approbation of the States General, who, with his Council, which are chosen by the Burghers, or their substitutes, compose the Legislative Authority, and impose such taxes as are requisite for the support of Government. They likewise form the Supreme Court of Judicature in Criminal and Civil Causes, from which, in the latter, Appeals are allowed to *Holland* for sums exceeding twelve hundred Guilders. This Court examines the evidences, and from their testimonies determines the cause, without hearing Counsel on either side. For this conduct they have several reasons. Multiplicity of law-suits are universally allowed to be particularly detrimental to new countries. Lawyers, they think, not only tend to promote them, but also to protract, embarrass, and perplex judicial proceedings. How far these conclusions are just, I will not determine; Right and Wrong, Justice and Injustice, are sometimes so obscure, that the assistance of Council may be useful; but where the Members of a Court of Judicature, as in the present case, are but little versed in study of Law, instead of acquiring useful information, they would be in danger of being misled by the subtilities of pleadings, and the arts of litigation. Besides, this would naturally enhance the expence of judicial determinations; to prevent which, the Government is here particularly solicitous, to their honour I speak it, as in some countries the necessary expences in this particular have been so enormously augmented, not only by multiplicity of fees, but by stamps, and other duties, on the several instruments required, that the means of obtaining a judicial decision are beyond the reach, not only of the poor, but even of people in moderate circumstances, who, in effect, suffer an absolute deprivation of justice; whereas in this Colony, the whole expence of a Law-suit is but a single shilling for a Summons. I say a Summons, because the body of no inhabitant can be arrested except for a criminal offence: But the inconveniences which might result from this useful regulation are prevented, by a Law, which prohibits all inhabitants from leaving the Colony without a passport, which can only be obtained, either by previously notifying the intention of departure, or by providing security for the discharge of any remaining debts.

The

OF THE DUTCH COLONIES &c. 197

The Company has reserved to itself the right of regulating our commerce for the mutual advantage of the Parentcountry and Colonies; but in exercising this right they have been particularly attentive to the interest of the latter, as they are sensible that colonization can only be promoted by indulgence; and though we are obliged to transmit our Sugar, Coffee, Cotton, Cacao, &c. to the Province of *Sealand*, yet we have liberty to export Rum, Melasses, Timber, &c. to foreign countries, and to import from them all commodities which we want, without distinction, and uncharged with duties.

LETTERS. *)

A. Pope to Henry Cromwell Esq.

I have been so well satisfied with the country ever since I saw you, that I have not once thought of the town, or inquired of any one in it besides Mr. Wicherley and yourself. And from him I understand of your journey this summer into Leicestershire; from whence I guess you are returned by this time, to your old apartment in the widow's corner, to your old business of comparing critics, and to your old diversions of losing a game at piquet with the ladies, and half a play, or a quarter of a play, at the theatre: where you are none of the malicious audience, but the chief of amorous spectators; and for the infirmity of one sense **), which there for the most part, could only serve to disgust you, enjoy the vigour of another which ravishes you. So you have the advantage of being entertained with all the beauty of the boxes, without being troubled with any of the dulness of the stage. You are so good a critic, that it is the greatest happiness of the modern poets that you do not hear their works, and next, that you are not so arrant a critic, as to damn them (like the rest) without hearing.

I have an hundred things to say to you, which shall be deferred till I have the happiness of seeing you in town, for the season now draws on, that invites every body thither. Some of them I had communicated to you by letters before

N 3

this,

*) Alex. Pope's Works. Lond. 1752. 9 Vol. 8. &c.

**) His hearing.

this, if I had not been uncertain where you passed your time the last season: So much fine weather, I doubt not, has given you all the pleasure you could desire from the country, and your own thoughts the best company in it. But nothing could allure Mr. Wicherley to our forest, he continued (as you told me long since he would) an obstinate lover of the town, in spite of friendship and fair weather. Therefore henceforward, to all those considerable qualities I know you possessed of, I shall add that of prophecy. But I still believe Mr. Wicherley's intentions were good, and am satisfied that he promises nothing but with a real design to perform it: How much soever his other excellent qualities are above my imitation, his sincerity, I hope, is not; and it is with the utmost that I am,

Sir, &c.

H. Cromwell to A. Pope

Mr. Wicherley visited me at Bath in my sickness, and expressed much affection to me: Hearing from me how welcome his letters would be, he presently wrote to you; in which I inserted my scrawl, and after, a second. He went to Gloucester in his way to Salop, but was disappointed of a boat, and so returned to the Bath; then he shewed me your answer to his letters, in which you speak of my good nature, but, I fear, you found me very froward at reading; yet you allow for my illness. I could not possibly be in the same house with Mr. Wicherley, though I sought it earnestly, nor come up to town with him, he being engaged with others; but whenever we met, we talked of you. He praises your poem*), and even outvies me in kind expressions of you. As if he had not wrote two letters to you, he was for writing every post; I put him in mind he had already. Forgive me this wrong; I know not whether my talking so much of your great humanity and tenderness to me, and love to him; or whether the return of his natural disposition to you was the cause; but certainly you are now highly in his favour: Now he will come this winter to your house and I must go with him; but first he will invite you speedily to town. — I arrived on Saturday last much wearied, yet had wrote sooner, but was told by Mr. Gay (who gives you his service) that you was gone from home. Lewis shewed me your letter, which set me right,

*) Essay on Criticism.

right, and your next letter is impatiently expected from me. Mr. Wicherley came to town on Sunday last, and kindly surprised me with a visit on Monday morning. We dined and drank together; and I saying, *To our loves*, he replied, *it is Mr. Pope's health*. He said he would go to Mr. Thorold's, and leave a letter for you. Though I cannot answer for the event of all this, in respect to him; yet I can assure you, that, when you please to come, you will be most desirable to me, as always by inclination, so now by duty, who shall ever be

Your, &c.

A. Pope to H. Cromwell.

I received your letter the day after I had sent you one of mine and I am but this morning returned hither. The news you tell me of the many difficulties you found in your return from Bath, gives me such a kind of pleasure as we usually take in accompanying our friends in their mixed adventures; for, methinks, I see you labouring through all your inconveniencies of the rough roads, the hard saddle, the trotting horse, and what not? What an agreeable surprise would it have been to me, to have met you by pure accident, (which I was within an ace of doing), and to have carried you off triumphantly, set you on an easier path, and relieved the wandering knight with a night's lodging and rural repast, at our castle in the forest? But these are only the pleasing imaginations of a disappointed lover, who must suffer in a melancholy absence yet these two months. In the mean time, I take up with the muses, for want of your better company.

I am highly pleased with the knowledge you give me of Mr. Wicherley's present temper, which seems so favourable to me. I shall ever have such a fund of affection for him as to be agreeable to myself when I am so to him, and cannot but be gay when he is in good humour. For what remains, I am so well, that nothing but the assurance of your being so can make me better; and if you would have me live with any satisfaction these dark days in which I cannot see you, it must be by your writing sometimes to

Your, &c.

Mr. Steele to Mr. Pope.

This is to desire of you that you would please to make an Ode as of a cheerful dying spirit, that is to say, the Emperor Adrian's *Animula vagula* put into two or three stanzas for music. If you comply with this, and send me word so, you will very particularly oblige

Your, &c.

Mr. Pop's Answer.

I do not send you word I will do, but have already done the thing you desire of me. You have it (as Cowley calls it) just warm from the brain. It came to me the first moment I waked this morning: Yet you will see it was not so absolutely inspiration, but that I had in my head not only the verses of Adrian, but the fine fragment of Sappho, &c.

Mr. Addison to Mr. Pope.

I was extremely glad to receive a letter from you, but more so upon reading the contents of it. The *) work you mention, will, I dare say, very sufficiently recommend itself when your name appears with the proposals: And if you think I can any way contribute to the forwarding of them, you cannot lay a greater obligation upon me than by employing me in such an office. As I have an ambition of having it known that you are my friend, I shall be very proud of showing it by this, or any other instance. I question not but your translation will enrich our tongue, and do honour to our country; for I conclude of it already from those performances with which you have obliged the public. I would only have you consider how it may most turn to your advantage. Excuse my impertinence in this particular, which proceeds from my zeal for your ease and happiness. The work would cost you a great deal of time, and, unless you undertake it, will, I am afraid, never be executed by any other; at least I know none of this age that is equal to it besides yourself.

I am at present wholly immersed in country-business, and begin to take delight in it. I wish I might hope to see you here some time, and will not despair of it, when you engage in a work that will require solitude and retirement. I am

Your, &c.

*) Translation of the Iliad.

Mr.

Mr. Addison to Mr. Pope.

I have received your letter, and am glad to find that you have laid so good a scheme for your great undertaking. I question not but the prose *) will require as much care as the poetry, but the variety will give yourself some relief, and more pleasure to your readers.

You gave me leave once to take the liberty of a friend, in advising you not to content yourself with one half of the nation for your admirers, when you might command them all. If I might take the freedom to repeat it, I would on this occasion. I think you are very happy that you are out of the fray, and I hope all your undertakings will turn to the better account for it.

You see how I presume on your friendship in taking all this freedom with you: But I already fancy that we have lived many years together in an unreserved conversation; and that we may do so many more, is the sincere wish of.

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Addison.

Your last is the more obliging, as it hints at some little niceties in my conduct, which your candour and affection prompts you to recommend to me, and which (so trivial as things of this nature seem) are yet of no slight consequence, to people whom every body talks of and every body as he pleases. It is a sort of tax that attends an estate in Parnassus, which is often rated much higher than in proportion to the small possession an author holds. For indeed an author, who is once come upon the town, is enjoyed without being thanked for the pleasure, and sometimes ill treated by those very persons who first debauched him. Yet, to tell you the bottom of my heart, I am no way displeased that I have offended the violent of all parties already; and at the same time I assure you conscientiously, I feel not the least malevolence or resentment against any of those who misrepresent me, or are dissatisfied with me. This frame of mind is so easy, that I am perfectly content with my condition.

As I hope, and would flatter myself, that you know me and my thoughts so entirely as never to be mistaken in either, so it is a pleasure to me that you guessed so right in regard to the author of that Guardian you mentioned. But I am sorry to find it has taken air that I have some hand in those papers,

N 5

because

*) The notes to his translation of Homer.

because I write so very few as neither to deserve the credit of such a report with some people, nor the disrepute of it with others. An honest Jacobite spoke to me the sense or nonsense of the weak part of his party very fairly, that the good people took it ill of me, that I wrote with Steele, though upon never so indifferent subjects. This, I know, you will laugh at as well as I do; yet I doubt not but many little calumniators and persons of sour dispositions will take occasion hence to bespatter me. I confess I scorn narrow souls, of all parties, and if I renounce my reason in religious matters, I will hardly do it in any other.

I cannot imagine whence it comes to pass that the few Guardians I have written are so generally known for mine: That in particular which you mention I never discovered to any man but the publisher, till very lately: Yet almost every body told me of it.

As to his taking a more politic turn, I cannot any way enter into that secret, nor have I been let into it, any more than into the rest of his politics. Though it is said, he will take into these papers also several subjects of the politer kind, as before: But, I assure you, as to myself, I have quite done with them for the future. The little I have done, and the great respect I bear Mr. Steele as a man of wit, has rendered me a suspected Whig to some of the violent; but (as old Dryden said before me) it is not the violent I design to please.

I generally employ the mornings in painting with Mr. Jervas, and the evening in the conversation of such as I think can most improve my mind, of whatever denomination they are. I ever must set the highest value upon men of truly great, that is, honest principles, with equal capacities. The best way I know of overcoming calumny and misconstruction, is by a vigorous perseverance in every thing we know to be right, and a total neglect of all that can ensue from it. It is partly from this maxim that I depend upon your friendship, because I believe it will do justice to my intention in every thing; and give me leave to tell you, that (as the world goes) this is no small assurance I repose in you. I am

Your, &c.

Mr.

Mr. Pope to the Earl of Halifax.

My Lord,

I am obliged to you both for the favours you have done me, and for those you intend me. I distrust neither your will nor your memory, when it is to do good: And if ever I become troublesome or solicitous, it must not be out of expectation, but out of gratitude. Your Lordship may either cause me to live agreeable in the town, or contentedly in the country, which is really all the difference I set between an easy fortune and a small one. It is indeed a high strain of generosity in you, to think of making me easy all my life, only because I have been so happy as to divert you some few hours: But if I may have leave to add, it is because you think me no enemy to my native country, there will appear a better reason; for I must of consequence be very much (as I sincerely am)

Your, &c.

Mr. Congreve to Mr. Pope.

I have the pleasure of your very kind letter. I have always been obliged to you for your friendship and concern for me, and am more affected with it, than I will take upon me to express in this letter. I do assure you there is no return wanting on my part, and am very sorry I had not the good luck to see the Dean before I left the town: It is a great pleasure to me, and not a little vanity to think that he misses me. As to my health, which you are so kind to inquire after, it is not worse than in London: I am almost afraid yet to say that it is better, for I cannot reasonably expect much effect from these waters in so short a time; but in the main they seem to agree with me. Here is not one creature that I know, which, next to the few I would chuse, contributes very much to my satisfaction. At the same time that I regret the want of your conversation, I please myself with thinking that you are where you first ought to be, and engaged where you cannot do too much. Pray, give my humble service, and best wishes to your good mother. I am sorry you do not tell me how Mr. Gay does in his health; I should have been glad to have heard he was better.

Your, &c.

Mr.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Fenton.

Sir,

I had not omitted answering yours of the 18th of last month, but out of a desire to give you some certain and satisfactory account, which way, and at what time, you might take your journey. I am now commissioned to tell you, that Mr. Craggs will expect you on the rising of the parliament, which will be as soon as he can receive you in the manner he would receive a man *de belles lettres*, that is, in tranquillity and full leisure. I dare say your way of life (which, in my taste, will be the best in the world, and with one of the best men in the world) must prove highly to your contentment. And, I must add, it will be still the more a joy to me, as I shall reap a particular advantage from the good I shall have done in bringing you together, by seeing it in my own neighbourhood. Mr. Craggs has taken a house close by mine, whither he proposes to come in three weeks. In the mean time I heartily invite you to live with me; where a frugal and philosophical diet, for a time, may give you a higher relish of that elegant way of life you will enter into after. I desire to know by the first post how soon I may hope for you.

I am little scandalized at your complaint that your time lies heavy on your hands, when the Muses have put so many good materials into your head to employ them. As to your question, What I am doing? I answer, Just what I have been doing some years, my duty; secondly relieving myself with necessary amusements, or exercises, which shall serve me instead of physic as long as they can; thirdly, reading till I am tired; and lastly, writing when I have no other thing in the world to do, or no friend to entertain in company.

My mother is, I thank God, the easier, if not the better, for my cares; and I am the happier in that regard, as well as in the consciousness of doing my best. My next felicity is in retaining the good opinion of honest men, who think me not quite undeserving of it; and in finding no injuries from others hurt me, as long as I know myself. I will add the sincerity with which I act towards ingenious and undesigning men, and which makes me always (even by all natural bond) their friend; therefore believe me very affectionately

Your, &c.

Rev.

Rev. Dean Berckley to Mr. Pope.

I have long had it in my thoughts to trouble you with a letter, but was discouraged for want of something that I could think worth sending fifteen hundred miles. Italy is such an exhausted subject, that, I dare say, you would easily forgive my saying nothing of it: And the imagination of a poet is a thing so nice and delicate, that it is no easy matter to find out images capable of giving pleasure to one of the few, who (in any age) have come up to that character, I am nevertheless lately returned from an island, where I passed three or four months; which, were it set out in its true colours, might, methinks, amuse you agreeable enough for a minute or two. The island Inarime is an epitome of the whole earth, containing within the compass of eighteen miles, a wonderful variety of hills, vales, ragged rocks, fruitful plains, and barren mountains, all thrown together in a most romantic confusion. The air is in the hottest season constantly refreshed by cool breezes from the sea. The vales produce excellent wheat and Indian corn, but are mostly covered with vineyards intermixed with fruit-trees. Besides the common kinds, as cherries, apricots, peaches &c. they produce oranges, limes, almonds, promegranates, figs, water-melons, and many other fruits unknown to our climates, which lie every where open to the passenger. The hills are the greater part covered to the top with vines, some with chestnut groves, and others with thickets of myrtle and lentiscus. The fields in the northern side are divided by hedge-rows of myrtle. Several fountains and rivulets add to the beauty of this landscape, which is likewise set off by the variety of some barren spots, and naked rocks. But that which crowns the scene, is a large mountain, rising out of the middle of the island (once a terrible volcano,) its lower parts are adorned with vines and other fruits; the middle affords pasture to flocks of goats and sheep; and the top is a sandy pointed rock, from which you have the finest prospect in the world, surveying at one view, besides several pleasant islands lying at your feet, a tract of Italy about three hundred miles in length, the greatest part of which hath been sung by Homer and Virgil, as making a considerable part of the travels and adventures of their two heroes. The inhabitants of this delicious isle, as they are without riches and honours, so are they without the vices and follies that attend them; and were they but as much strangers to revenge,

as they are to avarice and ambition, they might in fact answer the poetical notions of the golden age. But they have got, as an alloy to their happiness, an ill habit of murdering one another on slight offences. We had an instance of this the second night after our arrival, a youth of eighteen being shot dead by our door: And yet, by the sole secret of minding our own business, we found a means of living securely among those dangerous people. Would you know how we pass the time at Naples? Our chief entertainment is the devotion of our neighbours: Besides the gaiety of their churches (where folks go to see what they call *una bella devozione* i. e. a sort of religious opera), they make fireworks almost every week, out of devotion; and (what is still more strange) the ladies invite gentlemen to their houses, and treat them with music and sweetmeats, out of devotion; in a word, were it not for this devotion of its inhabitants, Naples would have little else to recommend it, beside the air and situation. Learning is in no very thriving state here, as indeed no where else in Italy; however, among many pretenders, some men of taste are to be met with. A friend of mine told me not long since, that, being to visit Salvini at Florence, he found him reading your Homer: He liked the notes extremely, and could find no other fault with the version, but that he thought it approached too near a paraphrase: which shews him not to be sufficiently acquainted with our language. I wish you health to go on with that noble work, and when you have that, I need not wish you success. You will do me the justice to believe, that whatever relates to your welfare is sincerely wished by

Your, &c.

Dr. Atterbury, Bishop of Rochester to Mr. Pope.

I had much ado to get hither last night, the water being so rough that the ferrymen were unwilling to venture. The first thing I saw this morning after my eyes were open, was your letter, for the freedom and kindness of which I thank you. Let all compliments be laid aside between us for the future: and depend upon me as your faithful friend in all things within my power, as one that truly values you, and wishes you all manner of happiness. I thank you and Mrs. Pope for my kind reception, which has left a pleasing impression upon me, that will not soon be effaced.

Lord

Lord * * has pressed me terribly to see him at **, and told me in a manner betwixt kindness and resentment, that it is but a few miles beyond Twickenham.

I have but a little time left, and a great deal to do in it; and must expect that ill health will render a good share of it useless; and therefore what is likely to be left at the foot of the account, ought by me to be cherished, and not thrown away in compliments. You know the motto of my funeral, *Fivite, ait, fugio*. I will, as far, as I am able, follow its advice, and cut off all unnecessary avocations and amusements. There are those that intend to employ me this winter in a way I do not like. If they persist in their intentions, I must apply myself to the work they cut out for me, as well as I can. But withall, that shall not hinder me from employing myself also in a way which they do not like. The givers of trouble one day shall have their share of it another; that at last they may be induced to let me be quiet, and live to myself, with the few (the very few) friends I like: For that is the point, the single point, I now aim at; though I know, the generality of the world who are unacquainted with my intentions and views, think the very reverse of this character belongs to me. I do not know how I have rambled into this account of myself; when I sat down to write, I had no thought of making that any part of my letter.

You might have been sure without my telling you, that my right-hand is at ease; else I should not have overflowed at this rate. And yet I have not done; for there is a kind intimation at the end of yours, which I understood, because it seems to tend towards employing me in something that is agreeable to you. Pray explain yourself: and believe, that you have not an acquaintance in the world that would be more in earnest on such an occasion than I; for I love you, as well as I esteem you.

All the while I have been writing, pain, and a fine thrush have been severally endeavouring to call off my attention; but both in vain: Nor should I yet part with you, but that the turning over a new leaf, frights me a little, and makes me resolve to break through a new temptation, before it has taken too fast hold on me.

I am, &c.

Mr.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Gay.

I am extremely glad to find by a letter of yours to Mr. Fortescue, that you have received one from me; and I beg you to keep, as the greatest of curiosities, that letter of mine which you received, and I never wrote.

But the truth is, that we were made here to expect you in a short time, that I was upon the ramble most part of the summer, and have concluded the season in grief, for the death of my poor father.

I shall not enter into a detail of my concerns and troubles, for two reasons; because I am really afflicted and need no airs of grief, and because they are not the concerns and troubles of any but myself. But I think you (without too great a compliment) enough my friend, to be pleased to know he died easily, without a groan, or the sickness of two minutes; in a word, as silently and peacefully as he lived.

I should not forget to acknowledge your letter sent from Aix; you told me then that writing was not good with the waters, and, I find since, you are of my opinion, that it is as bad without the waters. But, I fancy, it is not writing, but thinking, that is so bad with the waters; and then you might write without any manner of prejudice, if you wrote like our brother-poets of these days.

The Ducheſs, Lord Warwick, Lord Stanhope, Mrs. Bellen-den, Mrs. Lepell, and I cannot tell who else, had your letters: Dr. Arbuthnot and I expect to be treated like friends. I would send my services to Mr. Pulteney, but that he is out of favour at court; and make some compliment to Mrs. Pulteney, if she were not a Whig. My Lord Burlington tells me she has much outshined all the French ladies, as she did the English before.

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Gay.

No words can tell you the great concern I feel for you; I assure you it was not, and is not lessened, by the immediate apprehension I have now every day lain under of losing my mother. Be assured, no duty less than that should have kept me one day from attending your condition: I would come and take a room by you at Hampstead, to be with you daily, were she not still in danger of death. I have constantly had
particular

particular accounts of you from the Doctor, which have not ceased to alarm me yet. God preserve your life, and restore your health. I really beg it for my own sake; for I feel I love you more than I thought in health, though I always loved you a great deal. If I am so unfortunate as to bury my poor mother, and yet have the good fortune to have my prayers heard for you, I hope we may live most of our remaining days together. If, as I believe, the air of a better clime, as the southern part of France, may be thought useful for your recovery, thither I would go with you infallibly; and it is very probable we might get the Dean with us, who is in that abandoned state already in which I shall shortly be, as to other cares and duties. Dear Gay, be as cheerful as your sufferings will permit: God is a better friend than a court; even any honest man is a better. I promise you my entire friendship in all events, heartily praying for your recovery.

Your, &c.

Do not write, if you are ever so able: The Doctor tells me all.

Mr. Pope to Dr. Swift.

It is not a time to complain that you have not answered me two letters (in the last of which I was impatient under some fears.) It is not now indeed a time to think of myself, when one of the nearest and longest ties I have ever had, is broken all on a sudden, by the unexpected death of poor Mr. Gay. An inflammatory fever hurried him out of this life in three days. He died last night at nine o'clock, not deprived of his senses intirely at last, and possessing them perfectly till within five hours. He asked of you a few hours before, when in acute torment by the inflammation in his bowels and breast. His effects are in the Duke of Queensberry's custody. His sisters, we suppose, will be his heirs, who are two widows: as yet it is not known whether or no he left a will — Good God! how often are we to die before we go quite off this stage? In every friend we lose a part of ourselves, and the best part.

I shall never see you now, I believe; one of your principal calls to England is at an end. Indeed he was the most amiable by far; his qualities were the gentlest. But I love you as well and as firmly. Sure, if innocence and integrity can deserve happiness, it must be his. Adieu; I can add nothing but what

what you will feel, and diminish nothing from it. Yet write to me, and soon. Believe no man now living loves you better; I believe no man ever did, than

A. Pope.

Dr. Arbuthnot, whose humanity you know, heartily commends himself to you. All possible diligence and affection has been shown, and continued attendance on this melancholy occasion. Once more adieu, and write to one who is truly disconsolate.

P. S. by Dr. Arbuthnot.

Dear Sir,

I am sorry that the renewal of our correspondence should be upon such a melancholy occasion. Poor Mr. Gay died of an inflammation, and, I believe, at last a mortification of the bowels. It was the most precipitate case I ever knew, having cut him off in three days. He was attended by two physicians besides myself. I believed the distemper mortal from the beginning. I have not had the pleasure of a line from you these two years. I wrote one about your health, to which I had no answer. I wish you all health and happiness; being, with great affection and respect, Sir,

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Warburton.

Yours is very full and very kind, it is a friendly and satisfactory answer, and all I can desire. Do but instantly fulfill it. — Only I hope this will find you before you set out. For I think (on all considerations) your best way will be to take London in your way. It will secure you from accidents of weather to travel in the coach, both thither, and from thence hither, but in particular, I think you should take some care as to Mr. G's executors. And I am of opinion, no man will be more serviceable in settling any such accounts than Mr. Knapton, who so well knows the trade, and is of so acknowledged a credit in it. If you can stay but a few days there, I should be glad; though I would not have you omit any necessary thing to yourself. I wish too you would just see ***, though, when you have passed a month here, it will be time enough, for all we have to do in town; and they

they will be less busy, probably, than just before the session opens, to think of men of letters.

When you are in London, I beg a line from you, in which pray tell us what day you shall arrive at Bath by the coach, that we may send to meet you, and bring you hither.

You will owe me a real obligation by being made acquainted with the master of this house; and by sharing with me, what I think one of the chief satisfactions of my life, his friendship. But whether I shall owe you any in contributing to make me a scribler again, I know not.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Warburton.

I am forced to grow every day more laconic in my letters, for my eyesight grows every day shorter and dimmer. Forgive me then that I answer you summarily. I can even less bear an equal part in a correspondence than in a conversation with you. But be assured once for all, the more I read of you, as the more I hear from you, the better I am instructed and pleased. And this misfortune of my own dulness, and my own absence, only quickens my ardent wish that some good fortune would draw you nearer, and enable me to enjoy both, for a greater part of our lives in this neighbourhood; and in such a situation, as might make more beneficial friends than I, esteem and enjoy you equally. — I have again heard from Lord** and another hand, that the Lord*) I writ to you of, declares an intention to serve you. My answer (which they related to him) was, that he would be sure of your acquaintance for life, if once he served or obliged you; but that I was certain you would never trouble him with your expectation, though he would never get rid of your gratitude. — Dear Sir, adieu; and let me be sometimes certified of your health. My own is as usual, and my affection the same, always yours.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Warburton.

I am sorry to meet you with so bad an account of myself, who should otherwise with joy have flown to the interview. I am too ill to be in town; and within this week so much, as to make my journey thither, at present, impracticable, even if there was no proclamation in my way. I left the town in

a decent compliance to that; but this additional prohibition from the highest of all powers I must bow to without murmuring. I wish to see you here. Mr. Allen comes not till the 16th; and you will probably chuse to be in town chiefly while he is there. I received yours just now, and I writ to hinder ** from printing the comment on the *use of riches* too hastily, since what you write me, intending to have forwarded it otherwise, that you might revise it during your stay. Indeed my present weakness will make me less and less capable of any thing. I hope at least, now at first, to see you for a day or two here at Twickenham, and concert measures how to enjoy for the future what I can of your friendship.

I am, &c.

*A Letter from Abr. Castres, Esq. Envoy Extraordinary
to the King of Portugal.*

Sir,

Lisbon. Nov. 6. 1765.

You will, in all likelihood, have heard before this of the inexpressible calamity befallen the whole maritime coast, and in particular this opulent city, now reduced to a heap of rubbish and ruins, by a most tremendous earthquake on the 1st of this month, followed by a conflagration, which has done ten times more mischief than the earthquake itself. I gave a short account of our misfortune to Sir Benjamin Keene, by a Spaniard, who promised, as all intercourse by post was at a stand, to carry my letter as far as Badajoz, and see it safe put into the Post-house. It was merely to acquaint his Excellency, that, God be praised, my house stood out the shocks, tho' greatly damaged; and that happening to be out of the reach of the flames, several of my friends, burnt out of their houses, had taken refuge with me, where I have accomodated them, as well as I could, under tents in my large garden; nobody but Lord Charles Douglas, who is actually on board the packet, besides our chaplain and myself, having dared hitherto to sleep in my house since the day of our disaster.

The consul and his family have been saved, and are all well in a Country house near this city. Those with me at present, are the Dutch Minister, his Lady, and their three Children, with seven or eight of their servants. The rest of my company, of the better sort, consists of several Merchants of
this

this factory, who, for the most part have lost all they had; tho' some, indeed, as Mrs. Purry and Meelish's house, and Mr. Raymond and Mr. Burrell's, have had the good fortune to save their cash, either in whole or in part. The number of dead and wounded I can give no certain account of as yet; in that respect our poor factory has escaped pretty well, considering the number of houses we have here.

I have lost my good and worthy friend the Spanish ambassador, who was crushed under his door, as he attempted to make his escape into the street. This, with the anguish I have been in for these five days past, occasioned by the dismal accounts brought to us every instant of the accidents befallen one or other of our acquaintance among the nobility, who, for the most part, are quite undone, has greatly affected me; but in particular the miserable objects among the lower sort of his majesty's subjects, who all fly to me for bread, and lie scattered up and down in my garden, with their wives and children. I have helped them all hitherto, and shall continue to do so as long as provisions do not fail us, which I hope will not be the case, by the good orders Mr. de Carvalho has issued in that respect. One of our great misfortunes is, that we have neither an English nor Dutch man of war in this harbour. Some of our carpenters and sailors would have been of great use to me on this occasion, in helping to prop up my house; for as the weather, which has hitherto been remarkable fair, seems to threaten us with heavy rains, it will be impossible for the refugees in my garden to hold it out much longer; and how to find room in my house for them all, I am at a loss to devise, for the floors of most of them shake under our feet, and must consequently be too weak to bear any number of fresh inhabitants.

The roads for the first days having been impracticable, it was but yesterday I had the honour, in company with M. de la Calmelte of waiting upon the King of Portugal, and all the royal family, at Belem, whom we found encamped, none of the royal places being fit to harbour them. Tho' the loss of his most faithful majesty has sustained on this occasion is immense, and his capital city is utterly destroyed, yet he received us with more serenity than we expected; and among other things, told us, that he owed great thanks to providence for saving his and his family's lives; and that he was extremely glad to see us both safe. The queen in her own name and all the young princesses, send us word, that they were obliged

to us for our attention, but that being under their tents, and in a dress not fit to appear in, they desired that for the present we would excuse their admitting our compliments in person.

Most of the considerable families in our factory have already secured to themselves a passage to England by three or four London traders, that are preparing for their departure. As soon as the fatigue and great trouble of mind I have endured for these first days are a little over, I shall be considering of some proper method for sheltering the poorer sort, either by hiring a Portuguese hulk, or, if that is not to be had, some English vessel, till they can be sent to England: There are many who desire to remain, in hopes of finding among the ruins some of the little cash they may have left in their habitations.

The best orders have been given for preventing rapine and murders, frequent instances of which we have had within these three days, there being swarms of Spanish deserters in town, who take hold of this opportunity of doing their business. As I have large sums deposited in my house, belonging to such of my countrymen as have been happy enough to save some of their cash, and as my house was surrounded all night with ruffians, I have this morning written to M. de Carvalho, to desire a guard, which I hope will not be refused.

We are to have in a day or two a meeting of our scattered factory at my house, to consider of what is best to be done in our present wretched circumstances. I am determined to stay within call of the distressed as long as I can remain on shore with the least appearance of security; and the same Mr. Hay seemed resolved to do the last time I conferred with him about it.

I must humbly beg your pardon, Sir, for the disorder of this letter, surrounded as I am by the many in distress, who, from one instant to another, are applying to me either for advice or shelter. The packet has been detained at the desire of the factory, till another appears from England, or some man of war drops in here for the Straights. This will go by the first of several of our merchant ships bound to England. I must not forget to acquaint you, that Sir Harry Frankland and lady are safe and well.

Castres.

Lord

Lord Littleton to James Boswell Esq.

London, Feb. 21. 1768.

Sir,

I think myself greatly obliged to you, and desire you to accept my most grateful thanks, for the valuable present you have done me the honour to make me, of your *Account of Corsica*, which has given me the pleasure of being more perfectly acquainted with the greatest Character of this age: I had gained some knowledge of it, before I saw your book, from the letters of another English gentleman on that subject; but you have added many curious and interesting particulars, which I have read with much delight and admiration. If I were a few years younger, I would go in pilgrimage to Corsica (as you have done) to visit this living image of ancient virtue and to venerate in the Mind of *Pascal Paoli* the spirit of Timoleon and Epaminondas. But must now be content with seeing him in your description, the vivacity of which shews that your heart is inflamed with the same generous passion which glows so brightly in his with you, that our government had shewn more respect for Corsican liberty; and think it disgraces our Nation, that we do not live in friendship with a brave people, engaged in the noblest of all conquests; a contest against tyranny! and who have never given us any cause of complaint. Besides sympathy of sentiment, which is a natural bond of union, we ought in policy to shew as much regard for them, as the Genoese their oppressors have shewn for the French in our late war with that nation. Believe me with sincere regard and esteem

Sir

your most obedient, and obliged
humble servant

Littleton.

DESCRIPTION OF SOME QUADRUPEDS. *)

Animals of the Ape kind are in *Guiana* in greater number and variety, than in any other part of the known world.

O 4

The

*) Bancroft Essay on the Natural History of Guiana. Lond. 1769. 8.

The Orang-Outang in this part of *America* is much larger than either the *African* or *Oriental*, if the accounts of the natives may be relied on; for I do not find that any of them have been seen by the White Inhabitants on this coast, who never penetrate far into the woods. These animals, in all the different languages of the natives, are called by names signifying a Wild Man. They are represented by the *Indians* as being near five feet in height, maintaining an erect position, and having a human form, thinly covered with short black hair; but I suspect that their height has been augmented by the fears of the *Indians*, who greatly dread them, and instantly fly as soon as one is discovered, so that none of them have ever been taken alive, much less any attempts made for taming them. The *Indians* relate many fabulous stories of these animals; and, like the inhabitants of *Africa* and the *East*, assert, that they will attack the males, and ravish the females of the human species.

The Ape, here called a Quato, is large, and covered all over with long black hair, except the face, which is bald, and wrinkled. The ears are large, and of a human form, the eyes deeply sunk in their orbits, and the nose very much resembling that of a Negro, but smaller. The body is near two feet in length, and round the thorax about eighteen inches in circumference. They have neither beard nor tail. These animals are frequently tamed, and in all their actions demonstrate an uncommon degree of art and dexterity, not without a mixture of that mischievous sagacity for which they are remarkable. When their hands or fore feet are tied behind the back, they will walk and run in an erect position for a whole day, with the same ease and familiarity as though they were in their natural posture. When one of these animals is beat, he immediately runs and climbs a lemon or orange tree; and, if he is pursued, will pick the lemons and oranges, and drop them on the head of the pursuer, and even endeavour to repel him by voiding his excrements upon him, at the same time making a variety of grimaces, and assuming a thousand ridiculous attitudes, which afford no small diversion to the spectators.

The Howling Baboons, as they are here called, seem to be the animals which are called by the natives of *Brasil*, *Guereba*. They are of the size of a fox, covered with fine smooth hair, of a shining black, except on the legs, where it is of a brownish chestnut colour. The visage of this animal is

is erect, and pretty much resembles that of the Quato, but its ears are smaller, the eyes more prominent, and the chin is covered with a long straight black beard. They have a long tail, which is almost naked towards the end, the hair being probably worn off, by frequently clasping round the branches of trees, when they remove from one to another. They are the most numerous and vociferous of all the Monkey tribe, and frequently assemble by hundreds, both by night and day, and set up an incessant loud and disagreeable howling, which is heard at a great distance, and is not a little troublesome to the inhabitants. Sometimes the howling is kept up only by one for several minutes, until the rest join in the chorus; but these intermissions are not very frequent, as they seem to abhor taciturnity at these assemblies, and are unwilling to deny themselves the pleasure of contributing a share to this noisy entertainment. Besides these, there is another Monkey, somewhat larger than the howling Monkey, which is covered with long reddish hair, having large ears, a long red beard, and a long bushy tail. These animals, if possible, make a more hideous yell than the former; but happily their meetings are less frequent.

As the Orang-Outang is the largest, so the Saccawinkee is the smallest of the Ape tribe in *Guiana*. Its name is of *Indian* origin, though it has been adopted by the White Inhabitants. The body of a Saccawinkee, from the head to the root of the tail, is about six inches in length: the tail is about nine inches long, and covered with very long black hair: the head is small, as are the ears, which are almost round; the nose is slender and flat, and the eyes somewhat prominent, and of a shining black colour: the face is covered with a fine white downy hair, and the body is clothed with long hair, of a shining black, except at the points, where it is white. These animals are frequently tamed, and their tricks and gestures are not a little diverting; but they can never be divested of a mischievous disposition, for which they are remarkable, and which seems constitutional.

Between the Quato and Saccawinkee there are numerous species of these animals, of intermediate sizes, of which it would be impossible to convey distinct ideas by verbal descriptions, were I able to give them; but notwithstanding I have resided in *Guiana* near three years, I can by no means pretend to have seen all the different species of these animals, almost every day presenting a different kind to my observation, either

in possession of the *Indians*, or in the woods, where they are so numerous, that scores are often in view at once. Nor are these animals a little troublesome, as they frequently rob the plantations of fruit, maize, rice, &c. These expeditions they undertake with great sagacity, ever using the precaution to place a centinel on a commodious high tree, to announce the approach of an enemy; a duty to which, it is said, they submit alternately; and that when they are surprized through the negligence or inattention of their centinel, they punish him severely.

*) There is a sort of BABOON at the *Cape of Good Hope*, with a head resembling that of a Dog, with very ugly and frightful features. However the fore part of the body much resembles that of a man; but the teeth are large and sharp. The fore feet are very like hands; and those behind resemble mens. Their whole body is covered with hair, except the thighs, which are quite bare, and full of scratches.

When they are in great distress, that is, when they are hunted by Dogs, or are beaten for any fault, they sigh, groan, and weep, like human creatures in a fright, or that are in great pain. They are very fond of grapes, apples, and all sorts of fruit in general that grow in the gardens. When they get into a vineyard where the grapes are ripe, they fill themselves so immoderately with them, that they may be easily taken. Their fingers are armed with nails and claws that render them formidable to Dogs, which for that reason cannot easily take them. When they perceive any passenger in the fields that is obliged to dine in the open air, he must be very attentive, otherwise they will certainly carry off some of his victuals. If they succeed they make so many grimaces, and put themselves into such ridiculous postures, that a man must be very melancholy indeed to forbear laughing at them.

These animals are under some sort of discipline, and go about what they undertake with such skill, cunning, and foresight, that are very wonderful. As for instance when they rob an orchard, a garden, or a vineyard. They go upon these expeditions in large companies, and part of them enter the inclosure while one is set to watch; and the rest stand without the fence, and form a sort of a line, which runs from the place they are pillaging to that of their rendezvous. Every thing

*) R. Brookes's *M. D. Natural History of Quadrupeds*, with cuts. London 1763. 6 Vol. 8.

thing being thus disposed, the Baboons within the orchard, throw the fruit to those that are without at fast as they gather it; or if the hedge or wall be high, to those that sit thereon, who deliver them to those without; and so on all along the line, which usually terminates in some mountain. They catch the fruit as readily as the most skilful player can a ball. While this is doing they keep a deep silence, and perform their work extremely quick. When the centinel perceives any one coming he sets up a great cry, and at this signal the whole company disappear in an instant. The *Dutch* at the *Cape* sometimes take the young ones of these Baboons, and feed them with Goat's or Sheep's milk. When they are tamed and grown up, they watch the house as carefully as the best Dog in *Europe*.

The *American* BEAVER, is now better known than the others, for of this we have a very exact description from the *Memoirs of the Royal Academy at Paris*. The hair which covers the whole body, except the tail, is not alike throughout; for there are two sorts mixed together, which differ not only in length, but in colour and thickness. Part of it is about an inch and a half long, and as thick as the hair of a man's head, very shining, and of a brown colour, inclining somewhat to a tawney. It is of a close substance, and so solid, that no cavity can be perceived with a microscope.

The shortest is about an inch long, and is in greater plenty than the European; it is likewise more small and soft, insomuch that it feels almost like silk. This difference of the hair or fur, is to be met with in several animals; but more particularly in the Beaver, the Otter, and the Wild Boar; which perhaps may be the more necessary for these creatures, because they delight in muddy places, and the longest hair may serve to keep the mud from penetrating to the skin.

The head from the nose to the hind part, is five inches and a half long, and five inches broad from the prominence of the two cheek bones. The ears are like those of an Otter, being round, and very short: They are covered with hair on the outside, but are almost naked within.

It is commonly said that these animals delight in gnawing of trees, and in reality, the teeth seem to be very proper for that purpose, especially those before; but they are not sharp pointed to serve instead of a saw, as some have affirmed, or at least, they are not so in the *American* Beaver; but they are proper to cut with, like those of Squirrels, Porcupines, and Rats.

The

The structure of the feet is very extraordinary, and shew plainly, that nature designed these animals to live as well in the water as on the land. For though they have four feet like terrestrial animals; yet those behind are as fit for swimming as walking, and the five toes of which they consist, are joined together like those of a Goose; but in shape, they are like the hand of a man, only they are covered with hair on the outside, and the nails are long and sharp. Many authors have said, that the Beaver in most things resembles an Otter; but now it plainly appears they were mistaken. The *Academists* of *Paris* suppose, that this error may have arisen from their having seen the Beavers of *Europe* only; because as they affirm, the *European* are webfooted before like Geese; whereas those of *America* are only so in their hind feet; and therefore, the account of *Gesner*, must have been taken partly from these last.

The length of the fore feet is six inches and a half from the elbow to the end of the longest finger, and three inches from the beginning of the hand to the same extremity. The hind feet are the longest, being six inches from the extremity of the heel to the end of the longest toe, which is the second. Besides the five fingers and toes which have nails at the end, are a little slanting in their shape, and hollow in the inside like quills, there is on the external part of each foot both before and behind, a little bone which makes a protuberance, and might be taken for a sixth finger if it had been separated from the foot; but as it is not, it seems to be designed to give more firmness and strength thereto.

The tail has somewhat that resembles a fish, and seems to have no manner of relation to the rest of the body, which is like that of a land animal. It is covered with a skin, furnished with scales that are joined together by a pellicle. These scales are of the thickness of parchment, above a line and a half in length, and generally of the figure of a hexagon, having six corners. Those under the tail differ but little from those above, except in having two or three little hairs on each. The colour is of a greyish brown, inclining a little to that of slate. When the skin of a Beaver is dressed, the scales fall off, but leave their print behind them. When the tail was dissected the flesh was pretty flat, and was not unlike that of large fish. It is about eleven inches in length, and at the root not above two broad; but it grows broader as it approaches the middle, where it is three inches, and then it grows less again
to

to the end, where it terminates in an oval. It is about two inches thick near the root; but grows gradually thinner to the very end; insomuch, that it is no more than an inch thick in the middle, and not quite half one at the extremity.

Several writers have taken notice of the ingenuity of *American* Beavers in making their houses, of which I shall now give some account. The first thing they do when they are about to build, is to assemble in companies, sometimes of two or three hundred together; then they chuse a place where plenty of provisions are to be had, and where all necessaries are to be found proper for their use. Their houses are always in the water, and when they can find neither lake nor pond, they endeavour to supply that defect by stopping the current of a brook or small river, by means of a dam. To this end they first cut down trees in the following manner: Three or four Beavers will go to work about a large tree, and by continually gnawing of it with their teeth, they at last throw it down, and so contrive matters that it always falls towards the water, that they may have the less way to carry it, when they have divided it into pieces. After they have done this, they take each piece by itself, and roll it towards the water, where they intend to place it.

These pieces are more or less thick and long, according to the nature and situation of the places where they are required. Sometimes they make use of the large trunks of trees, which they lay down flat; sometimes the dam only consists of branches as thick as one's thigh, which are supported by stakes interwoven with the branches of trees; and all the vacant places are filled up with a sort of clay, in such a manner, that no water can pass through them. They prepare the clay with their paws or hands, and their tails serve instead of a carriage, as well as a trowel to lay on their clay.

The construction of the dams are generally ten or twelve feet thick, and they lessen gradually till they come to two or three. They always observe an exact proportion, insomuch, that the most curious architects are not capable of performing their work more regularly. That side towards the current of the water is always sloping, but the other is perpendicular.

The construction of the houses is altogether as wonderful; for they are generally built upon piles in small lakes, which are formed by making of the dams. Sometimes they are on the bank of a river, or on the extremity of a point of land, which

which advances into the water. They are of a round or oval form, and the top of them is like a dome.

This description of one of their houses which was examined and measured, will perhaps give the reader more satisfaction than an account in general. This of which I am now speaking, was about three parts surrounded with water, and the other part was joined to the land. It was round, with an oval dome at the top, and the height above the surface of the water, was eight feet. It was about forty feet in diameter, and one hundred and twenty in circumference, which perhaps may seem strange, because the proportion is geometrical; this however, is fact for it was measured several times. The part that joined to the bank was not made out of it, but was of the same materials with the rest.

The bottom of the house was of earth, or soil, with pieces of wood laid in it, above three inches in circumference; then a parcel of poplar sticks laid with one end in the house, and another slanting a long way under water; then a layer of earth again, and then poplar sticks, which were repeated to the height of eighteen inches. From thence to the top of the house there was a mixture of earth, stones, and sticks, curiously put together; and the whole was covered with fods, that had long grass growing thereon. The largest pieces of wood made use of near the top, were about three inches in diameter, and all the rest was small stuff, not above two or three fingers thick.

The outermost part of this house did not stand farther out in the creek than the edge of the shore; but that which brought the water almost round the house were the trenches, which were made by taking out the earth; these were nine feet in the broadest part, and eighteen feet in length. The creek at the front of the house was six and thirty feet broad, and seemed to be pretty deep. The house was so contrived as to be very solid, for there was no breaking into it without an ax; and in the frosty season was quite impenetrable. From this house there were several paths into the wood, through which they drew the sticks and trees, which they made use of for food or building.

The wall of the house was two feet thick, and it was covered with smooth clay on the inside in such a manner, that it would not admit the least breath of air. Two thirds of the structure was out of the water; and in the upper part, each Beaver had his particular place, whereon leaves were strewed to lie upon.

There

There never was any filth seen in any of these houses, which are made like an oven in the inside, with a passage for these animals to go and bathe in the water. One of these will generally lodge about eight or ten Beavers, though sometimes they have held thirty; but this is very uncommon.

The creatures are never surprized by the frost and snow; for they finish their work towards the end of *September*, and then they lay in provisions for the winter. In the summer time they live upon fruits, and the barks and leaves of trees; and they likewise catch small fish, and particularly Crabs or Crawfish. However, their winter provision is the tender branches of trees, particularly poplar, of which they seem to be very fond. It is usually said, and upon pretty good authority, that these Beavers make the walls of their houses of a thickness, in proportion to the severity of the succeeding winter, which if true, these animals must be furnished with uncommon foresight.

When there are great floods caused by the melting of the snow, which damage the houses of the Beavers, they then leave them, and shift for themselves as well as they can; however, the females return as soon as the waters are abated; but the males keep the field till *July*, when they assemble again to repair the damage that has been done by the flood, either to their houses or dams. When any of their houses are demolished by the hunters, they never repair them again, but build others quite new. Several authors have said, that the Beavers make severals rooms in their houses; but this upon examination has been found to be false.

In hunting the Beavers, the savages sometimes shoot them, always getting on the contrary side of the wind; for they are very shy, quick in hearing, and of a very keen scent. This is generally done when the Beavers are at work, or on shore feeding on poplar bark. If they hear any noise when at work, they immediately jump into the water, and continue there some time; and when they rise, it is at a distance from the place where they went in.

They sometimes are taken with traps; these are nothing but poplar sticks laid in a path near the water; which when the Beaver begins to feed upon, they cause a large log of wood to fall upon their necks, which is put in motion by their moving of the sticks; and consequently requires an ingenious contrivance. The savages generally prefer this way of taking them, because it does not damage their skins.

In

In the winter time they break the ice in two places at a distance from the house, the one behind the other. Then they take away the broken ice with a kind of a racket, the better to see where to place their stakes. They fasten their nets to these, which have large meshes, and sometimes are eighteen or twenty yards in length. When these are fixed, they proceed to demolish the house, and turn a Dog therein, which terrifying the Beaver he immediately leaves it, and takes to the water, after which, he is soon entangled by the net.

Mr. *Lawson* who was general surveyor of *North Carolina*, affirms, that Beavers are very plenty in that country. He confirms what has been said about their ingenuity in building of their dams and houses, and observes, that their food is chiefly the barks of trees and shrubs; such as that of the *sassafras*, *ash*, *sweet gum*, and several others. He adds, that if they are taken young, they will become very tame; but then they will do a great deal of mischief in the orchards, by breaking the trees. They will likewise block up the doors of the houses in the night, with the sticks and wood which they bring thither. He farther informs us, that it is certain death for them to eat any thing that is salt. The flesh is looked upon as very delicate food; but the tail is the greatest dainty, and is in great request.

SOME CHAPTERS OUT OF THE HISTORY OF TOM JONES A FOUNDLING. *)

Book IV. Chap. 4. 8 and 10.

This matter, then, which put an end to the debate mentioned in the last chapter, was no other than a quarrel between Master *Blifil* and *Tom Jones*, the consequence of which had been a bloody nose to the former; for though Mr. *Blifil*, notwithstanding he was the younger, was in size above other's match, yet *Tom* was much his superior at the noble art of boxing.

Tom, however, cautiously avoided all engagements with that youth; for besides that *Tommy Jones* was an inoffensive lad amidst all his roguery, and really loved *Blifil*, Mr. *Thwakum* being always the second of the latter, would have been sufficient to deter him.

But

*) The Works of Henry Fielding Esq. Vol. 8. Lond. 1762. 8.

But well says a certain Author, no man is wise at all hours; it is therefore no wonder that a boy is not so. A difference arising at play between the two lads, Mr. Blifil called Tom a beggarly bastard. Upon which the latter, who was somewhat passionate in his disposition, immediately caused that phænomon in the face of the former, which we have above remembered.

Mr. Blifil now, with his blood running from his nose, and the tears galloping after from his eyes, appeared before his uncle and the tremendous Thwackum; in which court an indictment of assault, battery, and wounding, was instantly preferred against Tom; who, in his excuse, only pleaded the provocation, which was indeed all the matter that Mr. Blifil had omitted.

It is indeed possible, that this circumstance might have escaped his memory; for, in his reply, he positively insisted, that he had made use of no such appellation; adding: "Heaven forbid such naughty words should ever come out of his mouth.,,"

Tom, though against all form of law, rejoined in affirmation of the words. Upon which Mr. Blifil said, "It is no wonder; those who will tell one fib, will hardly stick at another. If I had told my master such a wicked fib as you have done, I should be ashamed to shew my face.,,"

"What fib, child,,," cries Thwackum, pretty eagerly.

"Why, he told you that nobody was with him alhooting, when he killed the partridge; but he knows, (here he burst into a flood of tears) yes, he knows; for he confessed it to me, that Black George the gamekeeper was there. Nay, he said, — yes you did, — deny it if you can, that you would not have confessed the truth, tho' master had cut you to pieces.,,"

At this the fire flashed from Thwackum's eyes, and he cried out in triumph, "Oh! oh, this is your mistaken notion of honour! this is the boy who was not to be whipped again!,,," But Mr. Allworthy, with a more gentle aspect, turned towards the lad, and said, "Is this true, child! How came you to persist so obstinately in a falsehood?,,,"

Tom said, "He scorned a lie as much as any one; but he thought his honour engaged him to act as he did; for he had promised the poor fellow to conceal him: which,,," he said, "he thought himself farther obliged to, as the gamekeeper had begged him not to go into the gentleman's
P
"manor,

“manor, and had at last gone himself in compliance with his
 “persuasions.,, He said, this was the whole truth of the
 matter, and he would take his oath of it; and concluded
 with very passionately begging Mr. Allworthy, “to have
 “compassion on the poor fellow’s family, especially as he
 “himself only had been guilty, and the other had been very
 “difficultly prevailed on to do what he did. Indeed, Sir,,
 said he, “it could hardly be called a lie that I told; for the
 “poor fellow was entirely innocent of the whole matter. I
 “should have gone alone after the birds; nay, I did go at
 “first, and he only followed me to prevent more mischief.
 “Do, pray Sir, let me be punished; take my little horse
 “away again; but pray, Sir, forgive poor George.,,

Mr. Allworthy hesitated a few moments, and then dismissed
 the boys, advising them to live more friendly and peaceably
 together.

The reader may remember, that Mr. Allworthy gave Tom
 Jones a little horse, at a kind of smart-money for the
 punishment which he imagined he had suffered innocently.

This horse Tom kept above half a year, and then rode
 him to a neighbouring fair, and sold him.

At his return, being questioned by Thwackum, what he
 had done with the money for which the horse was sold, he
 frankly declared he would not tell him.

“Oho!,, says Thwackum, “you will not!—then I will
 “have it out of your br—h;,, that being the place to which
 he always applied for information on every doubtful occasion.

Tom was now mounted on the back of a footman, and
 every thing prepared for execution, when Mr. Allworthy
 entering the room, gave the criminal a reprieve, and took
 him with him into another apartment; where being alone
 with Tom, he put the same question to him which Thwackum
 had before asked him.

Tom answered, he could in duty refuse him nothing; but
 as for that tyrannical rascal, he would never make him any
 other answer than with a cudgel, with which he hoped soon
 to be able to pay him for all his barbarities.

Mr. Allworthy very severely reprimanded the lad, for his
 indecent and disrespectful expressions concerning his master,
 but much more for his avowing an intention of revenge. He
 threatened him with the entire loss of his favour, if he ever
 heard

heard such another word from his mouth; for he said he would never support or befriend a reprobate. By these and the like declarations, he extorted some compunction from Tom, in which that youth was not over sincere: for he really meditated some return for all the smarting favours he had received at the hands of the pedagogue. He was, however, brought by Mr. Allworthy to express a concern for his resentment against Thwackum; and then the good man, after some wholesome admonition, permitted him to proceed, which he did, as follows.

"Indeed, my dear Sir, I love and honour you more than
 "all the world: I know the great obligations I have to you,
 "and should detest myself, if I thought my heart was capable
 "of ingratitude. Could the little horse you gave me speak,
 "I am sure he could tell you how fond I was of your present:
 "for I had more pleasure in feeding him than in riding him.
 "Indeed, Sir, it went to my heart to part with him; nor
 "would I have sold him upon any other account in the world
 "than what I did. You yourself, Sir, I am convinced, in
 "my case, would have done the same; for none ever so
 "sensibly felt the misfortunes of others. What would you feel,
 "dear Sir, if you thought yourself the occasion of them! —
 "Indeed, Sir, there never was any misery like theirs., —
 "Like whose child?," says Allworthy: "What do you
 "mean?," "Oh, Sir,," answered Tom, "your poor game-
 "keeper, with all his large family, ever since you discharged
 "him, have been perishing with all the miseries of cold and
 "hunger, I could not bear to see these poor wretches naked
 "and starving, and at the same time know myself to have been
 "the occasion of all their sufferings. — I could not bear it,
 "Sir, upon my soul, I could not., (Here the tears run
 down his cheeks, and he thus proceeded:) "It was to save
 "them from absolute destruction, I parted with your dear
 "present, notwithstanding all the value I had for it: — I
 "sold the horse for them, and they have every farthing of
 "the money.,"

Mr. Allworthy now stood silent for some moments, and before he spoke the tears started from his eyes. He at length dismissed Tom with a gentle rebuke, advising him for the future to apply to him in cases of distress, rather than to use extraordinary means of relieving them himself.

This affair was afterwards the subject of much debate between Thwackum and Square. Thwackum held, that this

was flying in Mr. Allworthy's face, who had intended to punish the fellow for his disobedience. He said, in some instances, what the world called charity appeared to him to be opposing the will of the Almighty, which had marked some particular persons for destruction; and that this was, in like manner, acting in opposition to Mr. Allworthy; concluding, as usual, with a hearty recommendation of birch.

Square argued strongly on the other side, in opposition perhaps to Thwackum, or in compliance with Mr. Allworthy, who seemed very much to approve what Jones had done. As to what he urged on this occasion, as I am convinced most of my readers will be much abler advocates for poor Jones, it would be impertinent to relate it. Indeed it was not difficult to reconcile to the rule of right an action which it would have been impossible to deduce from the rule of wrong.

Soon after this, an action was brought against the game-keeper by Squire Western (the gentleman in whose manor the partridge was killed), for depredations of the like kind. This was a most unfortunate circumstance for the fellow, as it not only of itself threatened his ruin, but actually prevented Mr. Allworthy from restoring him to his favour: for as that gentleman was walking out one evening with Mr. Blifil and young Jones, the latter slyly drew him to the habitation of Black George; where the family of that poor wretch, namely, his wife and children, were found in all the misery with which cold, hunger and nakedness, can affect human creatures: for as to the money they had received from Jones, former debts had consumed almost the whole.

Such a scene as this could not fail of affecting the heart of Mr. Allworthy. He immediately gave the mother a couple of guineas, with which he bid her cloath her children. The poor woman burst into tears at this goodness, and while she was thanking him, could not refrain from expressing her gratitude to Tom; who had, she said, long preserved both her and hers from starving. "We have not," says she, "had a morsel to eat, nor have these poor children had a rag to put on, but what his goodness had bestowed on us." For, indeed, besides the horse and Bible, Tom had sacrificed a nightgown and other things to the use of this distressed family.

On their return home Tom made use of all his eloquence to display the wretchedness of these people, and the penitence of Black George himself; and in this he succeeded so well, that Mr. Allworthy said, he thought the man had suffered enough for what was past; that he would forgive him, and think of some means of providing for him and his family.

Jones was so delighted with his news, that tho' it was dark when they returned home, he could not help going back a mile, in a shower of rain, to acquaint the poor woman with the glad tidings; but, like other hasty divulgers of news, he only brought on himself the trouble of contradicting it; for the ill fortune of Black George made use of the very opportunity of his friend's absence to overturn all again.

Mr. Blifil fell very short of his companion in the aimable quality of mercy; but he as greatly exceeded him in one of a much higher kind, namely, in justice: in which he followed both the precepts and examples of Thwackum and Square; for though they would both make frequent use of the word Mercy, yet it was plain, that, in reality, Square held it to be inconsistent with the rule of right; and Thwackum was for doing justice, and leaving mercy to Heaven. The two gentlemen did indeed somewhat differ in opinion concerning the objects of this sublime virtue; by which Thwackum would probably have destroyed one half of mankind, and Square the other half.

Mr. Blifil, then, though he had kept silence in the presence of Jones, yet when he had better considered the matter, could by no means endure the thoughts of suffering his uncle to confer favours on the undeserving. He therefore resolved immediately to acquaint him with the fact which we have above slightly hinted to the readers; the truth of which was as follows:

The gamekeeper, about a year after he was dismissed from Mr. Allworthy's service, and before Tom's selling the horse, being in want of bread, either to fill his own mouth, or those of his family, as he passed through a field belonging to Mr. Western, espied a hare sitting in her form: this hare he had basely and barbarously knocked on the head, against the laws of sportsmen.

The higler, to whom the hare was sold, being unfortunately taken many months after with a quantity of game

230 THE HISTORY OF TOM JONES

upon him, was obliged to make his peace with the Squire, by becoming evidence against some poacher. And now Black George was pitched upon by him, as being a person already obnoxious to Mr. Western, and one of no good fame in the country. He was, besides, the best sacrifice the higher could make, as he had supplied him with no game since; and, by this means, the witness had an opportunity of screening his better customers; for the Squire, being charmed with the power of punishing Black George, whom a single transgression was sufficient to ruin, made no further enquiry.

Had this fact been truly laid before Mr. Allworthy, it might probably have done the gamekeeper very little mischief; but there is no zeal blinder than that which is inspired with the love of justice against offenders. Mr. Blifil had forgot the distance of the time. He varied likewise in the manner of the fact: and, by the hasty addition of the single letter S, he considerably altered the story; for he said that George had wired hares. These alterations might probably have been set right, had not Mr. Blifil unluckily insisted on a promise of secrecy from Mr. Allworthy, before he revealed the matter to him; but, by that means, the poor gamekeeper was condemned, without having any opportunity to defend himself; for as the fact of killing the hare, and of the action brought, were certainly true, Mr. Allworthy had no doubt concerning the rest.

Short-lived then was the joy of these poor people; for Mr. Allworthy, the next morning, declared he had fresh reason, without assigning it, for his anger, and strictly forbade Tom to mention George any more; though, as for his family, he said, he would endeavour to keep them from starving; but as to the fellow himself, he would leave him to the laws, which nothing could keep him from breaking.

Tom could by no means divine what had incensed Mr. Allworthy; for of Mr. Blifil he had not the least suspicion. However, as his friendship was to be tired out by no disappointments, he now determined to try another method of preserving the poor gamekeeper from ruin.

Jones was lately grown very intimate with Mr. Western. He had so greatly recommended himself to that gentleman, by leaping over five-barred gates, and by other acts of sportsmanship, that the Squire had declared Tom would certainly make a great man, if he had but sufficient encouragement. He often wished he had himself a son with such parts;

parts; and one day very solemnly asserted at a drinking bout, that Tom should hunt a pack of hounds for a thousand pounds of his money, with any huntsman in the whole country.

By such kind of talents he had so ingratiated himself with the Squire, that he was a most welcome guest at his table, and a favourite companion in his sport: every thing which the Squire held most dear, to wit, his guns, dogs, and horses, were now as much at the command of Jones, as if they had been his own. He resolved, therefore, to make use of this favour on behalf of his friend Black George whom, he hoped to introduce into Mr. Western's family, in the same capacity in which he had before served Mr. Allworthy.

The reader, if he considers that this fellow was already obnoxious to Mr. Western, and if he considers farther the weighty business by which that gentleman's displeasure had been incurred, will, perhaps, condemn this as a foolish and desperate undertaking; but if he should totally condemn young Jones on that account, he will greatly applaud him for strengthening himself with all imaginable interest on so arduous an occasion.

For this purpose, then, Tom applied to Mr. Western's daughter, a young lady of about seventeen years of age, whom her father, next after those necessary implements of sport just before mentioned, loved and esteemed above all the world. Now, as she had some influence on the Squire, so Tom had some little influence on her. But this being the intended heroine of this work, a lady with whom we ourselves are greatly in love, and with whom many of our readers will, probably, be in love too before we part, it is by no means proper she should make her appearance in the end of a book.

Book IV. Chap. III.

Wherein the history goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened some years since; but which, trifling as it was, had some future consequences.

The amiable Sophia was now in her eighteenth year, when she is introduced into this history. Her father, as hath been said, was fonder of her than of any other human creature. To her, therefore, Tom Jones applied, in order to engage her interest on the behalf of his friend the gamekeeper.

But before we proceed to this business, a short recapitulation of some previous matters may be necessary.

Though the different tempers of Mr. Allworthy and of Mr. Western did not admit of a very intimate correspondence, yet they lived upon what is called a decent footing together; by which means the young people of both families had been acquainted from their infancy; and as they were all near of the same age, had been frequent play-mates together.

The gaiety of Tom's temper suited better with Sophia than the grave and sober disposition of Mr. Blifil. And the preference which she gave the former of these would often appear so plainly, that a lad of a more passionate turn than Mr. Blifil was, might have shewn some displeasure at it.

As he did not, however, outwardly express any such disgust, it would be an ill office in us to pay a visit to the inmost recesses of his mind, as some scandalous people search into the most secret affairs of their friends, and often pry into their closets and cupboards, only to discover their proverty and meanness to the world.

However, as persons who suspect they have given others cause of offence, are apt to conclude they are offended; so Sophia imputed an action of Mr. Blifil to his anger, which the superior sagacity of Thwackum and Square discerned to have arisen from a much better principle.

Tom Jones, when very young, had presented Sophia with a little bird, which he had taken from the nest, had nursed up, and taught to sing.

Of this bird, Sophia, then about thirteen years old, was so extremely fond, that her chief business was to feed and tend it, and her chief pleasure to play with it. By these means little Tommy, for so the bird was called, was become so tame, that it would feed out of the hand of its mistress, would perch upon her finger, and ly contented in her bosom, where it seemed almost sensible of its own happiness; though she always kept a small string about its leg, nor would ever trust it with the liberty of flying away.

One day, when Mr. Allworthy and his whole family dined at Mr. Western's, Mr. Blifil, being in the garden with little Sophia, and observing the extreme fondness that she shewed for her little bird, desired her to trust it for a moment in his hands. Sophia presently complied with the young gentleman's request, and after some previous caution, delivered him her bird; of which he was no sooner in possession, than he snipt the string from its leg, and tossed it into the air.

The

The foolish animal no sooner perceived itself at liberty, than forgetting all the favours it had received from Sophia, it flew directly from her, and perched on a bough at some distance.

Sophia, seeing her bird gone, screamed out so loud, that Tom Jones, who was at a little distance, immediately ran to her assistance.

He was no sooner informed of what had happened, than he cursed Blifil for a pitiful, malicious rascal; and then immediately stripping of his coat, he applied himself to climbing the tree to which the bird escaped.

Tom had almost recovered his little namesake, when the branch on which it was perched, and that hung over a canal, broke, and the poor lad plumped over head and ears into the water.

Sophia's concern now changed its objects. And as she apprehended the boy's life was in danger, she screamed ten times louder than before; and indeed Mr. Blifil himself now seconded her with all the vociferation in his power.

The company, who were sitting in a room next the garden, were instantly alarmed, and came all forth; but just as they reached the canal, Tom (for the water was luckily pretty shallow in that part) arrived safely on shore.

Thwackum fell violently on poor Tom, who stood dropping and shivering before him, when Mr. Allworthy desired him to have patience, and turning to Mr. Blifil, said, "Pray, child, what is the reason of all this disturbance?,"

Mr. Blifil answered, "Indeed, uncle, I am very sorry for what I have done; I have been unhappily the occasion of it all. I had Miss Sophia's bird in my hand, and thinking the poor creature languished for liberty, I own I could not forbear giving it what it desired; for I always thought there was something very cruel in confining any thing. It seemed to be against the law of nature, by which every thing hath a right to liberty; nay, it is even unchristian; for it is not doing what we would be done by. But if I had imagined Miss Sophia would have been so much concerned at it, I am sure I would never have done it; nay, if I had known what would have happened to the bird itself: for when Mr. Jones, who climbed up that tree after it, fell into the water, the bird took a second flight, and presently a nasty hawk carried it away.,"

Poor Sophia, who now first heard of her little Tommy's fate, (for her concern for Jones had prevented her perceiving it when it happened), shed a shower of tears. These Mr. Allworthy endeavoured to assuage, promising her a much finer bird: but she declared she would never have another. Her father chid her for crying so for a foolish bird; but could not help telling young Blifil, if he was a son of his, his backside should be well flea'd.

Sophia now returned to her chamber, the two young gentleman were sent home, and the rest of the company returned to their bottle; where a conversation ensued on the subject of the bird, so curious, that we think it deserves a chapter by itself.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE PRESENT STATE OF THE EAST-INDIA COMPANY. *)

The Company's affairs, until about the year 1750, required little more than commercial talents, the produce of our own country was carried there, sold, and returned in the manufactures of those parts; and the little spots we possessed excited no jealousies amongst the neighbouring princes.

The French, under Dupleix, first opened the way to acquiring territorial possessions in India; and why they did not reap those advantages we have since done, and which they may be justly charged with having forced us into, on that coast, arose entirely from the misconduct of Dupleix, who, intoxicated by pride and vanity, did, through his obstinacy, plunge his countrymen into various distresses, until they were quite undone. The success, which at first attended his measures, was owing in a great degree to our inactivity and wretched parsimony. Mr. Earnet, who had foreseen the storm that was gathering, died unfortunately at the beginning of 1746, and Madrais was taken the latter end of that year.

The leaders in the direction at that time, attentive only to the commercial plan, and prejudiced against more extensive views, remained inactive until the French and Indian powers together had almost drove us into the sea. We were roused at last by necessity; and, about the year 1751, the Company's
affairs

*) Lond. 1771. gr. 8.

affairs began to wear a better aspect: lord Clive had made a stand against the enemy; and soon after general Laurence returned again from Europe to take upon him the chief command; his lordship acted under the general, and assisted him in establishing the reputation of the British arms.

About the year 1755, we were almost extirpated at Bengal, by the disputes between Drake and Surajah Dowla, but were fortunately re-established by lord Clive and admiral Watson. Lord Clive went farther; he placed us on a footing all Europeans had been strangers to before; for, by virtue of his treaties and conquests, we took the lead at the Suba's court. Soon after all this was settled, lord Clive returned to England, hastened in some measure by a peremptory letter from the directors.

The increase of riches and power, joined to the intercourse we had with the natives, both at Bengal and in the Carnatic, enabled us to obtain a more immediate, and a fuller knowledge of the country, its wealth and natural advantages, the number of its inhabitants, their manners, customs, and religions; and to preserve our revenues, we found it necessary, that nothing material should be done by the princes near us, without our approbation.

An extensive commerce is the great and capital advantage which England ought to expect from these acquisitions; and consequently the politics of India should be principally directed to this end; but though, perhaps, it might be wished, that the original plan of trade, upon which the Company was first constituted, had still continued upon that contracted bottom, and that they had not been from merchants erected into sovereign princes; yet, as this great dominion is acquired, it must be maintained; for the politics, not only of Asia, but even of Europe, are now so interwoven with the affairs of our commerce there, that it will be absolutely impossible to return back to our former situation with any hopes of profit, or indeed of security: we must preserve what we have acquired upon the principles of self-defence.

The great endeavour of all commercial states, is to draw the productions of other countries to its own center; to work up the raw, and to re-export the manufactured goods; for wherever goods, though manufactured abroad, can be carried out again for sale, so as to produce a final balance in favour of the state, they are in a degree as meritorious, in the eye of trade, as if they were manufactured at home: but, in a public light,

light, the advantages that flow from a monopoly of carriage are far superior to the dry profit of the merchant; to wit, the encrease of sailors and shipping, and the employment of multitudes; all which add strength as well as riches to the community. The act of navigation was founded upon this principle, by which this kingdom is become the greatest maritime power that ever existed.

A fair opportunity now seems to offer, that may enable this kingdom, in a few years, to center in itself almost all the trade to the East-Indies, and thereby to supply the rest of Europe from the mart of London. To effect so great an undertaking, a revenue must be allotted, sufficient to maintain a strong squadron in India always ready to fit out, and three separate armies, one on the east and one on the west coast of the peninsula, and one at Bengal. It is by such steps only, that the conquests can become of any lasting or solid advantage; and that all this may be effected, I shall endeavour to shew: happy, if any of my hints may excite some abler head to digest, and bring them to perfection.

Lord Clive, when he returned home in February, 1760, left Mr. Holwel in the chair at Bengal, who was superseded from Madras, in August following, by Mr. Vansittart, a gentleman of a fair and amiable character, but unacquainted with that settlement. Immediately on his arrival, the conduct of Meer Jaffier was placed in such a light, as induced him, by a fatal revolution, to place Cossim Cawn on the throne. The stain of wanton tyranny this action left behind it, will long remain upon the minds of the natives: the whole of this blameable transaction, together with the many melancholy consequences, are too well known to need repeating: matters soon came to a crisis; one constant scene of anarchy and dissension prevailed from Cossim's ascending the throne to his flight: he fled at last, and carried with him *a vast sum in specie*.

The principal reason give to the public for deposing Meer Jaffier, was the wretched state of his finances; but this arose from the misconduct and treachery of his ministers. That there was no real want of specie in the country, is manifest from the large sums which Cossim was enabled to collect, with such expedition, almost immediately after his advancement: and with how much ease might the Company have reformed his government, by a change of his ministers, if they had pleased, without any disturbance or commotion.

I am clearly of opinion it was as easy to restrain Meer Jaffier as to depose him; and the country would not, in that case, (to say nothing of the other mischiefs occasioned by that revolution) have been drained of that immense sum which Cossim carried off with him upon his expulsion: yet the country was not totally exhausted even by this drain, witness the sums that have been sent out, since his flight, to Madrafs, Bombay, and China.

In the year 1764, Meer Jaffier was replaced in the subaship; contests, and the pursuit of private gain, continued abroad, and party ran high at home. It was at this time lord Clive again stood forth to take upon him the command at Bengal. He set off in May, 1764, and did not reach Calcutta untill April, 1765. He found Meer Jaffier dead, when he arrived; he gave that Nabob's son the outward pageantry of Suba, but the power and the revenues he took charge of for the company; he allotted out of them a certain stipend for the nominal Suba, and for the Mogul, the tribute these provinces used to remit to Delhi, when the empire was properly settled; the remainder of the revenues was brought into the treasury of Calcutta. *)

The subaship of Bengal takes in a large extent of country, the greatest part of which is under the Suba's immediate direction; the remainder is under the management of Nabobs, Rajahs, or Polygars, who are to pay certain annual tributes to the Suba, and some of them are likewise to bring into the field a certain number of troops, whenever they are required, the management of the lands within their respective governments being left entirely to themselves to farm and to collect. The distracted state the empire had long been in, had led the Suba to neglect paying the tribute due to the throne of Delhi; and the enfeebled state of Shaw Allum made him incapable of enforcing his right; but since we have had possession, that usual tribute has been regularly paid.

The whole revenue above mentioned, including the tribute payable to the Great Mogul, amounts to the sum of near three millions four hundred thousand pounds; to which may be added the duties collected on the foreign trade at the port of

*) When lord Clive arrived the second time, and took the revenues from the Suba, his lordship, together with his council, formed the extensive trade carried on throughout the provinces for salt, beetel, and tobacco, into a monopoly, under the management of a company, equally shutting out both natives and foreigners.

of Calcutta, about twenty thousand pounds. Besides all this, the Company are in the receipts of a considerable sum for the duties upon salt, beetel and tobacco. This brought in, while the monopoly of those articles took place, about one hundred and twenty thousand pounds a year, but, since that was abolished, is reduced to one hundred thousand pounds, or under. The whole of this revenue may be fairly set at three millions five hundred thousand pounds, out of which the *) tribute to the Mogul, the allotment to the Nabob, the expence of collecting the revenue, and the civil and military charges of government at Bengal, altogether amount to about two millions, though I am pretty sure it is not quite so much, and consequently there ought to remain the sum of one million five hundred thousand pounds, neat income, in the hands of the Company, to be applied for the purchase of the home investments, or of any emergencies that might accidentally arise. The province of Orissa, which properly belongs to the Suba of Bengal, is now in the hands of Morattahs: it yields a revenue of about one hundred and thirty thousand pounds. This province might be easily recovered; and it is well defended by this that bound it to the S. W.

The present establishment of the forces at Bengal is fixed at three thousand Europeans, and near **) twenty thousand Seipoys or country infantry; all of whom are regularly disciplined, and formed into battalions, and are commanded by European Officers; this force is reckoned sufficient to defend the provinces against all invasions.

***) The prince is the lord proprietor of the lands, his will is under no controul; nevertheless, the mode of farming out the lands continues amongst the Morattahs, and all the Gentoos,

		£.
*) The tribute to the Mogul,	—	330,000
The Nabob, for his court, 18 lacks, charge	}	670,000
of collecting the revenue, 35 lacks,		
The civil and military expences, with the amount	}	1,000,000
of stores of different kinds, about		
		<hr style="border: none; border-top: 1px solid black; width: 100%; margin-bottom: 5px;"/> 2,000,000

**) This number does not include the Seipoys employed by the revenue officers.

***) Princes holding large tracts of country, have other princes under them, in like manner as they hold under the Mogul.

Gentoos, in much the same state it was in before the Moors got possession of the empire.

The lands are under the direction either of officers superintending for the Mogul, or princes who, collecting for themselves, pay annual tributes to the empire; and no lands are exempted from paying a proportion to the crown, but those belonging to pagodas, mosques, or enjoying some other privileges. These lands amongst the Morattahs, are granted to the occupiers for a term of years, or for life, which last method mostly prevails; and provided no charge lays against them for embezzlement, or neglect of tillage, there is scarcely an instance of the lands being taken from the families of the first occupiers. The same maxims prevail with respect to the Rajahs and great officers; who were always permitted to hold by descent, and were scarce ever displaced, except for misgovernment or rebellion. *) The lands pay according to their produce; this is taken by collectors for the prince, who calling in men conversant in husbandry, do, by their judgment, set the value of the prince's share while the crop is on the ground; the value, so settled, is what the occupier is to pay, and this is transmitted, by the several collectors, to the treasurer or Duan, who is commonly the first minister of the prince. The grain usually pays one half of its produce, cocoa-nut and beetel-nut trees two-thirds, fruit trees, and those converted into wood and timber one-third; buffaloes pay one rupee each (or half-a-crown), draft oxen not so much, a-year; and so every other article in proportion, that is produced by, or nourished from the earth.

The prince's revenue is neat and clear of all deduction, except the fees to the Duan, for himself and his collectors, which are fixed, and publickly known; what remains over and above the produce due to the prince, belongs to the occupier of the lands; and this is found, by experience, when he is permitted to enjoy it, to be an ample reward to him for his labour and expence.

DE.

*) Most of the lands in the southern parts of the empire yield double crops.

DESCRIPTION OF ADRIANOPLE AND CONSTANTINOPLE. *)

To the Abbot of —.

Adrianople, May 17, O. S. 1718.

I am going to leave Adrianople, and I would not do it, without giving you some account of all that is curious in it, which I have taken a great deal of pains to see. It is called from the Emperor *Adrian*, and was the first European seat of the Turkish Empire, and has been the favourite residence of many Sultans. *Mahomet* the fourth, and *Mustapha*, the brother of the reigning Emperor, were so fond of it, that they wholly abandoned Constantinople, which humour so far exasperated the Janizaries, that it was a considerable motive to the rebellions that deposed them. Yet this man seems to love to keep his court here. I can give you no reason for this partiality. 'Tis true, the situation is fine, and the country all round very beautiful; but the air is extremely bad, and the Seraglio itself is not free from the ill effect of it. The town is said to be eight miles in compass, I suppose they reckon in the gardens. There are some good houses in it, I mean large ones; for the architecture of their palaces never makes any great shew. It is now very full of people; but they are most of them such as follow the court, or camp, and when they are removed, I am told 'tis no populous city. The river *Maritza* on which it is situated, is dried up every summer, which contributes very much to make it unwholesome. It is now a very pleasant stream. There are two noble bridges built over it. I had the curiosity to go to see the Exchange in my Turkish dress, which is disguise sufficient. Yet I own, I was not very easy when I saw it crowded with Janizaries; but they dare not be rude to a woman, and made way for me with as much respect, as if I had been in my own figure. It is half a mile in length, the roof arched, and kept extremely neat. It holds three hundred and sixty-five shops, furnished with all sorts of rich goods exposed to sale in the same manner as at the New Exchange in London; but the pavement is kept much neater, and the shops are all so clean, they seem just new painted. — Idle people

*) Letters of the Right Honourable Lady *Mary Worthley Montague* written, during her Travels in Europe, Asia and Africa. Lond. 1769. 3 Vol. 8.

DESCRIPTION OF ADRIANOPLE &c. 241

people of all sorts walk here for their diversion, or amuse themselves with drinking coffee, or sherbet, which is cried about as oranges and sweat-meats are in our playhouses. I observed most of the rich tradesmen were Jews. That people are in incredible power in this country. They have many privileges above all the natural Turks themselves, and have formed a very considerable commonwealth here, being judged by their own laws. They have drawn the whole trade of the Empire into their hands, partly by the firm union amongst themselves, and partly by the idle temper and want of industry in the Turks. Every Bassa has his Jew, who is his "*homme d'affaires*;; he is let into all his secrets, and does all his business. No bargain is made, no bribe received, no merchandise disposed of, but what passes through their hands. They are the physicians, the stewards, and the interpreters of all the great men. You may judge how advantageous this is to a people who never fail to make use of the smallest advantages. They have found the secret of making themselves so necessary, that they are certain of the protection of the court, whatever ministry is in power. Even the English, French, and Italian merchants, who are sensible of their artifices, are, however, forced to trust their affairs to their negotiation, nothing of trade being managed without them, and the meanest amongst them being too important to be disobliged; since the whole body take care of his interests with as much vigour as they would those of the most considerable of their members. They are many of them vastly rich, but they take care to make little public shew of it; though they live in their houses in the utmost luxury and magnificence. This copious subject has drawn me from my description of the exchange, founded by *Ali Bassa*, whose name it bears. Near it is the *Sherfski*, a street of a mile in length, full of shops of all kind of fine merchandize, but excessive dear, nothing being made here. It is covered on the top with boards to keep out the rain, that merchants may meet conveniently in all weathers. The *Besiten* near it, is another exchange, built upon pillars, where all sorts of horse furniture are sold. Glittering every where with gold, rich embroidery and jewels, it makes a very agreeable shew. From this place I went, in my Turkish coach, to the camp, which is to move in a few days to the frontiers. The Sultan is already gone to his tents, and all his court; the appearance of them is indeed, very magnificent. Those of the great men are rather like palaces than tents, taking up a

Q.

great

242 DESCRIPTION OF ADRIANOPLE

great compass of ground, and being divided into a vast number of apartments. They are all of green, and the *Bassas of three Tails*, have those ensigns of their power placed in a very conspicuous manner before their tents, which are adorned, on the top with gilded balls, more or less, according to their different ranks. The ladies go in coaches to see the camp, as eagerly as ours did to that of *Hide Park*; but 'tis very easy to observe, that the soldiers do not begin the campaign with any great chearfulness. The war is a general grievance upon the people, but particularly hard upon the tradesmen, now that the Grand Signior is resolved to lead his army in person. Every company of them is obliged, upon this occasion, to make a present according to their ability.

I took the pains of rising at six in the morning to see the ceremony, which did not however begin till eight. The Grand Signior was at the Seraglio window, to see the procession, which passed through the principal streets. It was preceded by an *Effendi*, mounted on a camel, richly furnished, reading aloud the *Alcoran*, finely bound, laid upon a cushion. He was surrounded by a parcel of boys, in white, singing some verses of it, followed by a man dressed in green boughs, representing a clean husbandman sowing seed. After him several reapers with garlands of ears of corn, as *Ceres* is pictured, with scythes in their hands seeming to mow. Then a little machine drawn by oxen, in which was a wind-mill, and boys employed in grinding corn, followed by another machine, drawn by buffalos carrying an oven, and two more boys, one employed kneading the bread, and another in drawing it out of the oven. These boys threw little cakes on both sides amongst the crowd, and were followed by the whole company of bakers marching on foot, two by two, in their best cloaths, with cakes, loaves, pasties and pies of all sorts on their heads, and after them two buffoons or jack-puddings, with their faces and cloaths smeared with meal, who diverted the mob with their antic gestures. In the same manner followed all the companies of trade in the Empire; the nobler sort, such as jewellers, mercers &c. finely mounted and many of the pageants that represent their trades, perfectly magnificent; amongst which that of the Furriers made one of the best figures, being a very large machine set round with the skins of ermins, foxes, &c. so well stuffed, that the animals seemed to be alive, and followed by music and dancers. I believe they were, upon the whole, twenty thousand

thousand men, all ready to follow his Highness if he commanded them. The rear was closed by the volunteers, who came to beg the honour of dying in his service. This part of the shew seemed to me so barbarous, that I removed from the window upon the first appearance of it. They were all naked to the middle. Some had their arms pierced through with arrows left sticking in them. Others had them sticking in their heads, the blood trickling down their faces. Some flashed their arms with sharp knives, making the blood spring out upon those that stood there; and this is looked upon as an expression of their zeal for glory. I am told, that some make use of it to advance their love; and when they are near the window, where their mistress stands (all the women in town being veiled to see this spectacle) they stick another arrow for her sake, who gives some sign of approbation and encouragement to this gallantry. The whole shew lasted for near eight hours, to my great sorrow, who was heartily tired, though I was in the house of the widow of the *Captain Bassa* (Admiral) who refreshed me with coffee, sweatmeats, sherbet, &c. with all possible civility.

I tell you nothing of the order of Mr. Worthley's entry, and his audience. These things are allways the same, and have been so often described, I won't trouble you with the repetition. The young Prince, about eleven years old, sits near his father when he gives audience; he is a handsome boy, but, probably, will not immediately succeed the Sultan, there being two sons of Sultan *Mustapha* (his eldest brother) remaining; the eldest about twenty years old, on whom the hopes of the people are fixed. This reign has been bloody and avaritious. I am apt to believe they are very impatient to see the end of it. I am, Sir

Yours &c. &c.

To the Countess of B—.

At length I have heard from my dear lady B—, for the first time. I am persuaded you have had the goodness to write before, but I have had the ill fortune to lose your letters. Since my last, I have staid quietly at Constantinople, a city that I ought in conscience to give your ladyship a right notion of, since I know you can have none but what is partial and mistaken from the writings of travellers. 'Tis certain, there are many people that pass years here in *Pera*, without

244 DESCRIPTION OF ADRIANOPLE

having ever seen it, and yet they all pretend to describe it. *Pera*, *Tophana*, and *Galata*, wholly inhabited by French Christians (and which, together, make the appearance of a very fine town) are divided from it by the sea, which is not above half so broad as the broadest part of the Thames; but the Christian men are loath to hazard the adventures they sometimes meet with amongst the *Levents* or Seamen (worse monsters than our watermen) and the women must cover their faces to go there, which they have a perfect aversion to do. 'Tis true, they wear veils in *Pera*, but they are such as only serve to shew their beauty to more advantage, and would not be permitted in Constantinople. These reasons deter almost every creature from seeing it; and the French Ambassadors will return to France (I believe) without ever having been there. You'll wonder, Madam, to hear me add, that I have been there very often. The *Asmuck*, or Turkish veil, is become not only very easy, but agreeable to me; and if it was not, I would be content to endure some inconveniency to gratify a passion that is become so powerful with me, as curiosity. And indeed, the pleasure of going in a barge to Chelsea, is not comparable to that of rowing upon the canal of the sea here, where for twenty miles together down the *Bosphorus*, the most beautiful variety of prospects present themselves. The Asian side is covered with fruit trees, villages, and the most delightful landships in nature; on the European, stands Constantinople, situated on seven hills. — The unequal heights make it seem as large again as it is (tho' one of the largest cities in the world) shewing an agreeable mixture of gardens, pine and cypress trees, palaces, mosques, and publick buildings, raised one above another, with as much beauty and appearance of symmetry as your ladyship ever saw in a cabinet adorned by the most skilful hands, where jars shew themselves above jars, mixed with canisters, babies and candlesticks. This is a very odd comparison; but it gives me an exact idea of the thing. I have taken care to see as much of the Seraglio as is to be seen. It is on a point of land running into the sea; a palace of prodigious extent, but very irregular. The gardens take in a large compass of ground, full of high cypress trees, which is all I know of them. The buildings are all of white stone, headed on top, with gilded turrets and spires, which look very magnificent; and indeed, I believe there is no Christian King's palace half so large. There are six large courts in it, all built round and set with trees,

rees, having galleries of stone; one of those for the guard, another for the slaves, another for the officers of the kitchen, another for the stables, the fifth for the Divan, and the sixth for the apartment destined for audiences. On the ladies side there are, at least, as many more, with distinct courts belonging to their eunuchs and attendants, their kitchens, &c.

The next remarkable structure is that of St. *Sophia*, which 'tis very difficult to see. I was forced to send three times to the *Caimairan*, (the governor of the town) and he assembled the chief *Effendis*, or heads of the law, and inquired of the *Mufti*, whether it was lawful to permit it. They passed some days in this important debate; but, I insisting on my request, permission was granted. I can't be informed why the Turks are more delicate on the subject of this mosque, than on any of the others, where, what Christian pleases may enter without scruple. I fancy they imagine that, having been once consecrated, people, on pretence of curiosity, might prophane it with prayers, particularly to those Saints, who are still very visible in Mosaic work, and no other way defaced but by the decays of time; for it is absolutely false, tho' so universally asserted, that the Turks defaced all the images that they found in the city.

The mosque of Sultan *Solyman* is an exact square, with four fine towers in the angles; in the midst is a noble *Cupola* supported with beautiful marble pillars; two lesser at the ends, supported in the same manner; the pavement and gallery round the Mosque, of marble; under the great cupola is a fountain adorned with such fine coloured pillars, that I can hardly think them natural marble; on one side is the pulpit of white marble, and on the other the little gallery for the Grand Signior. A fine stair-case leads to it, and it is built up with gilded lattices. At the upper-end is a sort of altar, where the name of God is written; and, before it, stand two candlesticks, as high as a man, with wax candles as thick as three flambeaux. The pavement is spread with fine carpets, and the Mosque illuminated with a vast number of lamps. The court leading to it is very spacious, with galleries of marble of green columns, covered with twenty-eight leaded cupolas on two sides, and a fine fountain of basins in the midst of it.

This description may serve for all the Mosques in Constantinople. The model is exactly the same, and they only differ in largeness and thickness of materials.

246 DESCRIPTION OF ADRIANOPLE

The *Exchanges* are all noble buildings, full of fine alleys, the greatest part supported with pillars, and kept wonderfully neat. Every trade has its distinct alley, where the merchandize is disposed in the same order as in the New Exchange at London. The *Bisisten*, or jeweller's quarter, shews so much riches, such a vast quantity of diamonds, and all kind of precious stones, that they dazzle the sight. The embroiderers is also very glittering, and people walk here as much for diversion as business. The markets are most of them handsome squares, and admirably well provided, perhaps better than in any other part of the world.

I know you'll expect I should say something particular of the slaves; and you will imagine me half a Turk, when I don't speak of it with the same horror other Christians have done before me. But I cannot forbear applauding the humanity of the Turks to these creatures; they are never ill used, and their slavery is, in my opinion, no worse than servitude all over the world. 'Tis true they have no wages; but they give them yearly clothes to a higher value than our salaries to our ordinary servants.

I have seen no other footsteps of antiquity except the aquæducts, which are so vast that I am apt to believe they are yet more antient than the Greek Empire. The Turks, indeed, have clapped in some stones with Turkish inscriptions, to give their natives the honour of so great a work; but the deceit is easily discovered. — The other publick buildings are the *Hans* and *Monasteries*; the first are very large and numerous; the second few in number, and not at all magnificent. I had the curiosity to visit one of them, and to observe the devotions of the *Dervises*, which are as whimsical as any at Rome. These fellows have permission to marry, but are confined to an odd habit, which is only a piece of coarse white cloth, wrapped about them, with their legs and arms naked. Their order has few other rules, except that of performing their fantastick rites, every Tuesday and Friday, which is done in this manner: They meet together in a large hall, where they all stand with their eyes fixed on the ground and their arms across, while the *Imaum* or preacher reads part of the *Alcoran* from a pulpit, placed in the midst; and when he has done, eight or ten of them make a melancholy concert with their pipes, which are no unmusical instruments. Then he reads again, and makes a short exposition on what he has read; after which they sing
and

and play, till their Superior (the only one of them dressed in green) rises and begins a sort of solemn dance. They all stand about him in a regular figure, and while some play, the others tie their robe (which is very wide) fast round their waist, and begin to turn round with an amazing swiftness, and yet with great regard to the music, moving slower or faster as the tune is played. This lasts above an hour, without any of them shewing the least appearance of giddiness, which is not to be wondered at, when it is considered, they are all used to it from their infancy; most of them being devoted to this way of live from their birth. There turned amongst them some little Dervises of six or seven years old, who seemed no more disordered by that exercise than the others. At the end of the ceremony they shout out: "*There is no other God, but God, and Mahomet his Prophet:*", after which they kiss the Superior's hand and retire. The whole is performed with the most solemn gravity. Nothing can be more austere than the form of these people; they never raise their eyes, and seem devoted to contemplation. And as ridiculous as this is in description, there is something touching in the air of submission and mortification they assume. — This letter is of a horrible length; but you may burn it when you have read enough, &c. &c.

THE CLIMATE, NATURAL HISTORY, AND PRODUCTS OF JAMAICA. *)

Jamaica lies between the 75th and 79th degrees of west longitude from London, and is between seventeen and nineteen degrees distant from the equinoctial. It is in length, from east to west, upwards of one hundred and forty English miles, in breadth about sixty, and of an oval form; divided by a ridge of rocky mountains, which give rise to a vast number of fine rivulets, well stored with fish of various kinds, though they contain none of the European species, except eels and crawfish. The mullet is very palatable, and the colipever little inferior to salmon. None of these rivers are navigable, or indeed could be made so without vast expence;

Q 4

yet

*) Wynne General History of the British Empire in America, 2 Vols. London 1770. 8.

yet some of these are so large, that canoes loaded with sugars, pass from very remote plantations to the sea-side. The soil, in general, is excellent, especially in the northern parts of the island, and prodigiously fertile.

The longest day is little above thirteen hours, and the night proportionably long. About nine in the forenoon the heat is intense, and could scarce be endured, was it not tempered by the sea-breeze, which generally begins to blow about that time, and continues till five in the afternoon. The nights are sometimes pretty cool; and every night there falls a piercing dew, which is extremely unwholesome. Twilight continues not above three quarters of an hour. The seasons are only distinguished by the denomination of wet and dry. On the whole, if the island was not subject to violent storms, hurricanes, and earthquakes, and if the air was not violently hot, damp, and extremely unwholesome in most parts, the fertility and beauty of the country, would make it as desirable a situation for pleasure as it is for profit. The south and north parts of the island are the most wholesome, agreeable, and least subject to hurricanes.

The natural products of this island are as numerous as perhaps those of any spot in the world of the same size. The tree which bears pimento, or all-spice, commonly called Jamaica pepper, rises to the height of above thirty feet, is straight, of a moderate thickness, and covered with a very smooth, shining, grey bark. It shoots out a vast number of branches on every side, which bears a plentiful foliage of very large beautiful leaves, of a shining green, like those of the bay tree. The bunches of flowers are formed at the very ends of the twigs, each stalk bearing a flower that bends back, within which are to be discerned some stamina of a pale green colour; to which succeed a bunch of berries, rather larger than juniper berries, like which, when ripe, they become black and smooth; but before they are quite ripe are picked off the tree, and dried in the sun. This tree grows mostly upon the mountains. The island also produces the wild cinnamon tree, whose bark is so useful in medicine; the manchineal, which bears a most beautiful apple, and affords a most ornamental wood for cabinet-makers, though the apple and juice, in every part of the tree, are deadly poisons; the mahogany tree; the cedar; the cabbage tree, about an hundred feet high, which bears a substance on the top which looks and tastes like cabbage, and no less remarkable for the extreme

extreme hardness of its wood, which, when dry, is incorruptible; and scarcely penetrable by any tool; the palm, from which an oil is drawn, much esteemed by the negroes; the white wood, which is never affected by the worm with which these seas abound; the soap-tree, whose berries answer all the purposes of washing; the mangrove and olive bark, useful to tanners; the fustick red-wood; and, lately, the logwood, employed in dying; and the forests supply the druggists with guaicum, sarsaparilla, chinaroot, cassia, and tamarinds. The island also produces aloes, and the cochineal plant, though the Jamaicans are ignorant of the method of managing it. The mastick-tree, iron-wood, and bulley-tree, are hard woods, fit for the millwright.

The island of Jamaica is divided into nineteen parishes, which send each two members to the assembly. Port Royal, the antient capital, stood upon the point of a peninsula, which formed a part of the shore of a noble harbour of the same name, in which a thousand sail of the largest ships may anchor, with the greatest conveniency and safety; there being depth of water at the key of Port Royal for vessels of the greatest burthen to lie close to the wharfs. This conveniency, and the resort of the buccaneers, (though the soil is only a hot, dry sand, which produces none of the necessaries of life not even fresh water) soon rendered it a very considerable place, in about thirty years time containing two thousand houses, which rented as high as in London. In short, few places in the world could be compared to it for trade, wealth, and an entire corruption of manners. Port Royal continued in this flourishing state until the 9th of June, 1692, when it was overwhelmed by an earthquake. It was rebuilt, and a second time destroyed by fire. The extraordinary conveniency of its harbour tempted the inhabitants to rebuild it once more; but, in 1722, an hurricane reduced it, a third time, to an heap of rubbish. Warned by these repeated calamities, the assembly removed the custom-house, public offices, and market from thence; and the principal inhabitants removed to the opposite side of the bay, to a town called Kingston, now the seat of government, advantageously situated for fresh water, and all manner of accommodations. The streets are of a commodious width, regularly drawn, and intercept each other at equal distances, and right angles. It contains upwards of a thousand houses, many of them handsomely built, tho' low, with porticos, and suitable conveniences for the climate.

The harbour, by the care of governor Knowles, is now strongly fortified; its entrance being defended by Fort Charles, one of the strongest in the British islands, and a battery of sixty pieces of cannon, besides additional works. Kingston sends three members to the assembly.

St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanish Town, situated on the river Cobre, a considerable, though not navigable stream, that falls into the sea near Kingston, formerly the seat of government, and the place where the courts of justice were held, though inferior in size and resort to Kingston, and a town of less business, is equal in gaiety to many European cities, which it seems to rival in all polite diversions. This town sends three representatives to the assembly.

In St. Catherine's parish stands a fort, mounted with ten or twelve carriage guns, called Passage Fort, being the greatest thoroughfare in the island. Port Negril has a good safe harbour, and lies conveniently for intercepting the Spanish trade to and from the Havannah. Port Antonio, in St. Ann's parish, would be the best harbour in the island, were it not for its difficult entrance; however, it is defended by a regular fort, and a small garrison. There is likewise a fort at the bay of Port Morant, on the south-east part of the island, where are excellent plantations, both of sugar and cotton, and a salt work.

The government of Jamaica is the best in the gift of the crown, that of Ireland excepted. The standing salary is two thousand five hundred pounds per annum; the assembly vote the governor as much more; and this, with the great perquisites annexed to his office, make the whole near ten thousand pounds per annum.

The principal exports of the island are sugars, of which they export about twenty thousand hogsheads per annum, some of which weigh a ton. Most of this is sent to the mother-country, though a small part of it goes to North-America, in exchange for beef, pork, cheese, corn, pease, staves, plank, pitch, and tar. Rum, of which they export about four thousand puncheons, esteemed better than that of the other West-India islands: molasses, in which they make the greatest part of their returns for New-England, where there are vast distilleries: cotton, of which they export two thousand bags. Indigo was formerly much cultivated; but the quantity now made is inconsiderable. Some cacao and coffee are also exported; but the latter is not much esteemed. The Jamaicans also send

to England a considerable quantity of pimento, ginger, drugs, sweetmeats, and mahagony and manchineal plank.

The logwood-trade is also considerable. We formerly cut logwood in the Bay of Campeachy, on the northern side of the peninsula of Jucatan; but being expelled from thence by the Spaniards, the logwood-cutters settled upon the Gulph of Honduras, on the southern side of the same peninsula, where they were protected by a fort, now demolished, agreeable to an article of the late peace. These logwood-cutters are mostly fugitives from all parts of North-America, who live in a lawless manner, though they elect one of their number king, to whom they pay very little obedience. They amount in number to about five hundred, and go always well armed. The country they inhabit is extremely marshy, the air prodigiously infested with musketoes, and the water full of alligators; yet a life of licentiousness and large gains, have perfectly reconciled them to the hardships of their employment, and the unwholesomeness of the climate.

In the dry season, when they cut logwood, they advance a considerable way into the country in search of the logwood. In the wet season, when the whole country is overflowed, they know the marks where the logwood lies, which being a heavy wood, sinks in the water, but is so easily buoyed up, that a singly diver is capable of lifting very large pieces. The logwood is thus carried by the favour of the land-floods into the river, to the port where the ships lie that come upon this trade, which in some years employs near six thousand tons of shipping, consumes a large quantity of English manufactures, and is of considerable use in fabricating many others; the whole value of the returns being not less than sixty thousand pounds sterling per annum. It is generally carried on by vessels from North-America, which purchase their goods in Jamaica.

The trade which is carried on between Jamaica and the Spanish main is still more profitable than that of the logwood, especially in time of war. It is carried on in the following manner: The vessel from Jamaica being furnished with negroes, and a proper assortment of other goods, proceeds to a place called Monkey Key, within four miles of Portobelo. On its arrival, a person understanding the Spanish tongue is immediately sent ashore, to give notice to the merchants of that town. Information is likewise given, with all possible expedition, to the merchants of Panama. Without loss
of

of time, the traders set out, disguised like peasants, and carrying their silver in earthen jars, covered with flour, in order to deceive the officers of the revenue. They generally repair on board, where they are handsomely entertained, and at their departure take their purchases along with them, either negroe-slaves, or dry goods packed up in such a manner as to be carried by one person, leaving behind them the price agreed on in dollars. They are likewise furnished with provisions sufficient to serve them during their return. This traffic commonly lasts for about five or six weeks. If the whole cargo is not disposed of at this place, they shape their course then for an harbour called the Brew, about five miles distant from Carthagena, where they quickly find a vent for the rest of their goods. These are the two principal places where this trade is carried on, but they are not the only ones; the Caraccas, and many other parts upon that coast, have also their share. Nor are the English the only nation concerned in it; the French from Hispaniola, and the Dutch from Curassow, likewise interfere, and have, within these few years, almost entirely cut out the English, owing chiefly to the injudicious regulations of a late minister. There was, however, when it flourished, no trade more profitable than this; the payments being not only all in ready money, but the goods selling at an higher price than in any other market. But it is prohibited by the Spaniards, under severe penalties; and the guarda costas, when they catch any of these interlopers, treat them little better than if they were pirates. Besides, they frequently seize, and otherwise maltreat, the fair traders, under pretence of their being concerned in this contraband traffick. This practice has given rise to numberless disputes between the courts of Great-Britain and Spain, and particularly was the occasion of the first Spanish war.

This commerce at all times; and the prizes which in great numbers are carried into Jamaica in time of war, for of all our islands it is the best situated for making captures, occasion a vast influx of treasure into it; so that great fortunes are made as rapidly here as any where else in the world, whilst the people appear to live in such a state of profusion and luxury in their equipages, their cloaths, furniture, and tables, as in any other place would bring on beggary and bankruptcy. On this account their treasure makes but a very short stay amongst them, but is immediately transmitted to North-America, or Europe, to purchase the different articles of
luxury

luxury and conveniency, as well as to supply their extraordinary demand for slaves, which is annually for above six thousand head, both to supply their own deficiency and the Spanish market.

ACT. I. SCENE I and II.

OF Mr. COLMAN'S COMEDY OF
THE JEALOUS WIFE. *)

Mrs. Oakly, *within*.

Don't tell me — I know it is so — It's monstrous, and I will not bear it.

Oak. within. But, my Dear! —

Mrs. Oak. Nay, nay, &c. *(Squabbling within.)*

Enter Mrs. Oakly, with a Letter, Oakly following.

Mrs. Oak. Say what you will, Mr. *Oakly*, you shall never persuade me, but this is some filthy Intrigue of yours.

Oak. I can assure you, my Love! —

Mrs. Oak. Your Love! — Don't I know your — Tell me, I say, this Instant, every Circumstance relating to this Letter.

Oak. How can I tell you, when you will not so much as let me see it?

Mrs. Oak. Look you, Mr. *Oakly*, this Usage is not to be borne. You take a Pleasure in abusing my Tenderness and soft Disposition. — To be perpetually running over the whole Town, nay the whole Kingdom too, in pursuit of your Amours! — Did not I discover that you was great with Mademoiselle, my own Woman? — Did not you contract a shameful Familiarity with Mrs. *Freeman*? — Did not I detect your Intrigue with Lady Wealthy? — Was not you —

Oak. Oons! Madam, the Grand Turk himself has not half so many Mistresses — You throw me out of all Patience — Do I know any body but our common Friends? — Am I visited by any body, that does not visit you? — Do I ever go out, unless you go with me? — And am I not as constantly by your Side, as if I was tied to your Apron Strings?

Mrs.

*) Oxford 1761. 8.

Mrs. Oak. Go, go, you are a false Man — Have not I found you out a thousand Times? And have not I this Moment a Letter in my Hand, which convinces me of your Baseness? — Let me know the whole Affair, or I will —

Oak. Let you know? Let me know what you would have of me — You stop my Letter before it comes to my Hands, and then expect that I shou'd know the Contents of it.

Mrs. Oak. Heaven be praised! I stopt it. — I suspected some of these Doings for some Time past — But the Letter informs me who she is, and I'll be revenged on her sufficiently, Oh, you base Man, you!

Oak. I beg, my Dear, that you would moderate your Passion! — Shew me the Letter, and I'll convince you of my Innocence.

Mrs. Oak. Innocence! — Abominable! — Innocence! — But I am not to be made such a Fool — I am convinced of your perfidy, and very sure that —

Oak. 'Sdeath and Fire! your passion hurries you out of your Senies. — Will you hear me?

Mrs. Oak. No, you are a base Man; and I will not hear you.

Oak. Why then, my Dear, since you will neither talk reasonably yourself, nor listen to Reason from me, I shall take my Leave till you are in a better Humour. So, your Servant! *(Going.*

Mrs. Oak. Ay, go, you cruel Man! — Go to your Mistresses, and leave your poor Wife to her Miseries. — How unfortunate a Woman am I! — I could die with Vexation. — *(Throwing herself into a Chair.*

Oak. There it is — Now dare not I stir a step further — If I offer to go, she is in one of her Fits in an Instant — Never sure was Woman at once of so violent and so delicate a Constitution! — What shall I say to sooth her? — Nay, never make Thyself so uneasy, my Dear — Come, come, you know I love You. Nay, nay, you shall be convinced.

Mrs. Oak. I know you hate me; and that your Unkindness and Barbarity will be the Death of me. *(Whining.*

Oak. Do not vex yourself at this Rate — I love you most passionately — Indeed I do — This must be some Mistake.

Mrs. Oak. O, I am an unhappy Woman. *(Weeping.*

Oak.

Oak. Dry up thy Tears, my Love, and be comforted! — You will find that I am not to blame in this Matter — Come, let me see this Letter. — Nay, you shall not deny me.

(Taking the Letter.

Mrs. Oak. There! take it, you know the Hand! I am sure.

Oak. To *Charles Oakly*, Esq. *(Reading.)* — Hand! 'Tis a Clerk-like Hand, indeed! a good round Text! and was certainly never penned by a fair Lady.

Mrs. Oak. Ay, laugh at me, do!

Oak. Forgive me, my Love, I did not mean to laugh at thee — But what says the Letter? — *(Reading.)* — *Daughter eloped — You must be privy to it — Scandalous — Dishonourable — Satisfaction — Revenge um, um, um — injured Father.*

Henry Ruffet.

Mrs. Oak. (Rising.) Well, Sir — You see I have detected you — Tell me this Instant where she is concealed.

Oak. So — so — so — This hurts me — I am shock'd — *(To himself.*

Mrs. Oak. What are you confounded with your Guilt? Have I caught you at last?

Oak. O that wicked *Charles!* To decoy a young Lady from her Parents in the Country! The Profligacy of the young Fellows of this Age is abominable. *(To himself.*

Mrs. Oak. (Half aside and musing) *Charles!* — Let me see! — *Charles!* — No! — Impossible. — This is all a Trick.

Oak. He has certainly ruined this poor Lady. *(To himself.*

Mrs. Oak. Art! Art! all Art! — There's a sudden Turn now! — You have ready Wit for Intrigue, I find.

Oak. Such an abandoned Action! — I wish I had never had the Care of him. *(To himself.*

Mrs. Oak. Mighty fine, Mr. *Oakly!* — Go on Sir, go on! — I see what you mean. — Your Assurance provokes me beyond your very Falsehood itself. — So you imagine, Sir, that this affected Concern, this flimsy Pretence about *Charles*, is to bring you off. — Matchless Confidence! — But I am armed against every Thing. — I am prepar'd for all your dark Schemes: I am aware of all your low Stratagems.

Oak. See there now! Was ever any Thing so provoking? To persevere in your ridiculous — For Heaven's Sake, my Dear, don't distract me. When you see my Mind thus agitated
and

and uneasy, that a young Fellow, whom his dying Father, my own Brother, committed to my Care, should be guilty of such enormous Wickedness; I say, when you are witness of my Distress on this Occasion, how can you be weak enough and cruel enough to —

Mrs. Oak. Prodigiously well, Sir! You do it very well. — Nay keep it up, carry it on, there's nothing like going through with it. — O you artful Creature! But, Sir, I am not to be so easily satisfied. — I do not believe a Syllable of all this — Give me the Letter — (*Snatching the Letter.*) — You shall sorely repent this vile Business, for I am resolved that I will know the Bottom of it. (*Exit.*)

Oakly, solus.

Oak. This is beyond all Patience. — Provoking Woman! — Her absurd Suspicions interpret every Thing the wrong Way. She delights to make me wretched, because she sees I am attached to her, and converts my Tenderness and Affection into the Instruments of my own Torture. — But this ungracious Boy! — In how many Troubles will he involve his own and this Lady's Family — I never imagin'd that he was of such abandon'd Principles.

ACT. II. SCENE III. IV.

Russet and Sir Harry Beagle.

Rus. Well, Sir *Harry*, have you heard any Thing of her?

Sir H. Yes, I have been asking *Tom* about her, and he says, you may have her for Five Hundred Guineas.

Rus. Five Hundred Guineas! How d'ye mean? Where is she? Which Way did she take?

Sir H. Why first she went to *Epsom*, then to *Lincoln*, then to *Nottingham*, and now she is at *York*.

Rus. Impossible! She could not go over half the Ground in the Time. What the Devil are you talking of?

Sir H. Of the Mare you was just now saying you wanted to buy.

Rus. The Devil take the Mare! — Who wou'd think of her, when I am mad about an Affair of so much more Consequence?

Sir

Sir *H.* You seem'd mad about her a little while ago. She's a fine Mare, and a Thing of Shape and Blood.

Ruf. Damn her Blood! — *Harriot!* My dear provoking *Harriot!* Where can she be? Have you got any Intelligence of her?

Sir *H.* No, Faith not I: We seem to be quite thrown out here — But however I have ordered *Tom* to try if he can hear any Thing of her among the Ostlers.

Ruf. Why don't you enquire after her yourself? Why don't you run up and down the whole Town after her? — T'other young Rascal knows where she is, I warrant you — What a Plague it is to have a Daughter! When one loves her to Distraction, and has toil'd and labour'd to make her happy, the ungrateful Slut will sooner go to Hell her own Way — But she *shall* have him — I will make her happy, if I break her Heart for it — A provoking Gipsy! — To run away, and torment her poor Father, that doats on her! — I'll never see her Face again — Sir *Harry*, how can we get any Intelligence of her? Why don't you speak? Why don't you tell me? — Zouns! You seem as indifferent as if you did not care a Farthing about her.

Sir *H.* Indifferent! You may well call me Indifferent — This damn'd Chace after her will cost me a Thousand — If it had not been for her, I wou'd not have been off the Course this Week, to have sav'd the Lives of my whole Family — I'll hold you fix to two that —

Ruf. Zouns! Hold your Tongue, or talk more to the Purpose — I swear, she is too good for you — You don't deserve such a Wife — A fine, dear, sweet, lovely, charming Girl! — She'll break my Heart. — How shall I find her out? — Do, prithee, Sir *Harry*, my dear honest Friend, consider how we may discover where she is fled to.

Sir *H.* Suppose you put an Advertisement into the Newspapers, describing her Marks, her Age, her Height, and where she stray'd from. I recover'd a bay Mare once by that Method.

Ruf. Advertise her! — What! Describe my Daughter, and expose her in the Publick Papers, with a Reward for bringing her home, like Horses, stolen or stray'd! — Recover'd a bay Mare! — The Devil's in the Fellow! — He thinks of nothing but Racers, and bay Mares, and Stallions. — 'Sdeath! I wish your —

Sir H. I wish *Harriot* was fairly pounded. It wou'd save us both a deal of Trouble.

Ruf. Which way shall I turn myself! — I am half-distracted. — If go to that young Dog's House, he has certainly conveyed her somewhere out of my Reach — If she does not send to me to-day, I'll give her up for ever — Perhaps though, she may have met with some Accident, and has nobody to assist her — No, she is certainly with that young Rascal. — I wish she was dead, and I was dead. — I'll blow young *Oakly's* Brains out.

Enter Tom.

Sir H. Well, Tom, how is poor *Snip*?

Tom. A little better, Sir, after his warm Mash: But *Lady*, the Pointing Bitch that followed you all the Way, is deadly Foot-fore.

Ruf. Damn *Snip* and *Lady*! — Have you heard any thing of *Harriot*?

Tom. Why I came on Purpose to let my Master and your Honour know, that *John* Ostler says as how, just such a Lady, as I told him Madam *Harriot* was, came here in a four-wheel Chaise, and was fetch'd away soon after by a fine Lady in a Chariot.

Ruf. Did she come alone?

Tom. Quite alone, only a Servant-Maid, please your Honour.

Ruf. And what Part of the Town did they go to?

Tom. *John* Ostler says as how, they bid the Coachman drive to *Grosvenor* Square.

Sir H. Soho! Pufs — Yoics!

Ruf. She is certainly gone to that young Rogue — He has got his Aunt to fetch her from hence — Or else she is with her own Aunt, *Lady Freeclove* — They both live in that Part of the Town. I'll go to his House, and in the mean while, Sir *Harry*, You shall step to *Lady Freeclove's*. We'll find her, I warrant You. I'll teach my young Mistress to be gadding. She shall marry you tonight. Come along, Sir *Harry*, come along! We won't lose a Minute. Come along!

Sir H. Soho! Hark forward! Wind 'em and cross'em! Hark forward! Yoics! Yoics!

(Exeunt.)

HISTO.

HISTORY OF THE INVINCIBLE ARMADA. *)

King Philip II. of Spain, though he had not yet declared war, on account of the hostilities, which Elizabeth every where committed upon him, had long harboured a secret and violent desire of revenge against her. His ambition also and the hopes of extending his empire were much encouraged by the present prosperous situation of his affairs; by the conquest of Portugal, the acquisition of the East-Indian commerce and settlements, and the yearly importation of vast treasures from America. The point, on which he rested his highest glory, the perpetual object of his policy, was to support orthodoxy and exterminate heresy; and as the power and credit of Elizabeth were the chief bulwark of the protestants, he hoped, if he could subdue that princess, to acquire the eternal renown, of being able to re-unite the whole christian world in the catholic communion. Above all, his indignation against his revolted subjects in the Netherlands instigated him to attack the English who had encouraged that insurrection, and who, by their near neighbourhood, were so well enabled to support the Hollanders, that he could never hope to reduce these rebels, while the power of that kingdom remained entire and unbroken. To subdue England seemed a necessary preparative to the reestablishment of his authority in the Netherlands; and notwithstanding all appearances, the former was in itself, as a more important, so a more easy, undertaking than the latter. That kingdom lay nearer Spain than the Low Countries, and was more exposed to invasions from that quarter; after an enemy had once obtained entrance, it was neither fortified by art nor nature; a long peace had deprived it of all military discipline and experience; and the catholics, in which it still abounded, would be ready, it was hoped, to join any invader, who should free them from those grievous persecutions, at present exercised against them, and should revenge the death of the Queen of Scots, on whom they had fixed all their affections. The fate of England must be decided in one battle at sea, and another at land; and what comparison between the English and Spaniards, either in point of naval force, or in the numbers, reputation, and veteran bravery of their armies? Besides the acquisition of so great a kingdom, success against England ensured the immediate

R 2

diate

*) David Hume's History of England, Lond. 8 Vol. 1776. 4.

diate subjection of the Hollanders, who, attacked on every hand, and deprived of all support, must yield their stubborn necks to that yoke, which they had so long resisted. Happily this conquest, as it was of the utmost importance to the grandeur of Spain, would not at present be opposed by the jealousy of the neighbouring powers, naturally so much interested to prevent the success of that enterprize. A truce was lately concluded with the Turks; the empire was in the hands of a friend and near ally; and France, the perpetual rival of Spain, was so torn with intestine commotions, that she had no leisure to pay attention to her foreign interests. This favourable opportunity, therefore, which might never again present itself, must be seized; and one bold effort made for acquiring that ascendant in Europe, to which the present greatness and prosperity of the Spaniards seemed so fully to intitle them.

These hopes and motives engaged Philip, notwithstanding his cautious temper, to undertake this hazardous enterprize; and tho' the Prince, now created by the pope, duke of Parma, when consulted, opposed the attempt, at least represented the necessity of previously getting possession of some sea-port town in the Netherlands, which might afford a retreat to the Spanish navy, it was determined by the catholic monarch to proceed immediately to the execution of his ambitious project. During some time he had been secretly making preparations; but as soon as the resolution was fully taken, every part of his vast empire resounded with the noise of armaments, and all his ministers, generals, and admirals, were employed in forwarding the design. The marquis of Santa Cruz, a sea-officer of great reputation and experience, was destined to command the fleet; and by his counsels were the naval equipments conducted. In all the ports of Sicily, Naples, Spain, and Portugal, artizans were employed in building vessels of uncommon size and force; naval stores were bought at a great expence; provisions amassed; armies levied and quartered in the maritime towns of Spain; and plans laid for fitting out such a fleet and embarkation as had never before had its equal in Europe. The military preparations in Flanders were no less formidable. Troops from all quarters were every moment assembling, to reinforce the duke of Parma. Capizuchi and Spinelli, conducted forces from Italy: The marquis of Borgaut, a prince of the house of Austria, levied troops in Germany: The Walloon and Burgundian regiments were compleated or augmented: The Spanish infantry was supplied with recruits; and an army of thirty four thousand
men

men was assembled in the Netherlands, and kept in readiness to be transported into England. The duke of Parma employed all the carpenters whom he could procure, either in Flanders or in Lower Germany, and the coasts of the Baltic; and he built at Dunkirk, and Newport, but especially at Antwerp, a great number of boats and flat bottomed vessels, for the transporting of his infantry and cavalry. The most renowned nobility and princes of Italy and Spain were ambitious of sharing in the honour of this great enterprize. Don Amadæus of Savoy, Don John of Medicis, Vespasian Gonzaga, duke of Sabionetta, and the duke of Pastrana, hastened to join the army under the duke of Parma. About two thousand volunteers in Spain, many of them men of family, had enlisted in the service. No doubt was entertained, but such vast preparations, conducted by officers of such consummate skill, must finally be successful. And the Spaniards, ostentatious of their power, and elevated with vain hopes, had already denominated their navy the *Invincible Armada*.

News of these extraordinary preparations soon reached the court of London; and notwithstanding the secrecy of the Spanish council, and their pretending to employ this force in the Indies, it was easily concluded, that they meant to make some effort against England. The Queen had foreseen the invasion; and finding that she must now contend for her crown with the whole force of Spain, she made preparations for resistance; nor was she terrified with that power, by which, all Europe apprehended, she must of necessity be overwhelmed. Her force indeed seemed very unequal to resist so potent an enemy. All the sailors in England amounted at that time to about fourteen thousand men. The size of the English shipping was, in general, so small, that, except a few of the Queen's ships of war, there were not four vessels belonging to the merchants which exceeded four hundred tons. The royal navy consisted only of twenty-eight sail, many of which were of small size; none of them exceeding the bulk of our largest frigates, and most of them deserving rather the name of pinnaces than of ships. The only advantage of the English fleet consisted in the dexterity and courage of the seamen, who, being accustomed to sail in tempestuous seas, and expose themselves to all dangers, as much exceeded in this particular the Spanish mariners, as their vessels were inferior in size and force to those of that nation. All the commercial towns of England were required to furnish ships for re-inforcing this small navy; and they discovered,

on the present occasion, great alacrity in defending their liberty and religion against those imminent perils, with which they were menaced. The citizens of London, in order to shew their zeal in the common cause, instead of fifteen vessels, which they were commanded to equip, voluntarily fitted out double the number. The gentry and nobility hired, and armed, and manned, forty-three ships at their own charge; and all the loans of money, which the Queen demanded, were frankly granted by the persons applied to. Lord Howard of Effingham, a man of courage and capacity, was admiral, and took on him the command of the navy: Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher, the most renowned seamen in Europe, served under him. The principal fleet was stationed at Plymouth. A smaller squadron, consisting of forty vessels, English and Flemish, was commanded by the lord Seymour, second son of protector Somerset; and lay off Dunkirk, in order to intercept the duke of Parma.

The land forces of England, compared to those of Spain, possessed contrary qualities to its naval power: They were more numerous than the enemy, but much inferior in discipline, reputation, and experience. An army of twenty thousand men was disposed in different bodies along the south coast; and orders were given them, if they could not hinder the Spaniards from landing, to retire backwards, to waste the country around, and to wait for reinforcement from the neighbouring counties, before they approached the enemy. A body of twenty-two thousand foot, and a thousand horse, under the command of the earl of Leicester, was stationed at Tilbury, in order to defend the capital. The principal army consisted of thirty-four thousand foot, and two thousand horse, and was commanded by lord Hunsdon. These forces were reserved for guarding the Queen's person; and were appointed to march whithersoever the enemy should appear. The fate of England, if all the Spanish armies should be able to land, seemed to depend on the issue of a single battle; and men of reflection entertained the most dismal apprehensions, when they considered the force of fifty thousand veteran Spaniards, commanded by experienced officers, under the duke of Parma, the most consummate general of the age; and compared this formidable armament with the military power, which England, not enervated by peace, but long refused to war, could muster up against it.

The chief support of the kingdom seemed to consist in the vigour and prudence of the Queen's conduct; who, undismayed by

by the present dangers, issued all her orders with tranquillity, animated her people to a steady resistance, and employed every resource, which either her domestic situation or her foreign alliances could afford her. She sent Sir Robert Sydney into Scotland; and exhorted the King to remain attached to her, and to consider the danger, which at present menaced his sovereignty no less than her own, from the ambition of the Spanish tyrant! The ambassador found James well disposed to cultivate an union with England, and that prince even kept himself prepared to march with the force of his whole kingdom to the assistance of Elizabeth. Her authority with the King of Denmark, and the tie of their common religion, engaged this monarch, upon her application, to seize a squadron of ships, which Philip had bought or hired in the Danish harbours: The Hanse Towns, though not at that time on good terms with Elizabeth, were induced, by the same motives, to retard so long the equipment of some vessels in their ports, that they became useless to the purpose of invading England. All the protestants throughout Europe regarded this enterprize as the critical event, which was to decide for ever the fate of their religion; and though unable, by reason of their distance, to join their force to that of Elizabeth, they kept their eyes fixed on her conduct and fortune, and beheld with anxiety, mixed with admiration, the intrepid countenance, with which she encountered that dreadful tempest, which was every moment approaching towards her.

The Queen also was sensible, that, next to the general popularity, which she enjoyed, and the confidence, which her subjects reposed in her prudent government, the firmest support of her throne consisted in the general zeal of the people for the protestant religion, and the strong prejudices which they had imbibed against popery. She took care, on the present occasion, to revive in the nation this attachment to their own sect, and this abhorrence of the opposite. The English were reminded of their former danger from the tyranny of Spain: All the barbarities, exercised by Mary against the protestants, were ascribed to the counsels of that bigotted and imperious nation: The bloody massacres in the Indies, the unrelenting executions in the Low Countries, the horrid cruelties and iniquities of the inquisition, were set before men's eyes: A list and description was published, and pictures dispersed, of the several instruments of torture, with which, it was pretended, the Spanish Armada was loaded: And every artifice, as well as reason, was em-

ployed, to animate the people to a vigorous defence of their religion, their laws, and their liberties.

But while the Queen, in this critical emergence, roused the animosity of the nation against popery, she treated the partizans of that sect with moderation, and gave not way to an undistinguishing fury against them. Though she knew, that Sixtus Quintus, the present pope, famous for his rapacity and tyranny, had fulminated a new bull of excommunication against her, had deposed her from the throne, had absolved her subjects from their oaths of allegiance, had published a crusade against England, and had granted plenary indulgences to every one engaged in the present invasion; she would not believe, that all her catholic subjects could be so blinded, as to sacrifice to bigotry their duty to their sovereign, and the liberty and independency of their native country. She rejected all violent counsels, by which she was urged to seek pretences for dispatching the leaders of that party: She would not even confine any considerable number of them: And the catholics, sensible of this good usage, generally expressed great zeal for the public defence. Some gentlemen of that sect, conscious that they could not justly expect any trust or authority, entered themselves as volunteers in the fleet or army: Some equipped ships at their own charge, and gave the command of them to protestants: Others were active in animating their tenants, and vassals, and neighbours, to the defence of their country: And every rank of men, burying for the present all party distinctions, seemed to prepare themselves, with order as well as vigour, to resist the violence of these invaders.

The more to excite the martial spirit of the nation, the Queen appeared on horseback in the camp at Tilbury; and riding through the lines, discovered a chearful and animated countenance, exhorted the soldiers to remember their duty to their country and their religion, and professed her intention, though a woman, to lead them herself into the field against the enemy, and rather to perish in battle than survive the ruin and slavery of her people. By this spirited behaviour she revived the tenderness and admiration of the soldiery: An attachment to her person became a kind of enthusiasm among them: And they asked one another, whether it were possible, that Englishmen could abandon this glorious cause, could display less courage than appeared in the female sex, or could ever, by any dangers, be induced to relinquish the defence of their heroic princess.

The

OF THE INVINCIBLE ARMADA. 265

The Spanish Armada was ready in the beginning of May (1588) but the moment it was preparing to sail, the marquis of Santa Cruz, the admiral, was seized with a violent fever, of which he soon after died. The vice-admiral, the duke of Paliano, by a strange concurrence of accidents, at the very same time, suffered the same fate; and the King appointed for admiral the duke of Medina Sidonia, a nobleman of great family, but unexperienced in action, and entirely unacquainted with sea affairs. Alcarede was appointed vice-admiral. This misfortune, besides the loss of so great an officer as Santa Cruz, retarded the sailing of the Armada, and gave the English more time for their preparations to oppose them. At last, the fleet, full of hopes and alacrity, set sail from Lisbon; but next day met with a violent tempest, which scattered the ships, sunk some of the smallest, and forced the rest to take shelter in the Groyne, where they waited till they could be refitted. When news of this event was carried to England, the Queen concluded, that the design of an invasion was disappointed for this summer; and being always ready to lay hold of every pretence for saving money, she made Walsingham write to the admiral, directing him to lay up some of the larger ships, and to discharge the seamen: But Lord Effingham, who was not so sanguine in his hopes, used the freedom to disobey these orders; and he begged leave to retain all the ships in service, tho' it should be at his own expence. He took advantage of a north wind, and sailed towards the coast of Spain, with an intention of attacking the enemy in their harbours; but the wind changing to the south, he became apprehensive, lest they might have set sail, and by passing him at sea, invade England, now exposed by the absence of the fleet. He returned, therefore, with the utmost expedition to Plymouth, and lay at anchor in that harbour.

Meanwhile, all the damages of the Armada were repaired; and the Spaniards with fresh hopes set out again to sea, in prosecution of their enterprize. The fleet consisted of a hundred and thirty vessels, of which near a hundred were galleons, and were of greater size than any ever before used in Europe. It carried on board nineteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five soldiers, eight thousand four hundred and fifty-six mariners, two thousand and eighty-eight gally slaves, and two thousand six hundred and thirty great pieces of brass ordnance. It was victualled for six months; and was attended with twenty lesser ships, called caravals, and ten salves with six oars apiece.

The plan formed by the King of Spain, was, that the Armada should sail to the coast opposite to Dunkirk and Newport; and having chased away all English or Flemish vessels, which might obstruct the passage, (for it was never supposed they could make opposition) should join themselves with the duke of Parma, should thence make sail to the Thames, and having landed the whole Spanish army, thus complete at one blow the entire conquest of England. In prosecution of this scheme, Philip gave orders to the duke of Medina, that, in passing along the channel, he should sail as near the coast of France as he could with safety; that he should by this policy avoid meeting with the English fleet; and keeping in view the main enterprize, should neglect all smaller successes, which might prove an obstacle, or even interpose a delay, to the acquisition of a kingdom. After the Armada was under sail, they took a fisherman, who informed them, that the English admiral had been lately at sea, had heard of the tempest which scattered the Armada, had retired back into Plymouth, and no longer expecting an invasion this season, had laid up his ships, and discharged most of the seamen. From this false intelligence the duke of Medina conceived the great facility of attacking and destroying the English ships in harbour; and he was tempted, by the prospect of so decisive an advantage, to break his orders, and make sail directly for Plymouth: A resolution which proved the safety of England. The Lizard was the first land made by the Armada, about sun-set; and as the Spaniards took it for the Ram-head near Plymouth, they bore out to sea, with an intention of returning next day, and attacking the English navy. They were descried by Fleming a Scottish pyrate, who was roving in these seas, and who immediately set sail, to inform the English admiral of their approach: Another fortunate event, which contributed extremely to the safety of the fleet. Effingham had just time to get out of port, when he saw the Spanish Armada coming full sail towards him, disposed in the form of a crescent, and stretching the distance of seven miles from the extremity of one division to that of the other.

The writers of that age raise their style by a pompous description of this spectacle; the most magnificent that had ever appeared upon the ocean, infusing equal terror and admiration into the minds of all beholders. The lofty masts, the swelling sails, and the towering prows of the Spanish galleons, seem impossible to be justly painted, otherwise than by assuming the colours of poetry; and an eloquent historian of Italy, in
imitation

OF THE INVINCIBLE ARMADA. 267

imitation of Camden, has asserted, that the Armada, though the ships bore every sail, yet advanced with a slow motion; as if the ocean groaned with supporting, and the winds were tired with impelling, so enormous a weight. The truth, however, is, the largest of the Spanish vessels would scarcely pass for third rates in the present navy of England; yet were they so ill framed, or so ill governed, that they were quite unwieldy, and could not sail upon a wind, nor tack on an occasion, nor be managed in stormy weather by the seamen. Neither the mechanics of ship-building, nor the experience of mariners, had attained so great perfection as could serve for the security and government of such bulky vessels; and the English, who had already had experience how unserviceable they commonly were, beheld without dismay their tremendous appearance.

Effingham gave orders, not to come to close fight with the Spaniards; where the size of the ships he suspected, and the numbers of the soldiers, would be a disadvantage to the English; but to cannonade them at a distance, and to wait the opportunity, which winds, currents, or various accidents must afford him, of intercepting some scattered vessels of the enemy. Nor was it long before the event answered expectation. A great ship of Biscay, on board of which was a considerable part of the Spanish money, was set on fire by accident; and while all hands were employed in extinguishing it, she fell behind the rest of the Armada: The great galleon of Andalusia was detained by the springing of her mast: And both these vessels were taken, after some resistance, by Sir Francis Drake. As the Armada advanced up the channel, the English hung upon its rear, and still invested it with skirmishes. Each trial abated the confidence of the Spaniards, and added courage to the English; and the latter soon found, that even in close fight the size of the Spanish ships was no advantage to them. Their bulk exposed them the more to the fire of the enemy; while their cannon, placed too high, shot over the heads of the English. The alarm having now reached the coast of England, the nobility and gentry hastened out with their vessels from every harbour, and reinforced the admiral. The earls of Oxford, Northumberland, and Cumberland, Sir Thomas Cecil, Sir Robert Cecil, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Thomas Vavasor, Sir Thomas Gerrard, Sir Charles Blount, with many others, distinguished themselves by this generous and disinterested service of their country. The English fleet, after the conjunction of these ships amounted to an hundred and forty sail. The

The Armada had now reached Calais, and cast anchor before that place; in expectation, that the duke of Parma, who had got intelligence of their approach, would put to sea, and join his forces to them. The English admiral practised here a successful stratagem upon the Spaniards. He took eight of his smaller ships, and filling them with all combustible materials, sent them, one after another, into the midst of the enemy. The Spaniards fancied, that they were fireships of the same contrivance with a famous vessel, which had lately done so much execution in the Shelde near Antwerp; and they immediately cut their cables, and took to flight with the greatest disorder and precipitation. The English fell upon them next morning, while in confusion; and besides doing great damage to other ships, they took or destroyed about twelve of the enemy.

By this time, it was become apparent, that the intention, for which these preparations were made by the Spaniards, was entirely frustrated. The vessels, provided by the duke of Parma, were made for transporting soldiers not for fighting; and that general, when urged to leave the harbour, positively refused to expose his flourishing army to such apparent hazard, as it must incur; while the English, not only were able to keep the sea, but seemed even to triumph over their enemy. The Spanish admiral found, in many rencounters, that while he lost so considerable a part of his own navy, he had destroyed only one small vessel of the English; and he foresaw, that, by continuing so unequal a combat, he must draw inevitable destruction on all the remainder. He prepared therefore to return homewards; but as the winds were contrary to his passage through the channel, he resolved to sail northwards, and making the tour of the island reach the Spanish harbours by the ocean. The English fleet followed him during some time; and had not their ammunition fallen short, by the negligence of the officers in supplying them, they had obliged the whole Armada to surrender at discretion. The duke of Medina had once taken that resolution; but was diverted from it by the advice of his confessor. This conclusion of the enterprize would have been more glorious to the English; but the event proved equally fatal to the Spaniards. A violent tempest overtook the Armada after it passed the Orkneys: The ships had already lost their anchors, and were obliged to keep to sea: The mariners, unaccustomed to such hardships, and not able to govern such unwieldy vessels, yielded to the fury of the storm, and allowed
their

their ships to drive either on the western isles of Scotland, or on the coast of Ireland, where they were miserably wrecked. Not a half of the navy returned to Spain; and the seamen, as well as soldiers, who remained, were so overcome with hardships and fatigue, and so dispirited by their discomfiture, that they filled all Spain with accounts of the desperate valour of the English, and of the tempestuous violence of that ocean which surrounds them.

Such was the miserable and dishonourable conclusion of an enterprize, which had been preparing for three years, which had exhausted the revenue and force of Spain, and which had long filled all Europe with anxiety or expectation. Philip, who was a slave to his ambition, but had an entire command over his countenance, no sooner heard of the mortifying event, which blasted all his hopes, than he fell on his knees, and rendering thanks for that gracious dispensation of providence, expressed his joy, that the calamity was not greater. The Spanish priests, who had so often blest this holy crusade, and foretold its infallible success, were somewhat at a loss to account for the victory gained over the catholic monarch by excommunicated heretics and an execrable usurper: But they at last discovered, that all the calamities of the Spaniards had proceeded from their allowing the infidel Moors to live among them.

CAPT. LEMUEL GULLIVER'S VOYAGE TO LILIPUT. *)

We set sail from *Bristol*, May 4th, 1699, and our voyage at first was very prosperous.

It would not be proper, for some reasons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in those seas: let it suffice to inform him, that, in our passage from thence to the *East-Indies*, we were driven by a violent storm to the north-west of *Van Diemen's land*. By an observation we found ourselves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes south. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour, and ill food; the rest were in a very weak condition. On the fifth of *November*, which was the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather being very hazy, the seamen spied a rock within half a cable's length of the ship; but the wind was

*) The Works of Dr. Jonathan Swift, Lond. 1765. Vol. 12. 12.

was so strong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the sea, made a shift to get clear of the ship and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already spent with labour while we were in the ship. We therefore trusted ourselves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overset by a sudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of those who escaped on the rock, or were left in the vessel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all lost. For my own part, I swam as fortune directed me, and was pushed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: but when I was almost gone, and able to struggle no longer, I found myself within my depth; and by this time the storm was much abated. The declivity was so small, that I walked near a mile before I got to the shore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not discover any signs of houses or inhabitants; at least I was in so weak a condition, that I did not observe them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ship, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft, where I slept sounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was just daylight. I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir: for as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs wery strongly fastened on each side to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures a cross my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards, the sun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confused noise about me, but in the posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breast came almost up to my chin; when bending my eyes downward as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first.

I was

I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides upon the ground. However, they soon returned, and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a shrill but distinct voice, *hekinah degul*: the others repeated the same words several times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneasiness; at length, struggling to get loose, I had the fortune to break the strings, and wrench out the pegs that fastened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I discovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the same time with a violent pull, which gave me excessive pain, I a little loosened the strings that tied down my hair on the left side, so that I was just able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran of a second time, before I could seize them; whereupon there was a great shout in a very shrill accent, and after it ceased, I heard one of them cry aloud, *tolgo phonac*; when in an instant I felt above an hundred arrows discharged on my left hand, which pricked me like so many needles; and besides, they shot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in *Europe*, where of many, I suppose, fell on my body, (though I felt them not) and some on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this shower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain, and then striving again to get loose, they discharged another volley larger than the first, and some of them attempted with spears to stick me in the sides; but by good luck I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the most prudent method to lie still, and my design was to continue so till night, when, my left hand being already loose, I could easily free myself: and as for the inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a match for the greatest army they could bring against me, if they were all of the same size with him, that I saw. But fortune disposed otherways of me. When the people observed I was quiet, they discharged no more arrows: but, by the noise I heard, I knew their number increased; and about four yards from me, over-against my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and strings would permit me, I saw a stage
erected

erected about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, made me a long speech, whereof I understood not one syllable. But I should have mentioned, that before the principal person began his oration, he cried out three times, *langro dehul san*; (these words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me). Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the strings that fastened the left side of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the person and gesture of him that was to speak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and seemed to be somewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two stood one on each side to support him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could observe many periods of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness. I answered in a few words, but in the most submissive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the sun, as calling him for a witness; and being almost famished with hunger, having not eaten a morsel for some hours before I left the ship, I found the demands of nature so strong upon me, that I could not forbear shewing my impatience (perhaps against the strict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to signify that I wanted food. The *hurgo* (for so they call a great lord, as I afterwards learnt) understood me very well. He descended from the stage, and commanded that several ladders should be applied to my sides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat, which had been provided and sent thither by the king's orders, upon the first intelligence he received of me. I observed there was the flesh of several animals, but could not distinguish them by the taste. There were shoulders, legs, and loins, shaped like those of mutton, and very well dressed, but smaller than the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time about the bigness of musket bullets. They supplied me as fast as they could, shewing a thousand marks of wonder and astonishment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another sign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating, that a small quantity would not suffice me, and being a most

in-

ingenious people, they flung up with great dexterity one of their largest hogheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and tasted like a small wine of *Burgundy*, but much more delicious. They brought me a second hoghead, which I drank in the same manner, and made signs for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed these wonders, they shouted for joy, and danced upon my breast, repeating several times as they did at first, *hekinah degul*. They made me a sign that I should throw down the two hogheads, but first warning the people below to stand out of the way, crying aloud, *borach mevola*, and when they saw the vessels in the air, there was an universal shout of *hekinah degul*. I confess, I was often tempted, while they were passing backwards and forwards on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach, and dash them against the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worst they could do, and the promise of honour I made them, for so I interpreted my submissive behaviour, soon drove out these imaginations. Besides, I now considered myself as bound by the laws of hospitality to a people, who had treated me with so much expence and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not sufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of these diminutive mortals, who durst venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a creature, as I must appear to them. After some time, when they observed that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a person of high rank from his imperial majesty. His excellency, having mounted on the small of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the signet royal, which he applied close to my eyes, spoke about ten minutes without any signs of anger, but with a kind of determinate resolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile distant, whither it was agreed by his majesty in council that I must be conveyed. I answered in few words, but to no purpose, and made a sign with my hand that was loose, putting it to the other (but over his excellency's head for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and body, to signify that I desired my liberty.

liberty. It appeared that he understood me well enough, for he shook his head by way of disapprobation and held his hand in a posture to shew, that I must be carried as a prisoner. However, he made other signs to let me understand, that I should have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds, but again, when I felt the smart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in blisters; and many of the darts still sticking in them, and observing likewise that the number of my enemies increased, I gave tokens to let them know, that they might do with me what they pleased. Upon this the *hurgo* and his train withdrew with much civility and chearful countenances. Soon after I heard a general shout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *peplom selan*, and I felt great numbers of people on my left side relaxing the cords to such a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to ease myself with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great astonishment of the people, who conjecturing, by my motion, what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that side, to avoid the torrent which fell with such noise and violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a sort of ointment very pleasant to the smell, which in a few minutes removed all the smart of their arrows. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. I slept about eight hours, as I was afterwards assured; and it was no wonder, for the physicians, by the emperor's order, had mingled a sleepy potion in the hogheads of wine.

It seems that, upon the first moment I was discovered sleeping on the ground after my landing, the emperor had early notice of it by an express; and determined in council, that I should be tied in the manner I have related, (which was done in the night while I slept) that plenty of meat and drink should be sent to me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in *Europe* on the like occasion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous; for supposing these people had endeavoured to kill me with their spears and arrows while I was asleep, I should certainly have awaked with

with the first sense of smart, which might so far have roused my rage and strength; as to have enabled me to break the strings wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make resistance, so they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanicks by the countenance and encouragement of the emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince has several machines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largest men of war, whereof some are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these engines three or four hundred yards to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest engine they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven feet long and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The shout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it seems set out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords of the bigness of pack thread were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords by many pulleys fastened on the poles, and thus, in less than three hours, I was raised and flung into the engine, and there tied fast. All this I was told, for, while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep by the force of that soporiferous medicine infused into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the emperor's largest horses, each about four inches and an half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being stopt a while to adjust something that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curiosity to see how I looked when I was asleep; they climbed up into the engine; and advancing very softly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the sharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left nostril, which tickled my nose like a straw, and made me sneeze violently: whereupon they stole off

unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the cause of my awaking so suddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and rested at night with five hundred guards on each side of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to shoot me, if I should offer to stir. The next morning at sun-rise we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noon. The emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us, but his great officers would by no means suffer his majesty to endanger his person by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage stopt, there stood an ancient temple, esteemed to be the largest in the whole kingdom, which, having been polluted some years before by an unnatural murder, was according to the zeal of those people looked upon as prophane, and therefore had been applied to common use, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I should lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almost two feet wide, through which I could easily creep. On each side of the gate was a small window, not above six inches from the ground: into that on the left side the king's smith conveyed fourscore and eleven chains, like those that hang to a lady's watch in *Europe*, and almost as large, which were locked to my left leg with six and thirty padlocks. Over-against this temple, on the other side of the great highway, at twenty feet distance, there was a turret at least five feet high. Here the emperor ascended with many principal lords of his court to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not see them. It was reckoned that above an hundred thousand inhabitants came out of the town upon the same errand; and in spite of my guards, I believe, there could not be fewer than ten thousand at several times, who mounted my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was soon issued to forbid it on pain of death. When the Workmen found it was impossible for me to break loose, they cut all the strings that bound me; whereupon I rose up with as melancholy a disposition as ever I had in my life. But the noise and astonishment of the people at seeing me rise and walk are not to be expressed. The chains, that held my left leg, were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a semicircle; but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

CAPT.

CAPT. GULLIVERS ADVENTURES AT THE COURT OF THE KING OF BROBDIGNAC. *)

It is the custom, that every *Wednesday* (which as I have before observed, is their *Sabbath*) the king and queen, with the royal issue of both sexes, dine together in the apartment of his majesty, to whom I was now become a great favourite; and as these times my little chair and table were placed at his left hand before one of the salt-cellars. This prince took a pleasure in conversing with me, enquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of *Europe*; wherein I gave him the best account I was able. His apprehension was so clear and his judgment so exact, that he made very wise reflections and observations upon all I said. But I confess, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by sea and land, of our schisms in religion, and parties in the state; the prejudices of his education prevailed so far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and stroking me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laughing, asked me, whether I was a *whig* or *tory*? Then turning to his first minister, who waited behind him with a white staff near as tall as the mainmast of the *royal-sovereign*, he observed how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by such diminutive insects as I: and yet, says he, I dare engage, these creatures have their titles and distinction of honour, they contrive little nests and burrows, that they call houses and cities; they make a figure in dress and equipage; they love, they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went several times with indignation to hear our noble country, the mistress of arts and arms, the scourge of *France*, the arbitress of *Europe*, the seat of virtue, piety, honour, and truth, the pride and envy of the world, so contemptuously treated.

But as I was not in a condition to resent injuries, so upon mature thoughts I began to doubt whether I was injured or no. For, after having been accustomed several months to the sight and converse of this people, and observed every object upon which I cast mine eyes to be of proportionable magnitude,

S 3

the

*) Swift's Works Vol. 2.

278 CAPT. GULLIVERS ADVENTURES

the horror I had at first conceived from their bulk and aspect, was so far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of *English* lords and ladies in their finery, and birthday cloaths, acting their several parts in the most courtly manner of strutting, and bowing, and prating; to say the truth, I should have been strongly tempted to laugh as much at them, as the king and his grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear smiling at myself, when the queen used to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glass, by which both our persons appeared before me in full view together; and there could be nothing more ridiculous than the comparison: so that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many degrees below my usual size.

Nothing angered and mortified me so much as the queen's dwarf, who being of the lowest stature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high) became so insolent at seeing a creature so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the queen's anti-chamber, while I was standing on some table talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he seldom failed of a smart word or two upon my littleness; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him brother, challenging him to wrestle, and such repartees as are usual in the mouths of *court pages*. One day, at dinner, this malicious little cubb was so nettled with something I had said to him, that, raising himself upon the frame of her majesty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large silver bowl of cream, and then ran away as fast as he could. I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good swimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for *Glumdalclitch* in that instant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the queen was in such a fright, that she wanted presence of mind to assist me. But my little nurse ran to my relief, and took me out, after I had swallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed; however I received no other damage than the loss of a suit of cloaths, which was utterly spoiled. The dwarf was soundly whipped, and as a farther punishment forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me: neither was he ever restored to favour: for soon after the queen bestowed him on a lady of high quality, so that I saw him no more, to my very great satis-

satisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremity such a malicious urchin might have carried his resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy trick, which set the queen a laughing, although at the same time she was heartily vexed, and would have immediately cashiered him, if I had not been so generous as to intercede. Her majesty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the dish erect, as it stood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while *Glumdalclitch* was gone to the side-board, mounted the stool that she stood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and squeeing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-bone, above my waist, where I stuck for some time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes seldom get their meat hot, my legs were not scalded, only my stockings and breeches in a sad condition. The dwarf, at my intreaty, had no other punishment than a sound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the queen upon account of my fearfulness; and she used to ask me, whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myself? The occasion was this: the kingdom is much pestered with flies in summer; and these odious insects, each of them as big as a *Dunstable* lark, hardly gave me any rest while I sat at dinner with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would sometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathsome excrement or spawn behind, which to me was very visible, though not to the natives of that country, whose large optics were not so acute as mine in viewing smaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my nose or forehead, where they stung me to the quick, smelling very offensively; and I could easily trace that viscous matter, which, our naturalists tell us, enables those creatures to walk with their feet upwards upon a cieling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable animals, and could not forbear starting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of these insects in his hand, as schoolboys do among us, and let them out suddenly under my nose, on purpose to frighten me, and divert the queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, when *Glumdalclitch* had set me in my box upon a window, as she usually did in fair days to give me air (for I durst not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in *England*) after I had lifted up one of my sashes, and sat down at my table to eat a piece of sweet cake for my breakfast, above twenty wasps, allured by the smell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bag-pipes. Some of them seized my cake, and carried it piece-meal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noise, and putting me in the utmost terror of their stings. However I had the courage to rise and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I dispatched four of them, but the rest got away, and I presently shut my window. These insects were as large as partridges; I took out their stings, found them an inch and a half long, and as sharp as needles.

SOME ACCOUNT OF ENGLAND'S TRADE AND COLONIES. *)

Before *England* had foreign Colonies and Factories, our general Commerce was comparatively inconsiderable. The great bulk of our Exportations consisted of our Woollen Drapery, Lead, and Tin; in the Times, more especially, before *France* had struck into the Woollen Manufacture, and *Holland* but very little; and that *Florence* and *Venice* were chiefly confined to the supplying the Countries within the *Mediterranean* therewith. So that, in effect, we enjoyed almost a Monopoly of that Manufacture for the West and North Parts of *Europe* before the Year 1640; *Spain* and *Portugal* being then almost intirely supplied by us with light Draperies, as well for their home Consumption, as for that of their extensive Colonies; from whence, in Return, we were, in those Days, supplied with the Sugars, Tobacco, Drugs &c. which we now have from our own Plantations. For this Reason, our old commercial Writers are almost wholly taken up with the Importance of our *Wool* and *Woollen Manufactures*, which, with our *Tin*, *Lead*, *Leather*, *Coals*, and some other smal-

(*) A Anderson's Historical and Chronological Deduction of the Origin of Commerce from the earliest accounts to the present Time. Lond. 1764. 2 Vol. fol.

smaller Articles, were all we pretended to call *our* staple Commodities.

With respect to our Importations, *Venice* first, and *Lisbon* next, supplied us with the Merchandize of *East-India &c.* — The *Hanse-Towns* with naval Stores, Copper, Iron, Linen, and even with the best of our Shipping. — *Germany* also, with Linen, Tin-plates, and Hardware, even so low as to *Nails* themselves. — *France* supplied us, in great Abundance, with Silks, Linen, Wines, Brandies, Paper, Toys, and Frippery. How happy then is the Change in our National Circumstances, since we have had *American* Plantations, the Demand from whence, of all Kinds of Merchandize, having so greatly excited our People at home to the Improvement and Increase of our old Manufactures, and to the Introduction of new ones? Whereby, and likewise by the vast Increase of the Productions of our *American* Plantations, we have got rid, for the most Part, (though not as yet entirely) of a precarious Dependence on other Nations, for what we now either manufacture much better at home, or else are supplied with from our own Plantations and foreign Settlements, in exchange for our native Commodities, instead of our formerly sending out much of our Treasure for the same? How greatly are our Customs thereby increased, from 36,000 *l.* at Queen *Elizabeth's* Death, to 400,000 *l.* at the Restoration of King *Charles II.*; and to four times this last Sum at the present Time? How vastly is our great Metropolis increased, from little above 200,000 Souls, with all its Suburbs on both Sides the *Thames*, at the said Queen's Death, to about (or very near) four times as many at present?

Our *American* Plantations, therefore, by the vast Increase of their People, and of the Commodities by them raised for our own Use, for our Manufactures and Re-exportations, and more especially by the perpetually increasing Demands from thence of all kinds of our Manufactures, Productions, &c. in immense Quantities; (whereby probably about or near a Million of our People are employed at home, many Hundreds of stout Ships, and many Thousands of Mariners, constantly employed; much Wealth, and considerable Quantities of Bullion of both Gold and Silver, continually brought home to us) do undoubtedly, at present more than ever, demand of us the *first* and *highest* Regard, preferably to any other commercial Consideration whatever: More especially, if we do but duly consider, that, by the additional Wealth, Power,

Territory, and Influence thereby now thrown into our Scale, we are enabled to preserve our dearest Independency with regard to the other Potentates of *Europe*; some of whom are, in little more than one Century past, so increased in Power and Territory, as to have long since given alarming Apprehensions to all their Neighbours.

The Commerce we now carry on with our said *American* Plantations is so vast, as probably already to equal in Quantity, and to exceed in Profit, all the other Commerce we have with the rest of the World. And it being incessantly increasing, in proportion to the Increase of white People there, they are perpetually increasing their useful Productions, cultivating new Plantations, and successfully attempting new Materials for Commerce; as *Silk, Indico, Coffee, Potash, Drugs* for Physic, Dyers, and Painters, &c. more especially in our fine Continents-Colonies of *Carolina* and *Georgia*, which, in the Opinion of very knowing Persons, are capable, with proper Industry, of raising the finest Productions of all the three Divisions of the *old* World, as well as of that of the *new* one. In Colonel *John Parry's* Memorial to the Duke of *Newcastle*, then Secretary of State, in the Reign of King *George I.* and which he afterward printed, *Anno 1724*, upon his Application for his carrying into *Carolina* a Colony of *Protestant Switzers*; he lays it down as a *Postulatum*, "That
 "there is a certain Latitude on our Globe, so happily tempered between the Extremes of Heat and Cold, as to be
 "more peculiarly adapted than any other for all the said rich
 "productions: and he seems, with Judgment, to have fixed
 "on the Latitude of 33 Degrees, (whether *South* or *North*)
 "being that of *Carolina*, as the identical one for that peculiar
 "Character., That sensible Man, (a Native of *Switzerland*) whom the Author of this Work once conversed with, had before printed at *London* a Memorial, which he had formerly presented to the Directors of the *Dutch East-India* Company, in the Year 1718, on his Return from their Service in *India*; wherein he endeavoured to persuade them to plant new colonies on the Coast of *Caffres*, (near their Colony at the *Cape of Good Hope*) and also on the Land of *Nuyts*, on the Southern hitherto unplanted Continent called *New-Holland*, not far South from their Island of *Java*, both lying near the said Latitude of 33 Degrees: "A Latitude,, (says he) "most fit
 "for *Vines*, and other excellent *Fruits and Plants*; whereby
 "the Company would be enabled to supply their *East-India*
 "Settle-

"Settlements with Wines, Fruits, Oils, and Corn, which
 "now cost them so great an Expence bought of and from the
 "Europeans.," But in this Memorial, *Purry*, it seems,
 touched on some Points which the Company judged *improper*
to be published, and constrained him to leave *Holland*. His
 next application was to the *French* Ministry, by adapting his
 Scheme to some of the foreign Settlements of *France*. But
 their Reference to the *French Academy of Sciences* produced
 the following cold Answer, viz. *That they could not judge of*
Countries which they had never seen! Last of all, he presented
 the above-named Memorial, *Anno 1721*; wherein he sets
 forth, from indisputable Facts: "That the indentical Latitude
 "of *South Carolina*, (which then comprehended the Country
 "since named *Georgia*) or that of 33 Degrees, either *North*
 "or *South* of the Equator, will ever be found to be pro-
 "ductive of the richest *Plants, Fruits, Drugs, &c.* of any
 "Part whatever on the terraqueous Globe, all other Things
 "being supposed equal, *i. e.* provided there be no natural
 "Impediments, such as Rocks, Marshes, sandy Desarts, &c.
 "A Latitude,," (says he) "which, by the Moderation of its
 "Heat, and Temperature of its Air, sheds Fruitfulness on
 "the Earth, and Happiness on Mankind in general; who,
 "the farther they are distant from this Degree, are only so
 "much the less happy: And that the nearer any Country is
 "to that Latitude, the more happy is their Situation. Thus
 "*Barbary, Egypt, Syria, Persia, India, China, Japan,*
 "and, in short, all other Countries, are found to excel, in
 "proportion, the nearer they approach to this Degree of Lati-
 "tude. Upon this Principle, *Carolina* and *New-Mexico* on
 "the North Side of the Equator, as *Chili* and *Rio de la Plata*
 "on its South Side, must be Countries preferable to any in
 "all *America*, as being all situated about or near the said 33d
 "Degree. It is,," (continued he) "a Consequence that never
 "fails. Thus *Andalusia* is the best of all the Provinces of
 "*Spain*, as coming nearer to our 33d Degree: So are, for
 "the same Reason, *Languedoc* and *Provence* the best in *France*,
 "and *Naples* and *Sicily* of all the *Italian* Dominions.," He next
 shews: "That *Carolina* is proper for producing the best *Silk*
 "in the World, as being fitter for the breeding of Silk-worms,
 "than either *France, Spain, or Italy*; as it is also for *Wines,*
 "*Ooils, Cotton, Indico, Wax, Fruits, Cocoa-nuts, Timber,*
 "*Tar, Flax, Hemp, Rice, Wheat, &c.*," The Prefacer of
 the *English* Translation of the said Memorial alledges, that our
 great Sir *Isaac Newton* did, in general, agree to the Principles
 of this same opinion.

What

What he then foretold concerning *Silk* and *Indico*, has since been verified abundantly already in *Carolina*; as have also been the excellent Productions of the Wines and Fruits since raised on the Coast of *Caffres*, under the *Dutch* Government of the *Cape of Good Hope*. *Rice* was a little before begun to be raised in *Carolina*; and has since been so far increased as to have produced, in some Years, from 80,000 to 104,000 Barrels for Exportation; in so much, that it grew to be more than could be vended to Advantage; which, it seems, was one Occasion of their falling into *Indico*, now also brought to a great Degree of Perfection. The Production of *Rice* at *Carolina* was as accidental as was that of *Sugar* long before at *Barbadoes*, (of which in its Place) and therefore deserves likewise to be commemorated for the Encouragement of such-like future Attempts. It seems, the Captain of a Ship from *Madagascar*, touching at *Carolina*, in the Reign of the late Queen *Anne*, left, with a Planter there, a small Bag, not exceeding a Peck of Seed-Rice, by way of Experiment: And, soon after, Mr. *Du Bois*, then Treasurer of our *East-India* Company, sent thither from hence, for the like Experiment, a Bag of another Sort of Seed-Rice: And, after several Trials of both those Sorts, the Planters at length found out the true Method of cultivating and dressing them to perfection. Their *Silk* (though more slowly) increases in Quantity every Year, and is in Quality, on the strictest Examination, found to be excellent. Their *Pitch* and *Tar* are not hitherto quite so good as what it brought from *Sweden*; yet, by a farther Continuance of the Bounties thereon, and on some other new Productions, they may probably be brought to Perfection in a reasonable Time.

The said Colonel *Purry*, some Years after, settled, with a Colony of his Country-people, on the River *Savannah*, which parts *Carolina* from *Georgia*; where he has perpetuated his Name, by founding the Town of *Purrysburg*, in which the Posterity of those *Protestant Switzers* remain at this Time.

Our Planters in those and our other Colonies are said to be diligent in procuring and transplanting, from *Italy*, *Barbary*, *Syria*, *Arabia*, *Persia*, and other Eastern Parts, many Kinds of new Seeds, Plants, and Roots: In *Carolina* and *Virginia*, they have found several excellent originally-native Productions, such as Snake-root, Sassafras, and, of late Years, also the famous Root called *Genseng*, so highly celebrated in *China*.

In *Carolina*, too, they have now got Plenty of *Lemons* and *Oranges*, which are said to surpass any growing in *Europe*. And the late judicious Mr. *Joshua Gee*, in his small but excellent Treatise, published *Anno 1729*, (intituled, *The Trade and Navigation of Great Britain considered*,) assures us, that the *Hemp* of *Virginia* has, upon Trial, been found equal, in Goodness and Strength, to that of *Ancona* in *Italy*, allowed to exceed any other *Hemp* in *Europe*.

The fine Provinces of *Virginia* and *Maryland* produce the best Tobacco in the World for general Use, of which, it is said, above the Value of 600,000 *l. Sterling* is yearly brought to *Europe*, in near 300 Sail of our own Shipping, bringing in a Revenue of about or near 200,000 *l.* by the Customs on it. About three Fourths of which Tobacco is annually re-exported to other *European* Countries. *Iron*, also, is now brought thence in considerable Quantities; whereby, in Time, we may save above 200,000 *l.* in ready Money annually sent to *Sweden*, for what we may have from our own Fellow-Subjects, in Exchange for British Manufactures, which *Sweden* neither will nor can take of us. For, since we have not Cord-wood in *England*, either at a reasonable Price, or in a sufficient Quantity, for refining (as it is said) above one third Part of the *Iron* we use, and as *Sweden* may some time or other take the like unreasonable Advantage of us in this Commodity, as they did in the Article of *Tar*, *Anno 1703*, it is therefore surely the highest Wisdom, to have all such Commodities intirely from our own Colonies. "It is almost impossible,, (says the said ingenious Mr. *Gee*) "to find out five "such necessary Articles as *Hemp*, *Flax*, *Silk*, *Iron* and "*Potash*, for carrying on the Manufactures of this Kingdom, "that can be done with so little Trouble. — Money ought "to be advanced by the Nation, for the Propagation of such "useful Materials. — And, if they come to be raised in sufficient Quantities in our Plantations, there needs not to be "one idle Person in *Great Britain* and *Ireland*; though, it is "said, there is now near one Million idle, of one Sort or "other. — Not one fourth Part,, (continues he) "of the "Product of our Plantations redounds on the Profit of the "Planters themselves: For, out of all that comes hither, "they only carry back Cloathing and other Accommodations "for their Families, all of the Manufacture or Merchandize "of this Kingdom; and, if they have any Thing to spare, it "is laid up here; and their Children are sent hither for "Education. — There are very few trading or manufacturing "Towns

“Towns in the Kingdom, but have some Dependence on the
 “Plantation - trade., — Mr. Gee also thought: “That *Tea*,
 “*Coffee*, and *Chochineal* might be produced in *Carolina*;; (see
 the Premiums of the truly honourably Society for the encour-
 aging of Arts, Manufactures, and Commerce, *Annis*
 1759, 1760, and 1761,) “which with wild Olive-trees,
 “*Rosin*, *Turpentine*, *Iron-stone*, *Boards*, *Lumper*, *Pipe-*
 “*staves*, *Masts*, *Yards*, *Hides*, *Tallow*, *Furs*, *Beef*, *Pork*,
 “*Butter*, *Cheese*, *Buck-wheat*, *Oats*, *Barley*, and the
 “other before-named Productions of our several Colonies,
 “is such a Catalogue of most excellent and useful Merchandize
 “as cannot easily be matched in any *cultivated* Country of
 “*Christendom*. By all which Means together, we might save
 “above two Millions annually, which we now pay to foreign
 “Nations, and to our own (unemployed) Poor.,”

Our *American* Fellow-subjects are at length become an im-
 mense Market for our Woollen, Silk, Linen, and Metallic
 Manufactures; — for Household-furniture of all Sorts, Ap-
 parel, Plate, Pictures, Jewels, Books, Armory, Medicines,
 some Materials for Building, Toys, and other Curiosities.

All which Benefits are greatly enhanced to us, by this most
 important Consideration, *viz.* That the Trade with them is
 not like those carried on with foreign Nations, which undoubt-
 edly may, from various Causes, be utterly lost or quite diverted:
 But our said Fellow-subjects of *America* do not only look
 upon *Britain* as their Mother-country, but are moreover
 absolutely restrained by Law from admitting the Ships of
 foreign Nations into their Ports, (Stress of Weather excepted)
 and also from taking off any foreign Product or Manufactures;
 some few stipulated and limited Cases excepted.

The sagacious Sir *Josiah Child*, many Years since, ob-
 served, that every white Man in our said Colonies finds Em-
 ployment for four times as many at home. Now, supposing
 that, since his Time, there may be 250,000 white Men in
 all our Colonies, (exclusive of Women and Children, and
 also of Negro-Slaves, and including about 12,000 Sailors,
 employed as well in their own Fisheries as in the coasting
 Trade, and in that also between the Continent and Island-
 Colonies, in 2000 Vessels of their own, great and small) then
 is Employment given to no fewer than One Million of our own
 People at home. And, as all our Commerce with *America*,
 (including the *Negro-Trade*) may probably employ 1200 Sail
 more of our own *British* Shipping, and 20,000 Sailors, it is
 easy to conceive how vastly profitable our said Plantations are

to us in every View; whether by setting on Work such immense Numbers of our Manufacturers and Artificers of all Kinds, or of Employment of our Sailors, Ship-builders, and all the Trades depending thereon. How tenacious, then, ought we ever to be for the Preservation of every Foot of Ground of such invaluable Possessions? Yet how supine and negligent have we too often formerly been in asserting and supporting our just Claims in that Part of the World? Did not the late Captain *Thomas Coram*, (though a plain Man) in the Year 1735, in a Memorial and Petition to the Privy-Council, clearly (though in his blunt Manner) represent the then unsettled and very hazardous Condition of *Nova Scotia*, and its imminent Danger from the *French*? which, however, was disregarded, till after the Peace of *Aix la Chapelle*, when his Plan was pursued; by which Delay, our Enemies had so many more Years of Leisure to make farther Encroachments on a Province, since universally allowed to be *the important Key of all North America*, not by its Fertility, but Situation; and how much Blood and Treasure has that fatal Neglect since cost us!

Had not a Number of private Gentlemen, in the Year 1732, (joined by some noble Persons) most disinterestedly undertaken to ascertain and set out the just South Boundaries of *Carolina*, by soliciting a Charter for appointing them Trustees for planting the new Colony of *Georgia*, on the South Extremity of that Province; who can say, (or rather who can doubt) whether either *Spain* from *Florida* or *France* from *Mississippi*, might not, before this Time, have planted and fortified where at present the *British* Ensigns are displayed.

How watchful ought we also to be of our island of *Newfoundland*? For, although, through its natural and incurable Sterility, it is not like ever to be rendered considerably *merely* as a Plantation; yet, for the Sake of its good Ports, and of our great Fishery on its Banks, valued at 300,000 *l. Sterling*, added annually to the national Balance or Stock in our Favour, it is of very great and universally-acknowledged Importance to us.

The same might have been said of the vast Countries within the Streight and Bay of *Hudson*, before we were possessed of *Canada*, where, although (for the like Reason) Plantations may probably never take place, it is nevertheless undoubtedly our solid Interest, notwithstanding our now stipulated Possessions of *Canada*, the best Part of *Louisiana*, and all the Country

Country of *Florida*, to protect our Company's Forts, and their Trade and Boundaries; whither, too, in the Opinion of some intelligent People, a more extensive Commerce with the Savages might be carried on with our coarser Woollen, Metallic, and Linen Manufactures, &c. in exchange for their *Furs, Peltry, Bed-feathers, Whale-bone, and Oil*; and that possibly thrice the present Company's capital Stock of little more than 100,000 *l.* might be thereby employed, and perhaps four times the Number of Ships now annually sent thither, (being at most but four Ships *hitherto*;) were another Company to make up a proportionable Capital, with the Sanction of an Act of Parliament, and a Royal Charter, which, doubtless, his Majesty, for the Benefit of Commerce, would be graciously pleased to grant: For the present *Hudson's-Bay* Company is not an exclusive one. Yet as this Company's Forts (such as they are) were erected at their *own* Expence, they have an undoubted Right to exclude all others from taking the Benefit of *their* Protection, without their Leave first obtained: Wherefore, such proposed new Company might erect Forts of their own, in other Parts of the widely-extended Countries round that vast Bay, and might trade with the Savages thereof, without interfering with the present Company; or else might be enabled, for a valuable Consideration, to purchase, and take under its Management, all the present Company's Forts, and also to erect additional ones in other Parts; which by a small Duty on that Commerce, might well be supported, for all his Majesty's Subjects freely to traffick in that Bay, and up into the adjoining inland Parts; *private* or *separate* Traders being universally known to make more Pains, and to manage more frugally, than Companies can or will ever be able to do!

Such separate Traders, too, in trading far up into the Country Westward, might possibly be more likely to find the so much and so long sought-for *North-west* Passage to *China* and *Japan*, that the Company is ever like to do. But of that supposed Passage more will be said in its historical Places. Yet we may here note, that our late kind Neighbours the *French* of *Canada* have formerly encroached on our undoubted Boundaries, by advancing their Frontier-Forts too near to ours on the South Boundaries of the *Hudson's-Bay* Countries, contrary to the Limits settled (though too carelessly) in consequence of the Treaty of *Utrecht*; which Boundaries, it is to be hoped, there will not now be any more Occasion exactly to ascertain.

The

The *Bermudas* or *Sommers Isles*, are some of our earliest Possessions in the *Western Seas*, far removed from any Continent or Island: They scarcely contain above 20,000 Acres of good Land, now almost worn out; which maintains about 5000 white People, and some Negroes. They have little or nothing of their own Product to export, excepting their fine and strong Cedar-wood, of which they build good Brigantines and light Sloops, to be employed between *North America* and our Sugar-Islands; to both which Countries they are certainly useful; though in other Respects of but small advantage to their Mother-Country, any farther than our supplying them with what Manufactures, &c. they want, which so far is profitable to us, as we take little or nothing from them but what they pick up among our *Sugar Islands*. Yet as it would be very dangerous to *Britain* for any other Nation to possess them, it is therefore doubtless our Interest to protect them, and to grant them any reasonable Encouragement.

Britain claims all the *Bahama Isles*, said by some to be 500 in Number, though many of them are no other than mere Rocks; and, although others of them be large and fruitful, yet they are almost all uninhabited by us, except the Isle of *Providence*, where we have two Forts, which our Nation finds their Account in supporting, as they prove a Curb to Pyrates in time of Peace, and commodious in time of War, on account of Prizes brought in thither. It has, however, very little of Product for Exportation, except some *Ambergris*, certain fine Timbers, Oranges, and some other Fruits, for the Use of our Continent Colonies. And, to say the Truth, its greatest Value to us is its Situation, and that it would be dangerous to be in any other Nation's Hands.

We cannot quite leave the Subject of our Continent-Colonies in *America*, without making some farther Observations of their Benefits and Importance to the *British Empire*. The newly-replanted Colony of *Nova Scotia's* great Importance consists: Ist, In its being a Barrier to *New-England*, by its happy Situation; it is now well understood to be not only a Bridle against *Canada*, (if ever that should again become *French*) but may also in effect be said to be a Curb on all other Nations sailing in those Seas. II^{dly}, It is also very happily situated for the Fishery. III^{dly}, It is extremely happy for us, that it is so well stocked with Timber, Masts, &c. for the Use of the Royal Navy, more especially as it becomes
T every

every Year more difficult to be supplied therewith from elsewhere.

The four Provinces of *New-England*, more especially those of the *Massachusetts-Bay* and *Connecticut*, are of great Benefit to their Mother-Country, by their hitherto supplying Masts, Yards, &c. for the Royal Dock-yards and Timber for the building of many good Merchant-Ships.

New-York, *Pennsylvania*, and *New-Jersey* may be said to be long since become indispensably necessary to the very Existence of our Sugar-Colonies, by the supplying of our said Islands with salted Flesh and Fish, *Flour*, *Biscuit*, *Pease*, and *Indian Corn*, and House-Timber, and with Horses for their Sugar-Mills, and also Pipe-staves, Lumber, &c. for that End. For all which, the Islanders pay them in Sugar, Molasses, Rum, and *Spanish* Coin; with which, again, those Continent Colonies pay *Great Britain* and *Ireland* for every Thing they want from *us*, and with what they get from the *French*, *Dutch*, and *Spanish* Colonies, as also with what they get from *Portugal*, *Spain*, *Italy*, (and sometimes as far as from the *Levant*) whom they supply (in their own Shipping) with Fish caught in the *American* Seas, and occasionally likewise with their Corn.

The two first named Provinces, indeed, are properly *Corn* Colonies, and have already testified the great Benefit they may be of, by having sometimes seasonably supplied *Britain* itself with Corn in a Scarcity; and, by their future Increase, may hereafter be much more so. Which happy Circumstance is hitherto *peculiar to us*; there being as yet no other *European* Nation whatever that has Colonies in *America* capable of supplying their Mother-Country with the Corn, and other excellent Provisions, which *ours*, in case of Necessity, can do, as well as with naval Stores; with which last-named great Article, it is *now* earnestly to be hoped, we shall, by all possible Means, endeavour to supply ourselves *intirely* from them, and our vast *new* Acquisitions on the same Continent of *America*, and thereby save the immense Sums hitherto paid to the *Danes*, *Swedes*, *Poles* and *Russians*.

What has been already noted of the Product and great Benefits of the Provinces of *Virginia* and *Maryland* is sufficient to illustrate their vast Importance; and, particularly, the very great Employment they give to our Ships, Mariners, and Manufacturers, and to almost all other Branches of Business.

Since

Since seven undivided Eighth Parts of *North and South Carolina* were made *regal* Governments, (*Anno* 1728) they have prospered exceedingly; more especially *South Carolina*; for whose Exports, so long ago as the Year 1753, we are indebted to a Treatise, in two Octavo Volumes, on our *American Colonies*, published *Anno* 1757, as follows, *viz.*

Rice	—	—	104,682	Barrels.
Pitch	—	—	5,869	—
Tar	—	—	2,943	—
Turpentine	—	—	759	—
Beef	—	—	416	—
Pork	—	—	1,560	—
Deer-Skins	—	—	460	Hogheads.
Tanned Leather	—	—	4,196	Hides.
Hides in the Hair	—	—	1,200	—
Indian Corn	—	—	16,428	Bushels.
Pease	—	—	9,112	—
Shingles	—	—	1,114,000	in Number.
Cask-Staves	—	—	206,000	—
Lumber	—	—	395,000	Feet.
Indico (<i>Anno</i> 1753)	—	—	210,924	lb. Weight.
Ditto, (<i>Anno</i> 1756) about	—	—	500,000	—

Beside a great Number of Live Cattle and Horses; also Cedar-Wood, Cypress, Walnut-Plank, Bees-Wax, Myrtle, some Raw Silk, and Cotton.

North Carolina exported, *Anno* 1753.

Tar	—	—	61,525	Barrels.
Pitch	—	—	12,55	—
Turpentine	—	—	10,429	—
Indian Corn	—	—	61,580	Bushels.
Pease, about	—	—	10,000	—
Pork, and Beef	—	—	3,300	Barrels.
Tobacco, about	—	—	100	Hogheads.
Shingles	—	—	2,500,000	in Number.
Lumber	—	—	2,000,647	Feet.
Deer Skins, about	—	—	30,000	—
Tanned Leather, about	—	—	1,000	Cwt.

Beside much Wheat, Rice, Bread, Potatoes, Wax, Tallow-Candles, Bacon, Timber, some Cotton, Indico, and Furs.

Lastly, *Georgia*, though still but thinly inhabited, begins to raise some Rice, Indico and Raw Silk, and to export some Corn and Lumber to the *West Indies*. They have also some

Trade with the *Indians* for Peltry: All which will naturally increase with the Increase of their Planters. These are very comfortable Accounts for our Nation, even at present, and afford a most promising Prospect for future Generations.

With respect to our *West-India*, or *Sugar Isles*, notwithstanding the small Number of their white People, compared to those in our Continent Colonies, we must admit them to be extremely beneficial to *us*, not only as having from *us* alone every Kind of Manufacture, &c. which they and their much more numerous *Negroes* need, but likewise on account of the vast Quantity of the very rich Returns they make *us* in Sugars, Rum, Molasses, Cotton, Ginger, Pimento, Coffee, Drugs of sundry Kinds, and Mahogany-Timber; thereby greatly augmenting his Majesty's Customs, and employing great Numbers of our Ships, Mariners, Manufacturers, &c.

Some have made the annual Value of all the said imported Sugars, &c. from those Isles, to amount to no less than 1,300,000 *l.* Sterling; and that (till the *French* supplanted us in the Re-exportation of our Sugars) we annually re-exported one third Part thereof. But the Exactness of this Computation cannot be absolutely depended on.

Since the Use of *Tea*, *Coffee*, *Chocolate* and *Punch*, and that Made-Wines (or Sweets) have become so general almost all over *Europe*, the Consumption of Sugar has so greatly increased, that it is at this Day one of the greatest mercantile Articles in Commerce. Sugar has been in great Estimation in *Europe*, even long before *America* was discovered, though in old Times much scarcer and dearer than at present. As far as appears, none of it was found, or at least known, in *America*, till transplanted thither by the *Europeans*. Its Origin was from the inland Continent of *Asia*, very probably as far east as *China*, where it still greatly abounds. It was from that Continent first transplanted to *Cyprus*, and thence (according to various Authors) into *Sicily*, where no Footsteps of it now remain; thence it was transplanted to the *Madeira* and *Canary Isles*, and from the latter, by *Portugal*, into *Brasil*: Though others think, that the *Portuguese*, (before they discovered, or at least planted in *Brasil*) being in Possession of the Coast of *Angola* in *Africa*, where the Sugar Cane was found spontaneously to grow, first transplanted it from *Angola* to *Brasil*. From *Brasil* it was transplanted (as we shall see) first to our Isle of *Barbadoes*, and thence to our other

other *West-India* Isles, as from *Brasil* also it was carried to the *Spanish West-India* Isles, and also to the *Spanish* Dominions in *Mexico*, *Peru* and *Chili*; and lastly, to the *French*, *Dutch* and *Danish* Colonies. More of the History and Transplantations of this most universal Merchandize will be found in the Progress of our Work.

Some think, that all our annual Exports to *America* do amount to above a Million in Value; which may be probable enough, if what Dr. *William Clark* of *Boston* in *New-England* affirms be true, in his judicious *Observations on the Conduct of the French, and their Incroachments on our American Colonies*, (*Boston* printed, *London* reprinted, Anno 1755) viz. "That our annual Exports to *New-England* alone, amount to 400,000 *l.* Sterling. — And that near Half the Shipping of *Great Britain* is employed in the Commerce carried on with her *American* Plantations: Which Trade alone (he justly adds) will, in Time, employ a much greater Quantity of Shipping than all the present Shipping of *Britain*. Beside, that this Trade will enable her with greater Advantage to extend her Commerce with other Countries.,, Our annual Imports from all our *American* Plantations are conjectured to amount to near thrice the Value of our said Exports, which (contrary to the Nature of our Imports from foreign Nations) constitutes a *real Balance* in our Favour at Home, of probably near two Millions *Sterling* yearly; and our great Re-exportations of our Plantation Goods to foreign Parts, viz. of Tobacco, Rice, Sugar, Peltry, &c. is one very great (if not the greatest) Means of bringing the general annual Balance of Trade to be so much in our Favour.

For a considerable Time after our first planting in *America*, the Undertakers at Home were much discouraged, being great Losers by their yearly Embarkations thither, as appears by the Histories of *Virginia*, *Barbadoes*, *Bermudas*, &c. which were indeed, for a long Time, mere unprofitable Drains of our People and Substance, until, by patience and Perseverance, they had cleared and planted those Countries, when they gradually became, as above, a real and great Benefit, and the Means of employing, increasing and enriching their Fellow-subjects at home! Inasmuch, that, if for our Sins, any great Calamity should befall us at Home, we may then bless God that we have another vastly more extensive Empire to retire to, where our Kindred and Fellow-subjects have paved the Way for the comfortable Settlement of many more

Millions of People than the whole *British* Empire now contains. Neither can it be justly said to be carrying our Conjectures too far, to observe, that a Time may come when *our Continent Colonies* may (by due Encouragement) prove so potent and populous, as to be well able to succour their Mother-Country, both with Troops and Shipping, in Case of an unequal War with our Enemies, even in *Europe* itself; as indeed they very lately and successfully have succoured us against Encroachments in *America*. A Time too, we hope, is still more likely to come, and less remote, when we shall no longer depend on the northern Nations of *Europe*, for even any Part of our Naval Stores, — on *Italy* and *Turkey* for *Raw Silk*, *Oils*, &c. — on *Russia* for *Pot-ash*, *Hemp*, *Flax*, &c. — nor perhaps on any other *European* Country, for *Wines*, *Drugs*, or dried *Fruits*.

In the mean Time, let us summarily take a View of the present strength of our Colonies, in Point of the Numbers of their *white* People, as we find them in Dr. *William Douglas's* Account of *New-England*, Anno 1751, and in that of the anonymous Author of an *Account of the European Settlements in America*, published for Mr. *Dodsley*, Anno 1757, in two Octavo Volumes, viz.

	White People.
<i>New-England's</i> four proper Provinces, contain	354,000
<i>Pensylvania</i> , (the youngest Colony but <i>Georgia</i> and <i>Nova Scotia</i>) above	— 250,000
<i>New-York</i> ,	— 80,000
<i>Virginia</i> , (the oldest <i>English</i> Colony on the Continent)	— 70,000
<i>New-Jersey</i> , (much improved since become a Regal Colony)	60,000
<i>Maryland</i> ,	— 40,000
And, although those Authors have omitted the Numbers in the now flourishing Provinces of <i>South- and North-Carolina</i> , and in <i>Georgia</i> , we shall suppose all the three to contain (viz. <i>North Carolina</i> , <i>South Carolina</i> , and <i>Georgia</i>) at least	60,000
Total <i>white</i> People on the Continent,	914,000
<i>Nova Scotia</i> (though not computed) may contain about	— 30,000
And then the Total will be about	944,000
There	

There is no Colony nor Plantation in *Hudson's Bay*, and only a few Men in their four small ports, remaining there for keeping the Company's Goods, &c. during the Winter Season.

Others, more sanguinely, will needs have all our Continent Colonies to contain about 1,100,000 white Inhabitants, exclusive of our new, and very important Acquisition of *Canada*, which gives us Possession of the entire Trade of the very valuable Furs and Peltry of that vast Continent, which may possibly also contain at least 40,000 white *Canadians*, or *French* Inhabitants; and of *Florida*, and a great Part of *Louisiana*.

In our *West-India*, or Sugar Isles, the *white* People are thus computed, (*viz.* according to the abovequoted anonymous Author.)

<i>Jamaica</i> , about (though some Accounts make them fewer than)	—	—	20,000
<i>Barbadoes</i> ,	—	—	25,000
<i>St. Christophers</i> , about	—	—	9,000
<i>Antigua</i> ,	—	—	7,000
<i>Nevis</i> ,	—	—	5,000
<i>Montserrat</i> ,	—	—	5,000

Total *Whites* in the Sugar Isles, 71,000

A number (doubtless) noway proportioned to the Number of their *Negroes*, the latter being generally *thirteen* or *fourteen* to *one* white Person, or, as others, about *sixteen* to *one* white Man

<i>Bermudas</i> ,	—	—	5,000
-------------------	---	---	-------

Total all white Persons in all our *American* Isles, 76,000

Barbuda (though amongst the Sugar Isles) has no direct Trade with *Britain*, being purely employed in Husbandry, and for raising of some fresh Provisions for the other Colonies. *Providence* is the only Island of all the *Bahamas* which is considerably inhabited, upon which, however, (beside the two small Garrisons) we have but very few white People. And of *Newfoundland* the like may be said. As for our new Acquisitions of the Isles of *Grenada*, the *Grenadines*, *Tobago*, *St. Vincent*, and *Dominico*, we have good Ground to hope they will all be soon planted and cultivated, and will become very useful Sugar Islands.

It is much wished by some, that Means could be found (without endangering our Sovereignty in *America*, and also

without injuring private Property and Liberty) for uniting all the *Continent Colonies* into one Kind of Government or Constitution, so as the public Exigencies (in Time of common Danger) might be more effectually supplied than hitherto has been the Case; they being at present extremely various in their internal State. *First*, Some (for Instance) are entirely *regal Governments*, as *Georgia*, *South- and North-Carolina*, *Virginia*, *New-York*, *New-Hampshire*, (being part of what is usually called *New-England*) and lastly, *Nova-Scotia*; in all which Provinces, both the Government and also the Property of the Lands, or *Dominium directum*, (i. e. of the Quit-rents) are in the Crown, excepting *Earl Granville's* undivided eighth Part of *Carolina*, and *Lord Fairfax's North-Creek* District in *Virginia*. *Secondly*, In others *viz.* in *Maryland* and *Pensylvania*, both the Government and Property of the Lands are in the original Grantees from the Crown, called *Lords-Proprietors*, who are, the *Lord Baltimore* for the first-named Province, and the Descendents of *William Penn*, Esq. for the latter. *Thirdly*, In *Connecticut* and *Rhode-Island*, (two other of the *New-England* Provinces) both the Government and Property (i. e. the Quit-rents) are in the Representatives of the People. *Fourthly*, In the best peopled and best cultivated Province of the *Massachusetts Bay* (more peculiarly called *New-England*) the Government is in the Crown, but the Property (i. e. the Quit-rents) in the Representatives of the People. *Lastly*, In *New-Jersey*, the Government is *now* also in the Crown, although the Property, (i. e. the Quit-rents) remains still in a certain select Body of Proprietors.

Were all these thirteen Provinces uniformly joined under the Crown, (consistently with Safety, and the retaining their absolute Dependence on their Mother Country) they might undoubtedly be rendered much more powerful, and also more beneficial to us than they have hitherto been, consisting of no fewer than about a *Million* of *white People*, and perhaps of near half a *Million* of *Negroes* and dependent *Indians*; a Number of Subjects superior to that of some entire Kingdoms in *Europe*; possessed too of a Territory extended in Length for at least 1,500 Miles (*Florida* included) along the *Deucalionian* Ocean, from South-west to North-east, and which, by good Management, might before now have been extended and planted more than perhaps half as many Miles in Breadth, backward towards the *South* or *Indian* Ocean, instead of suffering themselves to be barbarously outraged and ravaged by

by a Handful of closely-united Enemies. All which is, and must be solely submitted to those in whose Power alone it is to rectify, as far as is possible, whatever has been thus formerly so supinely neglected.

Of all the Follies that any Nation can be guilty of in her Colonies, that of even the least Degree of Restraint (and much more of persecution, for mere religious Differences) is the most destructive to their Prosperity, more especially in such Colonies as ours mostly are, on the Continent, consisting of Persons of all Persuasion of Protestants, who all undoubtedly have an equal and natural Right peaceably to profess what they like best, and freely and openly to enjoy their own Ministry and Modes of Worship: But, with respect to *Roman Catholics*, who have a foreign Head, and often foreign Heards and Inclinations, it were much better they were not at all tolerated there, more especially considering the near Neighbourhood of the *French* and *Spanish* busy Missionaries.

With *Russia*, *Denmark*, *Norway*, *Sweden*, *Prussia*, and most of the *Hanse-Towns* on the *Baltic*, we have undoubtedly a losing Trade; that is to say, the Balance is against us some hundred thousand Pounds yearly; yet from those Parts we must still continue to be supplied with immense Quantities of Naval-Stores, Ship and House Timber, Pipe-Staves, Copper, Hemp, Flax and their Seeds, Iron, Potash, &c. until we become wise and happy enough to be supplied with every one of these Articles from our own *American* Colonies; for although the said northern People cannot take off an equal Value of our *British* Product and Manufactures, we must nevertheless sit down contented with a Trade, which, as we are at present circumstanced, they know we cannot dispense with; most of the before-named Articles being absolutely needful, either for our Navy-Royal, or for our mercantile Shipping, Manufactures, &c.

As for others of the *Hanseatic* Ports, as *Hamburgh*, *Bremen*, *Dantzic*, &c. they, it is true, take off great Quantities of our Woollen Manufactures, Plantation and *East-India* Goods, (more especially *Hamburgh*) wherewith they supply a great Part of *Germany* and *Poland*, yet, on the other Hand, we take off immense Quantities of their low-priced Linen of various Sorts, suited for our Plantation and *African* Trades, &c. until such Time as our People of *Scotland* and *Ireland* shall be able fully to supply us therewith; they also supply us with Oak-Timber, Pipe-Staves, Battery, &c. It is therefore

much to be apprehended, that we are still indebted to them for an annual Balance, though, it is to be hoped, not a very considerable one.

But with respect to our Trade to the Ports of *Russia*, it is beyond all Question, that the Balance is some hundred thousand Pounds annually against us, for their Naval Stores, Linen, and Linen-Yarn, Flax, Hemp, and their Seeds, Drugs, Bees-wax, Timber, *Russia* Leather, and sometimes Raw Silk from *Persia* when in a peaceable State, &c. which we take of them in great Quantities, over and above all the Value of the Woollen Goods, *American* and *East-India* Merchandize, Watches, Jewels, wrought Plate, Household Furniture, Hard-ware, and many other Things, which we supply them with. Instead of our taking off such great Quantities of Linen-Yarn, spun in *Russia*, *Poland*, and *Germany*, (where Labour is said to be performed so cheap as 3 Pence per Day) would it not be extremely right in our Legislature, as much as possible to encourage the spinning of it in *Britain* and *Ireland*? As the dressing and spinning of the Flax gives Foreigners too much of the Manufacture; it is farther to be considered, that the *raw* Flax would be imported in our own Shipping; whereas the greatest Part of their Linen-Yarn is said to be imported in foreign Bottoms; whereby we evidently lye under two very considerable Disadvantages.

Although the *ten* Provinces, usually stiled the *Austrian Netherlands*, have a much better Country than those of *Holland*, yet, they are most probably never like to recover their ancient Commerce, whilst the *seven* United Provinces can preserve their Independency: The former, therefore, must be content with what Share they have left of the Woollen and Linen Trade, and in the Lace and Cambrick Manufactures, *Rhenish* Wines, &c. in most of which *Britain* deals very considerably with them; although (in all but the Wines) we hope in Time to be compleatly supplied from *Scotland* and *Ireland*. At present our Trade thither, and especially to *French Flanders*, is a losing one to us, though perhaps too much exaggerated by those who make the Balance to be *two Millions Sterling* yearly against us, by their not taking off any proportionable Quantities of our Manufactures *East-India* and Plantation Goods, with which Merchandize they are mostly supplied by *France*.

With *Portugal*, *Great Britain* undoubtedly carries on a very advantageous Commerce, by supplying not only that
King-

Kingdom with great Quantities of Woollen-Goods, Hard-ware, Linen, Glass-ware, Lead, Tin, Corn, and many other Things, for their Home Use, but also with greater Quantities of slight Woollen and Linen Goods, for their foreign Plantations: Yet, as *France* has of late Years very much encroached on us in the Trade to *Portugal*, with their slight Woollen, Silk, and Linen Stuffs, &c. and as, moreover, we take off such vast Quantities of their Wines and Fruits, more than any other Nation, or indeed than all the other Nations in *Europe* could or would consume, the Balance in our Favour is not (by many knowing Persons) thought so considerable as it has formerly been.

The same, in a great Measure, may we apprehend, be pronounced concerning our Trade to *Spain*, *France* having greatly encroached on us there, and is daily getting Ground of us with her Woollen, Gold and Silver Lace, Silk, Linen, and other Manufactures; although nothing can be clearer, than that it is much more the Interest of both *Spain* and *Portugal* to encourage us rather than *France*, since we take off much more of their Wines, Fruits, Drugs, Oils, &c. than *France* has, or can possibly have Need of; which last-named Kingdom takes none of their Wines: Insomuch, that probably *France*, gains a greater Balance from both those Kingdoms than we do; although it must, however, be acknowledged, that our Trade with *Spain* is still a gainful one to us.

As none of the States and Cities of *Italy* and *Sicily* have any Plantations or Dominions without the Bounds of the *Mediterranean* Sea, we (as well as *France* and *Holland*) supply them with many Articles from the *American* Plantations, and from *East-India*, as well as with Woollen and Metallic, &c. Manufactures, Tin, Lead, Fish, Corn, &c. On the other Hand, we take of them fine Velvets and Brocades, fine *Genoa* Paper, *Florence* and other Wines, Oils, Raw and Thrown Silk, Drugs, Fruits, &c. all or most of them in considerable Quantities; so that perhaps it is not very easy to determine on which Side the Balance lies. Yet, as we trade thither almost entirely in our own Shipping, and as many of the most considerable Articles we have from thence are absolutely necessary for the compleating of our own Manufactures, we must therefore allow the Trade to *Italy* and *Sicily* to be, upon the whole, a beneficial one to us.

Although our general and declared Intention in this Work be limited mostly to the Commercial Affairs of *Christendom* alone,

alone, excepting what relates to our *Turkey* or *Levant* Company, we may, however, here briefly and properly remark, that, notwithstanding the *Grand Seignior's* vast Dominions do extend to and comprehend many of the finest Countries upon Earth, and which are excellently well adapted to Commerce and Manufactures, *viz.* ancient *Greece*, almost all the Countries round the Shores of the *Black Sea*, *Lesser Asia*, *Syria*, *Arabia*, *Egypt*, and *Barca*; yet the *Turks* have very little Commerce but what is intirely *passive*, brought to their Ports by the Shipping of *Christendom*; which bring back from thence sundry excellent *raw* Materials for Commerce, *viz.* *Raw-silk*, *Grogram Yarn*, Galls, and other Dying-Drugs &c. as also Medicinal-Drugs, Coffee, Carpets, &c. in which Trade *we*, the *Dutch*, and the *Venetians*, have still a considerable Share; although the *French* from *Marseilles* have greatly gained Ground on *us*, and all others, of late Years, in that Trade, by the vast Quantities of their fine Woollen Cloths, Stuffs, &c. and their *American* and *East-India* Goods, carried to *Constantinople*, *Smirna*, *Aleppo*, *Alexandria*, and other Ports. We, however, still carry on a considerable Trade thither, both with respect to the before-named exported, imported, and other Merchandize. And although, by the immense Quantities of *Raw-silk*, &c. which we import from *Turkey*, the Balance may be probably, in a literal Sense, against *us*, yet the greatest Part of our said Imports being employed in our own *Silk*, &c. Manufactures, we can by no Means (upon the whole) call the *Turkey* Trade an unprofitable one to *Great-Britain*.

The *Barbary Turks* (or rather *Moors*) are as little addicted to Commerce as the *Levantine Turks*: And as, whilst we retain our Superiority on the *Mediterranean* Seas, we shall generally be able to compel all the *Barbary* piratical States to be at Peace with *us*; it is, therefore, evidently advantageous to *us*, that they remain, as at present, at War with other *Christian* Powers, whereby we not only undisturbedly carry on our own Commerce in those Seas, but are moreover become, in some Measure, the Carriers of both the Merchandize and Treasure of other States at Enmity with them. The Product of *Barbary*, *viz.* *Bees-wax*, Copper, Almonds, Dates, *Morocco* Leather, sundry Drugs, &c. is now mostly lodged in Warehouses at our Port of *Gibraltar*, from whence those Goods are said to be sent home to *Britain* and *Ireland*, nearly on as easy Terms as they were formerly brought directly from

from the Ports of *Barbary*; yet our Trade thither with our own Manufactures and Product is scarcely thought considerable enough to bring the Balance in our Favour.

On the West Coasts of *Africa*, our Commerce is principally for the *Slave Trade* of *Guinea* and *Benin*; where, however, we have neither Colony nor Plantation; but merely a Number of inconsiderable Forts on its Shores, for the Protection of our Trade with its wretched Natives; which indeed would be of little Importance to us, were it not for the great and constant Supplies we get from thence of *Negro Slaves* for our *American* Plantations, purchased intirely with our own *Brittish*, Product and Manufactures of coarse Woollen, Linen, Cotton, Iron, Brais, Copper, Pewter, and Glas; also Armoury, Tools, Lead, and some *East-India* Articles; with which also we purchase some Gold-dust, Gums, Ivory, and *Guinea* Pepper; being in effect all the product to be had on that barbarous Coast. So far, therefore, this Trade may be said to be beneficial to us. The Legislature, of late Years, has laid this *African* Trade in some Sort open, under certain Regulations; whereby, it is to be hoped, it may in time be brought to flourish more than ever before.

With respect to the History of the general Trade to *East-India* (more particularly of our own Nation) its former and later Alterations and Fluctuations have taken up more Room in our ensuing Work, than perhaps any other single Branch of our Commerce. We shall therefore refer the Reader thither, after just remarking, (what many have done before) that, although our own present *East-India* Company enjoys an extensive Trade, and is seemingly in a very prosperous Condition, having many fine Forts and Factories, and a considerable territorial Property, in *India*; making also at home considerable Dividends, and such immense Sales, too, as were never known in former Times; having also, of late Years, adorned even the City of *London* itself, not only with a fine Office, but with such spacious and numerous Warehouses as perhaps are scarcely equalled in any other Nation: All which are likewise their own Property. Yet, with respect to *all Europe* complexly taken, it seems to be universally agreed to be a pernicious Trade; a Trade, draining it of *all* or *most* of the Silver which *America* brings to it. If all *Europe*, therefore could be supposed jointly to agree in dropping the *East-India* Trade intirely, it would be better for the whole, as well as every particular Nation in it: For, unless it be the single,

single, though indeed great, Article of *Saltpetre*, and some *Medicinal*, *Dyers*, and *Painters* Drugs, (all or most of which also *America* can supply) we can hardly recollect any necessarily-useful Commodity imported from thence, (some *Gold* from *China*, &c. likewise excepted) which does not interfere with the better Manufactures and Product of *Europe*. But as such a general Agreement is not to be expected; and as other *European* Nations would undoubtedly, in our Stead, supply all the neighbouring Nations with *East-India* Merchandize, (should we now at any time drop that Trade) to their own very great Advantage; and as, moreover, by our Laws, all the rich and numerous *Indian* Manufactures, directly interfering with our *Silk*, *Woollen*, and *Linen* ones, must necessarily be re-exported to foreign Countries; whereby, and by sundry other Articles so exported, it is *now* conjectured, by impartial and very competent Judges, that a considerable Balance is annually gained to this Kingdom; which, on Supposition of dropping all Commerce to *India* would be lost to us. Upon this very probable Presumption, (which is submitted to every Reader's impartial Judgment) and also as *Saltpetre* is so absolutely necessary for our national and private Magazines for Gun-powder, for which we must otherwise be at the Mercy of dangerous Rivals; we must ever be of Opinion, that our *East-India* Trade, under its present Circumstances, is really a beneficial one for *Great-Britain*; and that, moreover, on the same Supposition, it is highly for the Nation's as well as for the Company's Interest, to support, improve, and increase our *East-India* Commerce as much as is possible.

THE ENGLISH MERCHANT. *)

Act. II. Scene VII-XII.

Freeport and *Mrs. Goodman*.

Mrs. Goodman.

My best friend! Welcome to London! When did you arrive from Lisbon?

Free. But last night.

Mrs. Good. I hope you have had a pleasant voyage?

Free. A good trading voyage — I have got money, but I have got the spleen too. — Have you any news in town?

Mrs. Good. None at all, Sir,

Free.

*) A Comedy, by George Colman. Lond. 1767. 8.

THE ENGLISH MERCHANT, &c. 303

Free. So much the better. The less news, the less nonsense. — But what strange lady have you had here! I met her as I was coming up: she rushed by like a fury, and almost swept me down stairs again with the wind of her hooppetticoat.

Mrs. Good. Ah! jealousy! Jealousy is a terrible passion; especially in a woman's breast, Mr. Freeport.

Free. Jealousy! Why, she is not jealous of you, Mrs. Goodman?

Mrs. Good. No; but of a lodger of mine.

Free. Have you any new lodgers since I left you?

Mrs. Good. Two or three, Sir; the last arrived but to-day; an elderly gentleman, who will see no company.

Free. He's in the right. Three parts in four of mankind are knaves or fools; and the fourth part live by themselves. — But who are your other lodgers?

Mrs. Good. An author and a lady.

Free. I hate authors. Who is the lady?

Mrs. Good. She calls herself Amelia Walton; but I believe that name is not her real one.

Free. Not her real one! Why, sure she is a woman of character?

Mrs. Good. A woman of character! She is an angel. She is most miserably poor; and yet haughty to an excess.

Free. Pride and poverty! A sad composition, Mrs. Goodman.

Mrs. Good. No, Sir; her pride is one of her greatest virtues: it consists in depriving herself of almost all necessaries, and concealing it from the world. Tho' every action speaks her to be a woman of birth and education, she lives upon the work of her own hands without murmur or complaint. I make use of a thousand stratagems to assist her against her will; I prevail on her to keep the money due for rent for her support, and furnish her with every thing she wants at half its prime cost; but if she perceives or suspects these little artifices, she takes it almost as ill as if I had attempted to defraud her. In short, Sir, her unshaken virtue and greatness of soul under misfortunes, make me consider her as a prodigy, and often draw tears of pity and admiration from me.

Free. Ah! women's tears lie very near their eyes. I never cried in my life; and yet I can feel too; I can admire, I can esteem, but what signifies whimpering? Hark ye, Mrs. Goodman! This is a very extraordinary account you give of this

this young woman; you have raised my curiosity, and I'll go and see this lodger of yours; I am rather out of spirits, and it will serve to amuse me.

Mrs. Good. Oh, Sir, you can't see her; she neither pays visits nor receives them, but lives in the most retired manner in the world.

Free. So much the better. I love retirement as well as she. Where are her apartments?

Mrs. Good. On this very floor, on the other side of the staircase.

Free. I'll go and see her immediately.

Mrs. Good. Indeed you can't, Sir. It is impossible.

Free. Impossible! where is the impossibility of going into a room? Come along!

Mrs. Good. For heaven's sake, Mr. Freeport!

Free. Pshaw! I have no time to lose, I have business half an hour hence.

Mrs. Good. But won't it be rather indelicate, Sir? Let me prepare her first!

Free. Prepare her — With all my heart — But remember that I am a man of business, Mrs. Goodman, and have no time to waste in ceremony and compliment. *(Exeunt.)*

(Amelia's apartment.)

Amelia at work, and Molly.

Amel. No, Polly! If Lord Falbridge comes again, I am resolved not to see him.

Molly. Indeed, Madam, he loves you above all the world; I am sure of it; and I verily believe he will run mad, if you don't hear what he has to say for himself.

Amel. Speak no more of him.

Enter Mrs. Goodman.

Mrs. Goodman!

Mrs. Good. Pardon me, Madam! Here is a gentleman of my acquaintance begs you would give him leave to speak with you.

Amel. A gentleman! who is he?

Mrs. Good. His name is Freeport, Madam. He has a few particularities; but he is the best-hearted man in the world. Pray let him come in, Madam!

Amel. By no means; you know I receive visits from nobody.

Enter

Enter *Freeport*.

Bless me! he's here. This is very extraordinary indeed, Mrs. Goodmann.

Free. Don't disturb yourself, young woman; don't disturb yourself!

Molly. Mighty free and easy, methinks!

Amel. Excuse me, Sir; I am not used to receive visits from persons entirely unknown.

Free. Unknown! There is not a man in all London better known than I am. I am a merchant, my name is Freeport; Freeport of Crutched-Friars; enquire upon 'Change!

Amel. Mrs. Goodman! I never saw the gentleman before. I am surpris'd at his coming here.

Free. Pooh! Prithee; Mrs. Goodman knows me well enough. (*Mrs. Goodman talks apart with Amelia.*) Ay! that's right, Mrs. Goodman. Let her know who I am, and tell her to make herself easy.

Mrs. Good. But the lady does not chuse we should trouble her, Sir.

Free. Trouble her? I'll give her no trouble; I came to drink a dish of tea with you; let your maid get it ready, and we will have it here instead of your parlour. — In the mean time I will talk with this lady; I have something to say to her.

Amel. If you had any business, Sir —

Free. Business! I tell you I have very particular business; so sit down, and let's have the tea.

Mrs. Good. You shou'd not have followed me so soon, Sir.

Free. Pooh, prithee! (*Exit. Mrs. Goodman.*)

Molly. This is the oddest man I ever saw in my life.

Amel. Well, Sir, as I see you are a particular acquaintance of Mrs. Goodman — But pray what are your commands for me, Sir! (*they sit.*)

Free. I tell you what, young woman; I am a plain man, and will tell you my mind in an instant. I am told that you are one of the best women in the world; very virtuous, and very poor; I like you for that: but they say you are excessively proud too; now I don't like you for that, Madam.

Molly. Free and easy still, I see.

Amel. And pray, Sir, who told you so?

Free. Mrs. Goodman.

Amel. She has deceived you, Sir; not in regard to my pride, perhaps, for there is a certain right pride which every body, especially women, ought to possess! and as to virtue,
U it

it is no more than my duty; but as to poverty, I disclaim it; they who want nothing, cannot be said to be poor.

Free. It is no such thing: you don't speak the truth; and that is worse than being proud. I know very well that you are as poor as Job, that you are in want of common necessities, and don't make a good meal above once in a fortnight.

Molly. My mistress fast for her health, Sir.

Free. Hold your tongue, hussy! what, are you proud too?

Molly. Lord, what a strange man!

Free. But however, Madam, proud or not proud, does not signify two pence. — Hark ye, young woman! it is a rule with me (as it ought to be with every good Christian) to give a tenth part of my fortune in charity. In the account of my profits there stands at present the sum of two thousand pounds on the credit side of my books; so that I am two hundred pounds in arrear. This I look upon as a debt due from my fortune to your poverty — Yes, your poverty I say, so never deny it. There's a Bank note for two hundred pounds; and now I am out of your debt. — Where the deuce is this tea, I wonder?

Molly. I never saw such a man in my life.

Amel. I don't know that I ever was so thoroughly confounded (*apart.*) — Sir! (*to Freeport.*)

Free. Well?

Amel. This noble action has surprised me still more than your conversation, but you must excuse my refusal of your kindness; for I must confess, that if I were to accept what you offer, I don't know when I should be able to restore it.

Free. Restore it! why, who wants you to restore it? I never dreamt of restitution.

Amel. I feel, I feel your goodness to the bottom of my soul; but you must excuse me. I have no occasion for your bounty; take your note, Sir, and bestow it where it is wanted.

Molly. Lord, Madam! you are ten times stranger than the gentleman. — I tell you what, Sir; (*to Freeport*) it does not signify talking; we are in the greatest distress in the world, and if it had not been for the kindness and good-nature of Mrs. Goodman, we might have died by this time. My lady has concealed her distress from every body that was willing and able to relieve her; you have come to the knowledge of it in spite of her teeth; and I hope that you will oblige her, in spite of her teeth, to accept of your generous offer.

Amel.

Amel. No more, my dear Polly; if you would not have me die with shame, say no more! Return the gentleman his note with my best thanks for his kindness; tell him, I durst not accept of it; for when a woman receives presents from a man, the world will always suspect that she pays for them at the expence of her virtue.

Free. What's that! what does she say, child?

Molly. Lord, Sir, I hardly know what she says. She says, that when a gentleman makes a young lady presents, he is always supposed to have a design upon her virtue.

Free. Nonsense! why shou'd she suspect me of an ungenerous design, because I do a generous action?

Molly. Do you hear, Madam?

Amel. Yes, I hear; I admire; but I must persist in my refusal; if that scandalous fellow Spatter were to hear of this, he would stick at saying nothing.

Free. Eh! what's that?

Molly. She is afraid you should be taken for her lover, Sir.

Free. I for your lover! not I. I never saw you before. I don't love you; so make no scruples upon that account; I like you well enough, but I don't love you at all; not at all; I tell you. — If you have a mind never to see my face any more, good bye t'ye! — You shall never see me any more. If you like I should come back again, I'll come back again; but I lose time, I have business; your servant! (*going.*)

Amel. Stay, Sir! do not leave me without receiving the sincerest acknowledgments of my gratitude and esteem; but, above all, receive your note again, and do not put me any longer to the blush!

Free. The woman is a fool.

Enter Mrs. Goodman.

Amel. Come hither, I beseech you, Mrs. Goodman.

Mrs. Good. Your pleasure, Madam!

Amel. Here! take this note which that gentleman has given me by mistake; return it to him, I charge you; assure him of my esteem and admiration; but let him know I need no assistance, and cannot accept it. (*Exit.*)

Manent *Freeport*, &c.

Mrs. Good. Ah! Mr. Freeport! you have been at your old trade. You are always endeavouring to do good actions in secret; but the world always finds you out, you see.

Molly. Well; I don't believe there are two stranger people in England than my mistress, and that gentleman; one so ready to part with money; and the other so unwilling to receive it; — but don't believe her, Sir, for between friends, she is in very great need of assistance I assure you.

Mrs. Good. Indeed I believe so.

Free. Oh, I have no doubt on't, so I'll tell you what, Mrs. Goodman; keep the note, and supply her wants out of it without her knowledge; and now I think of it, that way is better than t'other.

Molly. I never saw such a strange man in my life. (*Exit.*

Mrs. Good. I shall obey your kind commands, Sir; poor soul! my heart bleeds for her; her virtue and misfortunes touch me to the soul.

Free. I have some little feeling for her too; but she is too proud. A fine face, fine figure; well behaved; well bred; and I dare say an excellent heart! — But she is too proud; tell her so, d'ye hear? tell her she is too proud. I shall be too late for my business — I'll see her again soon — It is a pity she is so proud. (*Exeunt.*

Act. III. Scene VII-X.

Sir William Douglas. Amelia.

Enter Owen hastily.

Ha! Owen! thou art come at a happy moment. I have found my daughter. This is your young mistress, the paragon of her sex, my dear, my amiable Amelia.

Owen. Oh, Sir, this is no time for congratulation. You are in the most imminent danger.

Sir W. What is the matter?

Owen. The officers of government are at this instant in the house. I saw them enter; I heard them say they had authority to apprehend some suspected person, and I ran immediately to inform you of your danger.

Amel. Oh, heaven! My father, what will you do?

Owen. Do not be alarmed, Sir; we are two; we are armed; and we may perhaps be able to make our way through them; I will stand by you to the last drop of my blood.

Sir W. Thou faithful creature! Stay, Owen; our fears may betray us; till we are sure we are attacked, let us shew no signs of opposition!

Enter

Enter *Molly*, hastily.

Molly. My dear mistress! we are ruined; we are undone for ever.

Amel. There are officers of justice in the house; I have heard it; tell me, tell me this instant whom do they seek for?

Molly. For you, Madam; for you; they have a warrant to apprehend you, they say.

Amel. But they have no warrant to apprehend any body else?

Molly. No, Madam; nobody else; but I will follow you to the end of the world.

Amel. My dear Polly, I did not mean *you*. Retire, Sir! (to Sir William.) For heavens sake leave me to their mercy; they can have no facts against me; my life has been as innocent as unfortunate, and I must soon be released.

Sir W. No, my child; I will not leave thee.

Molly. My child? This is Sir William Douglas then, as sure as I am alive!

Sir W. Besides, retiring at such a time might create suspicion, and incur the danger we would wish to avoid.

Molly. They will be in the room in a moment; I think I hear them upon the stairs; they would have been here before me, if Mr. Freeport had not come in and stopt them.

Sir W. Courage, my dear Amelia!

Amel. Alas, Sir! I have no terrors but for you.

Owen. They are here, Sir.

Molly. Oh, lord! here they are indeed; I am frightened out of my wits.

Enter *Mrs. Goodman*, *Freeport*, and *Officer*.

Free. A warrant to seize her? a harmless young woman? it is impossible.

Officer. Pardon me, Sir; if the young lady goes by the name of Amelia Walton, I have a warrant to apprehend her.

Free. On what account!

Officer. As a dangerous person.

Free. Dangerous!

Officer. Yes, Sir; suspected of disaffection and treasonable practices.

Amel. I am the unhappy object of your search, Sir; give me leave to know the substance of the accusation.

Officer. I cannot tell you particulars, Madam; but information upon oath has been made against you, and I am ordered to apprehend you.

310 THE ENGLISH MERCHANT,

Mrs. Good. But you will accept of bail, Sir; I will be bound for all I am worth in the world.

Officer. In these cases, Madam, bail is not usual; and if ever accepted at all, it is excessively high, and given by persons of very large property, and known character.

Free. Well; my property is large enough, and my character very well known. My name is Freeport.

Officer. I know you very well, Sir.

Free. I'll answer for her appearance; I'll be bound in a penalty of five hundred pounds, a thousand, two thousand, or what sum you please.

Officer. And will you enter into the recognisance immediately?

Free. With all my heart, come along! (*going.*)

Officer. And are you in earnest, Sir?

Free. Ay, to be sure. Why not?

Officer. Because, Sir, I'll venture to say there are but few people that place their money on such securities.

Free. So much the worse; he who can employ it in doing good, places it on the best security, and puts it out at the highest interest in the world. (*Exit with the Officer.*)

Manent Sir *William Douglas*, &c.

Sir W. I can hardly trust my eyes and ears; who is this benevolent gentleman?

Mrs. Good. I don't wonder you are surprised at Mr. Freeport's manner of proceeding, Sir; but it is his way. He is not a man of compliment; but he does the most essential service in less time, than others take in making protestations.

Molly. Here he is again; heaven reward him!

Re-enter *Freeport*.

Free. So! that matter is dispatched; now to our other affairs! this is a busy day with me — Look-ye, Sir William; we must be brief; there is no time to be lost.

Sir W. How! am I betrayed then!

Free. Betrayed! no; but you are discovered.

Owen. What! my master discovered! (*offers to draw.*)

Free. (*to Owen*) Nay, never clap thy hand to thy sword, old trusty! your master is in danger, it is true; but not from me, I promise you. Go, and get him a post-chaise; and let him pack off this instant; that is the best way of shewing your attachment to him at present. — Twenty years, Sir William,

William, have not made so great an alteration in you, but I knew you the moment I saw you.

Mrs. Good. Harbour no distrust of Mr. Freeport, Sir; he is one of the worthiest men living.

Amel. I know his worthiness. His behaviour to the officer but this moment, uncommonly generous as it appeared, is not the first testimony he has given me to day, of his noble disposition.

Free. Noble! psh'aw! nonsense!

Sir W. (to Freeport) Sir; the kind manner in which you have been pleased to interest yourself in my affairs, has almost as much overpowered me, as if you had surprised me with hostile proceedings. Which way shall I thank you for your goodness to me and my Amelia?

Free. Don't thank me at all; when you are out of danger, perhaps I may make a proposal to you, that will not be disagreeable; at present think of nothing but your escape; for I should not be surprised, if they were very shortly to make you the same compliment, they have paid to Amelia: and in your case, which is really a serious one, they might not be in the humour to accept of my recognisance.

Mrs. Good. Mr. Freeport is in the right, Sir; every moment of delay is hazardous; let us prevail upon you to depart immediately! Amelia being wholly innocent, cannot be long detained in custody, and as soon as she is released, I will bring her to you, wherever you shall appoint.

Free. Ay, ay, you must be gone directly, Sir! and as you may want ready money upon the road, take my purse!
(*Offering his purse.*)

Sir W. No, thou truest friend, I have no need of it. With what wonderful goodness have you acted towards me and my unhappy family!

Free. Wonderful! why wonderful? Would not you have done the same, if you had been in my place?

Sir W. I hope I should.

Free. Well then, where is the wonder of it? Come, come, let us see you make ready for your departure!

Sir W. Thou best of men!

Free. Best of men? Heaven forbid! I have done no more than my duty by you. I am a man myself; and am bound to be a friend to all mankind, you know. (Exit.)

ACT. V.

(A Hall.)

Lord Falbridge and Molly meeting.

Molly. Oh, my Lord! I am glad to see you returned.

L. Fal. Where is your mistress? (eagerly.)

Molly. In her own chamber.

L. Fal. And where is Sir William Douglas?

Molly. With my mistress.

L. Fal. And have there been no officers here to apprehend them?

Molly. Officers! No, my Lord. Officers! you frighten me. I was in hopes, by seeing your Lordship so soon again, that there were some good news for us.

L. Fal. Never was any thing so unfortunate. The noble persons, to whom I meant to make application, were out of town; nor could by any means be seen or spoken with, till to morrow morning: and to add to my distraction, I learnt that a new information had been made, and a new warrant issued to apprehend Sir William Douglas and Amelia.

Molly. Oh dear! What can we do then?

L. Fal. Do! I shall run mad. Go, my dear Polly, go to your Mistress, and Sir William, and inform them of their danger. Every moment is precious, but perhaps they may yet have time to escape.

Molly. I will, my Lord! (going.)

L. Fal. Stay! (*Molly returns.*) My chariot is at the door; tell them, not to wait for any other carriage, but to get into that, and drive away immediately.

Molly. I will, my Lord. Oh dear! I never was so terrified in all my life. (Exit.)

Lord Falbridge alone.

If I can but save them now, we may gain time for mediation. Ha! what noise? Are the officers coming! Who's here?

Enter *La France*.

La Fr. Milor, Monf. le Duc de — —

L. Fal. Sirrah! Villain! You have been the occasion of all this mischief. By your carelessness, or treachery, Lady Alton has intercepted my letter to Amelia.

La Fr. Lady Alton?

L. Fal. Yes, dog; did not I send you here this morning with a letter?

La Fr. Oui, Milor.

L. Fal.

L. Fal. And did you bring it here, rascal!

La Fr. Oui, Milor.

L. Fal. No, firrah. You did not bring it; the lady never received any letter from me; she told me so herself; whom did you give it to? (La France *hesitates*.) Speak, firrah; or I'll shake your soul out of your body. (*shaking him*.)

La Fr. I giv it to — —

L. Fal. Who, rascal?

La Fr. Monsieur Spatter.

L. Fal. Mr. Spatter?

La Fr. Oui, Milor; he promis to giv it to Mademoiselle Amelie, vid his own hand.

L. Fal. I shall soon know the truth of that, Sir, for yonder is Mr. Spatter himself: run, and tell him I desire to speak with him!

La Fr. Oui, Milor; *ma foi*, I was very near kesh; I never was in more *vilain embarras* in all my life. (*Exit*.)

Lord Falbridge alone.

My letter's falling into the hands of that fellow, accounts for every thing. The contents instructed him concerning Amelia. What a wretch I am! Destined every way to be of prejudice to that virtue, which I am bound to adore.

Re-enter La France with Spatter.

Spat. Monsieur la France tells me, that your Lordship desires to speak with me; what are your commands, my Lord? (*pertly*.)

L. Fal. The easy impudence of the rascal puts me out of all patience. (*to himself*.)

Spat. My Lord!

L. Fal. The last time I saw you, Sir, you were rewarded for the good you had done; you must expect now to be chastised for your mischief.

Spat. Mischief, my Lord?

L. Fal. Yes, Sir; where is that letter of mine, which La France tells me, he gave you to deliver to a young lady of this house?

Spat. Oh the devil! (*apart*.) Letter, my Lord? (*hesitates*.)

L. Fal. Yes, letter, Sir; did not you give it him, La France?

La Fr. Oui, Milor!

Spat. Y—e—e—s, yes, my Lord; I had the letter of Monsieur La France, to be sure, my Lord; but — but —

L. Fal. But what, firrah? give me the letter immediately;

314 THE ENGLISH MERCHANT,

and if I find that the seal has been broken, I will break every bone in your skin.

Spat. For heaven's sake, my Lord! (*feelling in his pockets.*) I — I — I have not got the letter about me at present, my Lord; but if you will give me leave to step to my apartment, I'll bring it you immediately. (*offering to go.*)

L. Fal. (*stopping him.*) No, no; that will not do, Sir; you shall not stir, I promise you. — Look ye, rascal! tell me, what is become of my letter, or I will be the death of you this instant. (*drawing.*)

Spat. (*kneeling.*) Put up your sword, my Lord; put up your sword; and I will tell you every thing in the world. Indeed, I will.

L. Fal. Well, Sir; be quick then! (*putting up his sword.*)

Spat. Lady Alton —

L. Fal. Lady Alton! I thought so; go on, Sir.

Spat. Lady Alton, my Lord, desired me to procure her all the intelligence in my power, concerning every thing that past between your Lordship and Amelia.

L. Fal. Well, Sir; what then?

Spat. A little patience, I entreat your Lordship. Accordingly, to oblige her Ladyship — one must oblige the ladies, you know, my Lord — I did keep a pretty sharp look-out, I must confess; and this morning, meeting Monsieur La France, with a letter from your Lordship in his charge, I very readily gave him five guineas of her Ladyship's bounty-money, to put it into my hands.

La Fr. *Oh Diable! me voilà perdu!* (*aside.*)

L. Fal. How! A bribe, rascal? (*to La France.*)

La Fr. *Ah, Milor!* (*on his knees.*)

Spat. At the same price for every letter, he would have sold a whole mail, my Lord.

La Fr. *Ayez pitié de moi!* (*holding up his hands.*)

L. Fal. Betray the confidence I reposed in you?

Spat. He offered me the letter of his own accord, my Lord.

La Fr. No such ting, *en vérité*, Milor!

Spat. Very true, I can assure your Lordship.

L. Fal. Well, well; I shall chastise him at my leisure. At present, Sir, do you return me my letter.

Spat. I — I have it not about me, my Lord.

L. Fal. Where is it, rascal? tell me this instant, or —

La Fr. Lady Alton —

L. Fal.

L. Fal. (to *Spat*) What! has *she* got it? speak, Sirrah!

Spat She has indeed, my Lord.

L. Fal. Are not you a couple of villains?

La Fr. Oui, Milor.

Spat Yes, my Lord!

[both speak at once.

L. Fal. (to *Spat*.) But hold, Sir? a word more with you! As you seem to be Lady Alton's chief agent, I must desire some further information from you.

Spat Any thing in my power, my Lord.

L. Fal I can account for her knowledge of Amelia by means of my letter: but how did she discover Sir William Douglas?

Spat. I told her, my Lord.

L. Fal But how did you discover him yourself?

Spat By listening, my Lord.

L. Fal. By listening?

Spat. Yes, by listening, my Lord! let me but once be about a house, and I'll engage to clear it, like a ventilator, my Lord. There is not a door to a single apartment in this house, but I have planted my ear at the keyhole.

L. Fal. And where these the means, by which you procured your intelligence?

Spat. Yes, my Lord.

L. Fal Impossible.

Spat. Oh dear! nothing so easy; this is nothing at all, my Lord! I have given an account of the plays in our Journal, for three months together, without being nearer the stage than the pit-passage; and I have collected the debates of a whole session, for the Magazine, only by attending in the lobby.

L. Fal. Precious rascal! — Ha! who comes here? Lady Alton herself again, as I live!

Spat. (*apart.*) The devil she is! I wish I was out of the house.

Enter Lady *Alton*.

L. Alt. What! still here, my Lord? still witnessing to your own shame, and the justice of my resentment?

L. Fal. Yes, I am still here, Madam; and sorry to be made a witness of your cruelty and meanness; of your descending to arts, so much beneath your rank; and practices, so unworthy of your sex.

L. Alt. You talk in riddles, my Lord!

L. Fal. This gentleman shall explain them. Here, Madam:
here

here is the engine of your malice, the instrument of your vengeance, your prime minister, Mr. Spatter.

L. *Alt.* What have I to do with Mr. Spatter?

L. *Fal.* To do mischief; to intercept letters, and break them open; to overhear private conversations, and betray them; to — —

L. *Alt.* Have you laid any thing of this kind to my charge, Sir? (to Spatter.)

Spat. I have been obliged to speak the truth, though much against my will, indeed, Madam.

L. *Alt.* The truth! thou father of lies, did ever any truth proceed from thee? What! is his Lordship your new patron! A fit Mæcenass for thee, thou scandal to the *belles lettres*!

L. *Fal.* Your rage at this detection is but a fresh conviction of your guilt.

L. *Alt.* Do not triumph, monster! you shall still feel the superiority I have over you. The object of your wishes is no longer under your protection; the officers of the government entered the house at the same time with myself, with a warrant to seize both Amelia and her father.

L. *Fal.* Confusion! Are not they gone then? La France! villain! run, and bring me word!

La *Fr.* I go, Milor! (Exit.)

L. *Alt.* Do not flatter yourself with any hopes; they have not escaped; here they are, secured in proper hands.

L. *Fal.* Death and distraction! now I am completely miserable. (Enter Sir William Douglas, Amelia, Owen, and Officers.)

L. *Alt.* Yes, your misery is complete indeed; and so shall be my revenge. Oh! your servant, Madam! (turning to Amelia) You now see to what a condition your pride and obstinacy have reduced you. Did not I bid you tremble at the consequences?

Amel. It was here alone that I was vulnerable. (holding her father's hand.) Oh, Madam! (turning to Lady Alton) by the virtues that should adorn your rank, by the tenderness of your sex, I conjure you, pity my distress! do but release my father; and there are no concessions, however humiliating, which you may not exact from me.

L. *Alt.* Those concessions now come too late, Madam. If I were even inclined to relieve you, at present it is not in my power. (haughtily.) Lord Falbridge perhaps may have more interest. (with a sneer.)

L. *Fal.* Cruel, insulting woman! (to Lady Alton) Do not alarm

alarm yourself, my Amelia! — Do not be concerned, Sir! (to Sir William.) Your enemies shall still be disappointed. Altho' ignorant of your arrival, I have for some time past exerted all my interest in your favour, and by the mediation of those still more powerful, I do not despair of success. Your case is truly a compassionate one; and in that breast, from which alone mercy can proceed, thank heaven, there is the greatest reason to expect it.

Sir *W.* I am obliged to you for your concern, Sir.

L. *Fal.* Oh, I owe you all this, and much more — But this is no time to speak of my offences, or repentance.

L. *Alt.* This is mere trifling. I thought you knew on what occasion you came hither, Sir. (to the Officer.

Officer. Your reproof is too just, Madam. I attend you, Sir. (to Sir William.

L. *Fal.* Hold! Let me prevail on you, Sir, (to the Officer) to suffer them to remain here till tomorrow morning. I will answer for the consequences.

Officer. Pardon me, my Lord! we should be happy to oblige you; but we must discharge the duty of our office.

L. *Fal.* Distraction!

Sir *W.* Come then! we follow you, Sir! Be comforted, my Amelia! for my sake, be comforted! Wretched as I am, your anxiety shaks me more than my own misfortunes.

(As they are going out, Enter Freeport.

Free. Heyday! what now! the officers here again! I thought we had satisfied you this morning. What is the meaning of all this?

Officer. This will inform you, Sir. (giving the warrant.

Free. How's this? Let me see! (reading.) This it to require you — um um — the bodies of William Ford and Amelia Walton — um — um — suspected persons — um — um — Well, well! I see what this is: but you will accept of bail, Sir.

Officer. No, Sir; this case is notailable, and we have already been reprimanded for taking your recognisance this morning.

Sir *W.* Thou good man! I shall ever retain the most lively sense of your behaviour: but your kind endeavours to preserve the poor remainder of my proscribed life are in vain. We must submit to our destiny. (all going.

Free. Hold, hold! one word, I beseech you, Sir! (to the Officer) a minute or two will make no difference — Bail then, it seems, will not do, Sir?

Officer. No, Sir.

Free.

Free. Well, well; then I have something here that will perhaps. *(feeling in his pocket.)*

L. Fal. How!

L. Alt. What does he mean?

Free. No, it is not there. — It is in t'other pocket, I believe. Here, Sir William! *(producing a parchment.)* Ask the gentleman, if *that* will not do. — But first of all, read it yourself, and let us hear how you like the contents.

Sir W. What do I see! *(opening and perusing it)* My pardon! the full and free pardon of my offences! O heaven! and is it to you then, to you, Sir, that I owe all this? — Thus, thus let me shew my gratitude to my benefactor!

(falling at his feet.)

Free. Get up, get up, Sir William! Thank heaven, and the most gracious of monarchs. You have very little obligation to me, I promise you.

Amel. My father restored! Then I am the happiest of women.

L. Fal. A pardon! I am transported.

L. Alt. How's this? a pardon!

Free. Under the great seal, Madam.

L. Alt. Confusion! what! am I baffled at last then? Am I disappointed even of my revenge? — Thou officious fool! *(to Freeport.)* May these wretches prove as great a torment to you, as they have been to me! As for thee, *(to Lord Falbridge)* thou perfidious monster, may thy guilt prove thy punishment! May you obtain the unworthy union you desire! May your wife prove as false to you, as you have been to me! May you be followed, like Orestes, with the furies of a guilty conscience; find your error when it is too late; and die in all the horrors of despair! *(Exit.)*

Free. There goes a woman of quality for you! what little actions! and what a great soul! — Ha! Master Spatter! where are you going? *(to Spatter, who is sneaking off.)*

Spat. Following the Muse, Sir! *(pointing after Lady Alton.)* But if you have any further commands, or his Lordship should have occasion for me to write his Epithalamium —

L. Fal. Peace, wretch! sleep in a whole skin, and be thankful! I would solicit mercy myself, and have not leisure to punish you. Be gone, Sir!

Spat. I am obliged to your Lordship — This affair will make a good article for the Evening-Post to-night, however.

(Aside and Exit.)

Sir W. How happy has this reverse of fortune made me! — But

— But my surprise is almost equal to my joy. May we beg you, Sir, (to Freeport) to inform us how your benevolence has effected what seems almost a miracle in my favour?

Free. In two words then, Sir William, this happy event is chiefly owing to your old friend, the late Lord Brumpton.

Sir W. Lord Brumpton!

Free. Yes; honest Owen there told me, that his Lordship had been employed in soliciting your pardon. Did not you, Owen?

Owen. I did, Sir.

Free. Upon hearing that, and perceiving the danger you were in, I went immediately to the present Lord Brumpton; who is a very honest fellow, and one of the oldest acquaintance I have in the world. He, at my instance, immediately made the necessary application; and guess how agreeably we were surprised to hear that the late Lord had already been successful, and that the pardon had been made out, on the very morning of the day his Lordship died. Away went I, as fast as a pair of horses could carry me, to fetch it; and should certainly have prevented this last arrest, if the warrant to apprehend you, as dangerous persons, had not issued under your assumed names of William Ford and Amelia Walton, against whom the information had been laid. But, however, it has only served to prevent your running away, when the danger was over, for at present, Sir William, thank heaven and his majesty, you are a whole man again; and you have nothing to do but to make a legal appearance, and to plead the pardon I have brought you, to absolve you from all informations.

L. Fal. Thou honest excellent man! How happily have you supplied, what I failed to accomplish!

Free. Ay, I heard that your Lordship had been busy. — You had more friends at Court than one, Sir William, I promise you.

Sir W. I am overwhelmed with my sudden good fortune, and am poor even in thanks. Teach me, Mr. Freeport, teach me how to make some acknowledgement for your extraordinary generosity.

Free. I'll tell you what, Sir William. Notwithstanding your daughter's pride, I took a liking to her, the moment I saw her.

L. Fal. Ha! What's this!

Free. What's the matter, my Lord?

L. Fal. Nothing. Go on, Sir!

Free.

Free. Why then, to confess the truth, I am afraid that my benevolence, which you have all been pleased to praise so highly, had some little leaven of self-interest in it; and I was desirous to promote Amelia's happiness more ways than one.

L. Fal. Then I am the veriest wretch that ever existed — But take her, Sir! for I must confess that you have deserved her by your proceedings; and that I, fool and villain that I was, have forfeited her by mine. *(going.)*

Free. Hold, hold! one word before you go, if you please, my Lord! You may kill yourself for aught I know, but you shan't lay your death at my door, I promise you. I had a kindness for Amelia, I must confess; but in the course of my late negotiation for Sir William, hearing of your Lordship's pretensions, I dropt all thoughts of her. It is a maxim with me, to do good wherever I can, but always to abstain from doing mischief. — Now as I can't make the lady happy myself, I would fain put her into the hands of those that can. — So, if you would oblige me, Sir William, let me join these two young folks together, *(joining their hands)* and do you say Amen to it.

Sir W. With all my heart! — You can have no objection, Amelia. *(Amelia bursts into tears.)*

L. Fal. How bitterly do those tears reproach me! It shall be the whole business of my future life to atone for them.

Amel. Your actions this day, and your solicitude for my father, have redeemed you in my good opinion; and the consent of Sir William, seconded by so powerful an advocate as Mr. Freeport, cannot be contended with. Take my hand, my Lord! a virtuous passion may inhabit the purest breast; and I am not ashamed to confess, that I had conceived a partiality for you, till your own conduct turned my heart against you; and if my resentment has given you any pain, when I consider the occasion, I must own that I cannot repent it.

L. Fal. Mention it no more, my love, I beseech you! You may justly blame your lover, I confess; but I will never give you cause to complain of your husband.

Free. I don't believe you will. I give you joy, my Lord! I give you all joy. As for you, Madam, *(to Amelia)* do but shew the world that you can bear prosperity, as well as you have sustained the shocks of adversity, and there are few women, who may not wish to be an Amelia.

Verzeichniß

einiger

in diesem Buche vorkommenden

Wörter und Redensarten,

die

in den Wörterbüchern fehlen.

A.

Aborigines, Eingebornē,
 erste Einwohner eines
 Landes.

Absentee, wird bloß von rei-
 chen Irländern gebraucht,
 die sich lange außer ihrem
 Vaterlande, besonders in
 England aufhalten, und da
 ihre Einkünfte verzehren.

*Ace, I was within an ace of
 doing it*: Ich war auf dem
 Punkte, es zu thun.

Alligator, Art Krokodile,
 Caymān. (vom Spanischen
 El Lagarto, eine Eidexe.)

Animula Vagula. S. 200.
Flüchtiges Seelchen, der
 Anfang eines lateinischen
 Liedes des Kaisers Hadrian
 an seine Seele.

An't please Your Honour. Mit
 Ihrer Gnaden Wohlneh-
 men. — Ein Ausdruck ge-
 meiner Leute gegen ihre
 Obern, Richter u. d. gl.

Architrave, Unterbalken, un-
 terste Theil eines Haupt-
 gesimses.

Area, Vorhof, Hofplatz.

Arthur's, die berühmteste
 Hostaverne in London, wo
 stark gespielt wird.

Aver-ras. S. 137. Ein türki-
 sches Wort: Confiscationen
 der Güter.

Authoritative injunction,
 Machtspruch, entschei-
 der Befehl.

A-wel-o' day. Ein Ausruf —
 Gütiger Himmel! u. d. gl.
 wie *Alack o' Day*.

B.

Barrow - Bunter. Ein altes
 Weib, das Früchte auf
 einem Schiebkarren feil hat.

Bart, d. i. Baronet.

Battery. Kessel, und der-
 gleichen Waaren, welche
 in Messings- und Kupfer-
 hämmern verfertigt wer-
 den.

Beetel. S. 237. Ein Kraut,
 womit in Ostindien starker
 Handel getrieben wird. Man
 vermischt es mit *Beetlenut*,
 oder *Arek*, (einer Art Nüsse,
 die

die auf einem Palmbaum wächst) wie auch mit Muschelkalk &c. (*Chunam*) und käuert es, wie die Matrosen Toback kauen.

Beside. I was beside myself: Ich war außer mir, sinnlos.

Bills of mortality, Todten-Listen. *Within the Bills of mortality*: Innerhalb der Stadt London, so weit die Todten in die Listen eingetragen werden; denn die Todten-Listen erstrecken sich nicht auf alle Häuser, die man wohl zu den drey Städten von London rechnen mögte.

Bon-ton, (ist ein französisches Modewort) von der guten Gesellschaft.

Bounty-money, Prämie.

Bucaniers, Amerikanische Freybeuter.

Bullion, ungemünzt und unverarbeitet Gold oder Silber.

Bulley-tree. S. 249. Ein Jamaicanischer Baum; *Sloane* nennt ihn Anona, *Brown* Chrysophyllum. Die Frucht heist Starapple, Sternapfel, und wird dort sehr geschätzt.

Burgh, schottisch; auf englisch *Borough*.

C.

Cabbage-tree, Kohl-Palmbaum. (franz. Choux palmier.)

Callicoes, Ostindische u. a.

Cattune, die ganz von

Baumwolle gemacht sind. Bey den *Cottons* ist der Einschlag leinen, und die Kette baumwollen.

Canvas, ein Bret, oder Tuch, vor den Gläsern an einer Kutsche, welches, wie diese, kann aufgezogen und niedergelassen werden.

Capitoul. Eine Obrigkeit in Toulouse u. s. w. wie die Echevins zu Paris. Polizeydirektor.

Cassava, oder *Manioc*. S. 193. Eine mehligte Wurzel, wovon die Amerikaner Brodt machen: Brodtwurzel.

Cask-staves, Piepenstäbe. *to Catch hold of* — sich woran halten.

Charity schools, Freyschulen.

Chints, Zitze.

Chip-hats, Basthüte fürs Frauenzimmer.

Cit, ein Städter.

to clear. S. 171. Reinen Ueberschuß geben.

Clerk, 1) Schreiber, 2) Handelsdiener, 3) Küster.

Coalition, Vereinigung zu einer Masse, einem Ganzen.

Coasting trade, Küstenhandel.

Cod-fish, Stockfisch.

Colipever, S. 247. oder *Callipever*. Eine Jamaicanische Fischart, wofür wir keinen Namen haben. Es ist eine Art Meeräschen.

Colonization, Anlegung einer Kolonie.

Communibus annis, (ist lateinisch) Ein Jahr ins andere gerechnet.

Com-

Competition, Gleichsetzung, Gemeinmachen.
Consequence. He will give himself consequence with me: Er will sich ein Verdienst um mich erwerben.
Contractor, Lieferant.
Contiguity. The great contiguity of London: Der grosse Bezirk von London.
Continuous, angränzend.
Coridor, ein schmaler Gang, oder Gallerie, welcher zu mehreren Zimmern führet.
Coroners Inquest. Die Untersuchung eines Gerichtsbedienten, dessen Amt ist, wenn todtte Körper gefunden werden, zu bestimmen, ob sie natürlich gestorben, oder ermordet sind.
Coroners Jury, zwölf geschworne Männer, welche über die Wahrheit eines angeschuldigten Mordes entscheiden.
Corporation of Bath, Rath und Bürgerchaft von Bath.
Crockery merchant, einer der mit Töpferwaare und Steingut handelt.
Curricombs, Pferdestriegel.
to cut out. S. 121. Ausstechen, verdrängen.
Cupola, oder *Dome*, Kuppel. Ein Dach, in Gestalt einer Halbkugel.
Cylinders, Feldschlangen; Art Canonen.
Cymiter, Säbel.

D.

Deucalionian Ocean, der Theil des Weltmeers zwischen Europa und Nordamerica.
Dissenting meeting - houses, Kapellen der Dissenters, d. i. die sich nicht zur englischen hohen Kirche bekennen.
Dockyards, Schifswerfte.
Dome. S. Cupola.
Drum. S. 181. Eine Spielgesellschaft. *Assamblee.*
Drum major. Eben dasselbe, nur grösser und vornehmer.

E.

Edda. S. 193. Eine guineische Pflanze, wird izt auch viel in America gebaut, wo sonderlich die Neger ihre Wurzeln gekocht essen. Heist auch sonst *Eddoes*.
to Espouse the popular prejudice, das allgemeine Vorurtheil annehmen, eifrig vertheidigen.
Esq. d. i. Esquire. So nennen sich in England eigentlich alle nachgebohrne Kinder des hohen Adels, und jeder, der 500 Pfund jährliche Renten von Landgütern hat.

F.

to fure to the full. S. 178. Sich satt essen.
Fleet parson, ein Prediger, der Schulden wegen in
X 2 einem

einem Londner Gefängnisse, *the Fleet*, gefessen hat. Dergleichen lieffen sich sonst zu heimlichen Copulationen gebrauchen, bis das Parlament es verbot und für ungültig erklärte. *Focus of observation*. S. 169. Gesichtspunkt der Bemerkung; Ort, wo man gesehen wird. *Fustic*, Gelbholz.

G.

Gamekeeper, ein Jäger, der das Wild bewachet. *Gauls*, oder *Galls*, Galläpfel. *the Genii*, eine geschlossene Gesellschaft in London. *Gentilhomme de Camera*, (ist spanisch) ein Kammerherr. *Gentoos*, Eingeborne, heidnische Indianer in Hindostan. *Genseng*, *Ginseng*, oder *Dsjeseng*, eine Pflanze, welche in Ssina und der dazu gehörigen Tartarey, wie auch im englischen Nordamerika wächst, und dort in hohem Werthe ist. Man macht Thee von den Blättern, und braucht in Ssina die Wurzel, der man lügenhafte Kräfte zuschreibt, als Medicin, zur Stärkung &c. *to go together by the ears*, sich bey die Ohren kriegen. *Good bye t'ye* (d. i. good be with you) gehabt euch wohl. *Groyne*, so nennen die englischen und holländischen

Schiffer den Hafen *Corunna* in Gallicien.

Guaiacum. S. 249. Franzosenholz, Pockenholz, *Lignum vitae*, wächst in Mexico und einigen Antillen. Wird in der Medicin, nebst dem Gummi davon, gebraucht; das Holz auch von Tischlern verarbeitet.

Guinea-grains, Guineischer Pfeffer, Paradieskörner. (Malagueta) Sind die Körner der Grofskardamomen.

H.

Hatchet; to take up the Hatchet, (eine Redensart der Nordamerikanischen Wilden,) die Streitaxt aufnehmen; den Krieg erklären, zu Felde ziehen.

Heels; to set up a good pair of heels, lange Beine machen.

Higledy pigledy, verwirrt durch einander; wie wir sagen: holter de polter.

Highdays of health, goldne Tage der Gesundheit.

Hoyle, hat ein Buch vom Whistspiele geschrieben.

Hurricanes. S. 181. Eine Art Assambleen.

Hygrometer, ein Instrument, die Feuchtigkeit oder Trockenheit der Luft zu messen.

I.

Incle, 1) Grobes ungebleichtes leinen Garn, 2) Zwirnband davon.

K.

Kaides. S. 137. Türken, die über

über einige algierische Dorfschaften als Schatzeinnehmer gesetzt sind.

Keys. S. 124. Die Kayen in London; Straſſe an der Themſe, wo Schiffe ausgeladen werden.

Kesh. S. 313. Verderbt englisch, für *caught*, *caught*, gefangen, ertappt.

L.

Landholder. S. 125. Der ein eignes Landgut beſitzt.

Lentiscus. S. 205. Mastixbaum.

Lizard, Vorgebirge in Cornwall, die ſüdlichſte Spitze von England.

M.

Madder, Krapp, Färberröthe. *to make*; *to make away with ones self*, ſich ſelbſt umbringen.

Make Land, Land ſehen. (ein Schifferwort.)

Manchineal. S. 248. Spaniſch *Mancenilla*. Der Manſchinellbaum in Amerika, der noch keinen deutſchen Namen hat, wächst an der See. Die Frucht, welche einem Apfel gleicht, iſt ſchädlich, aber kein tödliches Gift.

Mangroves. S. 249. Mangelbäume; wachſen in naſſen Gegenden in Amerika.

Manicoles and Troolies. S. 192. Manicole- und Trulibäume. In Surinam wachſende Bäume, die *Bancroft* ſo nennt; bey *Fermin* heißen ſie *Beyl* und *Boltri*.

Marble-head or *Cape-Ann* men. S. 131. Schiffer, die von dieſen zweyen, in Neu-England nördlich über Boſton liegenden Vorgebirgen auf den Stockfiſchfang ausgehen.

Mayordomo de Semana S. 53. (ſpaniſch.) Hofmarſchall, der die Woche hat.

Mayordomo Mayor, Oberhofmarſchall.

Meetinghouse, gottesdienſtliches Verſammlungshaus, Kapelle.

Melasses, oder *Molasses*, der braune Syrup, oder Saft, welcher von dem rohen oder Puderzucker beim Gerinnen übrig bleibt.

Meleager, ein griechiſcher Prinz, der in der Mythologie als ein groſſer Jäger berühmt iſt.

Miss-mate, Tiſchgeſellſchafter.

Milliner, eine Modehändlerin, Putzmacherin.

Millwright, Mühlenbau.

Mince-pies, Art Paſteten, mit gebacktem Fleiſch, Korinthen &c. welche man in England gewöhnlich um Weihnachten iſſt.

Misconstruction, Verdrehung, böſe Auslegung.

Mortification, 1) Tödtung, Kreuzigung, 2) Kalter Brand. S. 210.

Mud- oder *Mud-fiſh*. S. 131. Hat keinen deutſchen Namen.

Muskeos, (ſpaniſch *Mosqui-*

tos) Art sehr schädlicher Mücken, die in den morastigen und waldigten Gegenden von Amerika sehr häufig sind.

Myrtle-tree, 1) Myrtenbaum, 2) der Wachsbaum.

N.

Nabobs, Königliche Gouvernöre der Provinzen in Hindostan, die sich aber oftmals von dem Groß-Mogul unabhängig gemacht haben.

Nolens volens. S. 177. (lateinisch) Er mag wollen oder nicht.

Nantucket. S. 132. Eine kleine unter Massachusettsbay gelegene Insel. Ihre fleissigen Einwohner treiben starken Wallfischfang und trocknen Stockfisch.

O.

Ocro. S. 193. Frucht in Gestalt einer Erbse, aber von einer andern Art Pflanze.

Optics, 1) die mathematischen Lehren vom Lichte, 2) Sehröhre und andre Instrumente zum Sehen. 3) S. 279. Gesichtswerkzeuge, d. i. Augen.

Orders. S. 167. Säulenordnung.

P.

Paderero, Bassen, Drehbassen. Kleine Schiffkanonen, die auf einem Pfahle bevestigt sind, und die man herum-drehen kann. Sie stehen

insgemein auf dem Hinter-verdecke.

Perpetuanos, Perpetuane oder Sempiterne, eine Art dauerhafter Sarische.

Pier, eine *Mole*, Steindamm, der in die See geht, und einen künstlichen Hafen macht.

Plantin. S. 193. auch *Musa*, *Pisang*, *Bananas*. Eine indianische Pflanze, welche wie ein Palmbaum aufwächst, und eine sehr schmackhafte Frucht trägt.

Play. S. 36. *he put me out of my play*: Er machte mich verwirrt, brachte mich aus meiner Fassung.

Polyagars, kleine Fürsten in Hindostan, die den Nabob Tribut geben.

Pope Joan. S. 182. Ein elendes englisches Kartenspiel, wie *besten Bauren*.

to powder upon. (Eine veraltete Redensart.) Herabschießen, herabfliegen.

Prime cost, Einkaufspreis.

Propriety, 1) Eigenthum, Eigenschaft; 2) S. 170. Schicklichkeit, Anstand.

Pulpit-thumper, Kanzelpauker.

Q.

Qualifier. S. 84. Grosthuer.

Quit-rent, oder *White-rent*, Grundzins.

R.

Rajahs, einheimische indianische Fürsten, die den Mö-

Moguln, welche Hindostan erobert haben, zinsbar sind.
Redwood. S. 249. Jamaikanisches rothes Färbholz.
Bresillet.
Regal. S. 291. Der Krone gehörig.
Routs. S. 181. Große hochadliche Assemblée.

S.

Sälve festa Dies, (lateinisch) Sey willkommen festlicher Tag!
to Scalp, Das Fell vom Kopfe schinden, wie einige Nord-Amerikanische Wilden ihren Feinden thun.
Scent oder *Sent*, 1) Geruch, 2) Spur. *To put a wrong Scent*. S. 123. Einen irre machen.
Season, a full season. S. 50. Eine Brunnenzeit voller Gäste, volkreiche Brunnenzeit.
Sedan. Sänfte.
Service, Gottesdienst. *Solemn service*, S. 64. feyerliche Seelmesse.
Sommelier de corps, (franz.) Hofkellermeister.
Soubah, s. *Subah*.
Sportsmanship, Waidmanschaft, Jägerey.
to stake. He stakes his Honour. S. 84. Er setzt seine Ehre zu Pfande.
Stamina. S. 248. Staubfäden der Blumen.
Sting, stechen. *Stung to the quick*. S. 280. Sehr aufgebracht.

Stocking-frame Trade. Handel mit gewebten wollenen Strümpfen.

Stock Jobbing. Grundloser Handel mit *Stocks*, Stockseuterey.

Subah oder *Soubah*. S. 238. (Eigentlich *Subadâr*) Ist in Hindostan der Name eines Vicekönigs des Großmoguls über eine Subah oder Provinz, z. E. Decan, Bengäl &c. unter ihm stehen die Nabobe u. s. w.

Swing, schwingen. S. 93. *We may swing for this*: Wir mögten dafür hängen müssen.

T.

Tape. Weißer Zwirnband.

Tide-Harbour, ein Hafen, der nur bey der Fluth genug Wasser hat.

Topics of Scandal. Stadtklatschereyen.

To wit, nehmlich. s. *Viz*.

Troolie. S. 192. *Trulibaum*. S. Manicoles.

U.

Vauxhall und *Ranelagh*, zwey öffentliche Lustgärten bey London.

Victualling Office. Ein Collegium, welches die Flotte mit Lebensmitteln versieht, Proviantamt.

Vivite, ait, fugio, (lateinisch) Genießst des Lebens, sagt er, ich fliehe.

Viz wird gelesen *to wit*, und heißt: nehmlich folgendes.

Unpa-

Unpalatable, ungeschmackhaft,
ungenießbar.

Unprecedented Action, uner-
hörte Handlung.

Upstart of fortune, Glückspilz.

Ventre à terre. S. 55. (franz.)

So viel als im stärksten
Galop.

W.

War-Whoop, Kriegsgefang
der Wilden in Nordame-
rika.

Whole. You are a whole Man
again. S. 319. Sie sind wie-
der ein behaltener Mann.

Wind'm and crosf'em. Ein Jä-
gerwort, die Hunde auf-
zumuntern.

Wind; to take Wind; laut,
ruchtbar werden.

Woodward. Ein berühmter
Schauspieler in London.

Woodwards night, der
Abend, da für ihn Komödie
gespielt wird.

to write. S. 212. *I writ* statt
I wrote; ist nicht mehr ge-
bräuchlich.

Y.

Yams, S. 193. oder *Ignames*,
Teies, eine guineische und
amerikanische Pflanze, de-
ren Wurzel, sonderlich
von den Negern, geröstet
und gekocht gegessen wird.

Druckfehler in einigen Abdrücken:

S. 3. Z. 18. lies: together.

— 8. — 10. — told.

— 13. — 13. — up.

— 17. — 29. — Galls.

— 22. — 13. — officers.

— 26. — 22. — Tweezers.

— — — 33. — remarkably.

— 29. — 1. — large.

— — — 11. von unten, lies: cultivated.

— 200. — 9. lies: Pope's.

— 207. — 10. — Vivite.

